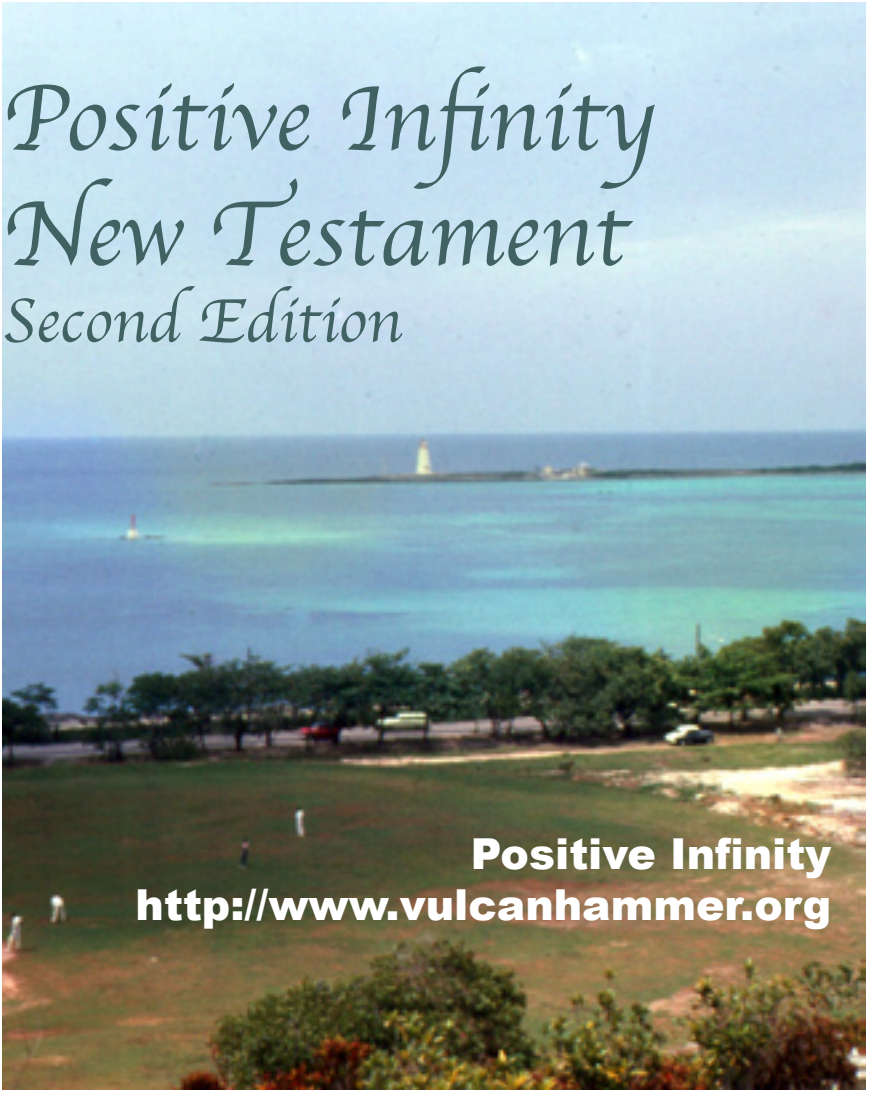
Positive Infinity New Testament

Second Edition



The Positive Infinity New Testament. Copyright© 2004, 2005 Don C. Warrington. All rights reserved. Federal copyright law prohibits unauthorized reproduction by any means and imposes fines up to US$25,000 for violation. This material may not be duplicated for any for-profit enterprise or commercial purpose, and may only be copied or redistributed in its original format, without any change or alteration.

Table of Contents

Introduction	iv
The Gospel According To Matthew	1
The Gospel According to Mark	55
The Gospel According to Luke	89
The Gospel According to John	147
The Acts of the Apostles	191
Paul's Letter to the Romans	249
The First Letter of Paul to the Corinthians	275
The Second Letter of Paul to the Corinthians	299
The Letter of Paul to the Galatians	315
The Letter of Paul to the Ephesians	325
The Letter of Paul to the Philippians	335
The Letter of Paul to the Colossians	341
The First Letter of Paul to the Thessalonians	347
The Second Letter of Paul to the Thessalonians	353
The First Letter of Paul to Timothy	357
The Second Letter of Paul to Timothy	365
The Letter of Paul to Titus	371
The Letter of Paul to Philemon	375
The Letter to the Hebrews	377
The Letter of James	395
The First Letter of Peter	401
The Second Letter of Peter	409
The First Letter of John	415
The Second Letter of John	423
The Third Letter of John	425
The Letter of Jude	427
The Revelation of John	429
Weights, Measures and Currency	457
Lectionary: Reading Through in a Year	463

Introduction

The Internet has allowed the free proliferation of a great deal of information. This information is of variable quality and utility. Some of it is very useful and some of it is very harmful.

The best and highest type of information is God's Word, and it is good to see that so much of it is available in so many forms to such a wide potential audience. In spite of the fact that many of the newer translations of the Bible are copyrighted, the fact remains that virtually anyone can obtain modern translations of the Bible in a wide variety of languages—and formats—for free. For those who laboured for so many years to translate and disseminate the Word in printed form—sometimes at the cost of their own lives—this must be gratifying to see as they constitute some of those witnesses who cheer us on today (see Hebrews 12:1.)

The *Positive Infinity New Testament* is our contribution to that wide availability of the Bible. It enables those who visit our site—and some that have not—to read the Gospel and to make a decision for themselves as to how they might respond initially and how they might live out its commands and precepts.

The objective of *Positive Infinity* is to present the Gospel in a unique way, and this New Testament is no exception. It is not, however, our own translation; this version is in reality the *Twentieth Century New Testament*, which we have formatted and adapted for dissemination. How, you ask, is a translation geared for the last century relevant in this one? Before we answer that question, we need to look at how this translation came into existence in the first place.

Origins of the **Twentieth Century New Testament**[1]

In 1891 the editor of the *Review of Reviews*, W.T. Stead, received two independent letters from two different people basically saying the same thing: their respective four children found the King James Version of the Bible difficult to understand. One of them was Mrs. Mary Ann Kingsland Higgs of Greenacres, Oldham, England

[1] Kubo, Sakae, and Specht, Walter. *So Many Versions? Twentieth Century English Versions of the Bible*. Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan Publishing House, 1975. Pages 23-27.

(near Manchester.) The other was Mr. Ernest de Mérundol Malan of Newland, Hull, grandson of the well known Swiss Reformed preacher César Malan (whose most memorable achievement was to put Charlotte Elliot under such conviction that she wrote "Just As I Am.[2]") Stead put these two together and they put out a notice to form a committee for a modern English translation of the New Testament.

The committee came from all parts of the British Isles, all denominations, all walks of life, clergy and lay people, and both men and women. The entire group was divided (Malan was its chairman) into smaller groups. Each of these was assigned certain books, which they translated. After this the results were swapped amongst the other groups for their review. After this an English Committee reviewed the whole manuscript to improve the quality of the English.

The tentative edition was published in three parts between 1898 and 1900 for further review before publication. The final, entire New Testament was published in 1904. In 1961 the Moody press printed a revised version of this translation.

Advantages of This Translation

- *It is in the public domain*. Just ask any file sharer who's had a visit from the RIAA to find out how important that is.[3]
- *It was done by ordinary people*. We live in an age of specialists. This too has its place, but it's nice to see that, just as God has a ministry for lay people in the church, so also does His Word and its translation have a place for those who either could not or did not make a career out of it.
- *It was a committee effort*. Although committees have been widely criticised over the years, with a Bible translation a committee efforts helps to avoid individual idiosyncrasies that are inevitable with the work of one person. The organisation of the committees was a model for other translations, used with the King James that came before it

[2] McGee, J. Vernon, *Thru the Bible with J. Vernon McGee*. Pasadena, CA: Thru the Bible Radio, 1983. Vol. 5, p. 648.

[3] Information on obtaining the *Twentieth Century New Testament* for more ready distribution, search and use can be found at our website.

and the New International that came after.

- *It has a special flavour to it*. In a world where boring—and frequently incomprehensible—prose is *de rigeur* in many academic disciplines and writing situations, it's nice to see something which has a "kick" to it. Done at the turn of the last century, it was done by products of the same educational system that produced some of the giants of English literature. Although the language is a little dated sometimes, this may be an advantage to those who have learned English properly (in the school) and not like many of the rest of us (on the streets.)

Special Features to This Edition

In preparing this translation for dissemination, we have attempted to reproduce the translation as faithfully as we could, making some spelling corrections from the text in hand. Like most Bibles, however, we have added some materials, and these are as follows:

- We have made some explanatory notes when the translation was either difficult to understand or subject to alternate interpretation. Most of the latter concerned the deity of Jesus Christ, a topic we deal with in more detail in *My Lord and My God*, available from Positive Infinity. We welcome your comments on including other notes you might think are necessary for future editions.

- We have included a section at the end on Imperial weights, measures and the whole subject of pounds, shillings and pence, which the translation uses throughout. We admit to having a lot of fun with this, especially with the currency.

One difficulty we had to deal with is the subject of omitted verses. The appearance of new editions of the Greek original in the nineteenth century—the result of scholarly work with manuscripts that were closer to the original in time than those which Tyndale and King James' men had access to—led to the problem of what to do with verses that the better manuscripts left out. Most translations of the second half of the twentieth century either put these verses in footnotes or made special note of them in the text itself. With the

Twentieth Century New Testament, they were simply left out.

In our edition, we have restored these verses. There are two sources that we used:

- Richard Weymouth's New Testament. Weymouth, headmaster of the Mill Hill School in London from 1869 to 1886, assisted in the preparation of this translation but in addition produced his own, which was posthumously published in 1903. Verses taken from his translation are in blue. This was the preferred source for replacement verses.

- King James (Authorised) Version. Verses from this translation are shown in green.

We did not include maps with this translation. We urge our readers to download the *Bible Companion* program from Positive Infinity for these and other helpful items for study of the Bible.

It is our distinct honour to offer this, our first Bible, with the express purpose "that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God—and that, through your belief in his Name, you may have Life." (John 20:31)

Positive Infinity
http://www.vulcanhammer.org

Preface to the Second Edition

In preparing the Second Edition, we found ourselves making two needed improvements to the text:

- We added an entire section on reading the Bible through in a year, based on the 1662 Book of Common Prayer of the Church of England.

- We reformatted the entire text using Adobe InDesign, which improved the appearance and readibility of the text.

We trust that these changes will make this book—the "book of books"—more of a blessing to you and to all those who download and read it.

The Gospel According To Matthew

Chapter 1

1 A genealogy of Jesus Christ, a descendant of David and
Abraham. 2 Abraham was the father of Isaac, Isaac of Jacob,
Jacob of Judah and his brothers, 3 Judah of Perez and Zerah,
whose mother was Tamar, Perez of Hezron, Hezron of Ram, 4
Ram of Amminadab, Amminadab of Nashon, Nashon of Salmon,
5 Salmon of Boaz, whose mother was Rahab, Boaz of Obed, whose
mother was Ruth, Obed of Jesse, 6 Jesse of David the King. David
was the father of Solomon, whose mother was Uriah's widow, 7
Solomon of Rehoboam, Rehoboam of Abijah, Abijah of Asa, 8 Asa
of Jehoshaphat, Jehoshaphat of Jehoram, Jehoram of Uzziah, 9
Uzziah of Jotham, Jotham of Ahaz, Ahaz of Hezekiah, 10 Hezekiah
of Manasseh, Manasseh of Ammon, Ammon of Josiah, 11 Josiah of
Jeconiah and his brothers, at the time of the Exile to Babylon. 12
After the Exile to Babylon—Jeconiah was the father of Shealtiel,
Shealtiel of Zerubbabel, 13 Zerubbabel of Abiud, Abiud of Eliakim,
Eliakim of Azor, 14 Azor of Zadok, Zadok of Achim, Achim of Eliud,
15 Eliud of Eleazar, Eleazar of Matthan, Matthan of Jacob, 16 Jacob of
Joseph, the husband of Mary, who was the mother of Jesus, who is
called 'Christ'. 17 So the whole number of generations from Abraham
to David is fourteen; from David to the Exile to Babylon fourteen;
and from the Exile to Babylon to the Christ fourteen.

18 The birth of Jesus Christ took place as follows:—His
mother Mary was betrothed to Joseph, but, before the marriage
took place, she found herself to be with child by the power of the
Holy Spirit. 19 Her husband, Joseph, was a religious man and, being
unwilling to expose her to contempt, resolved to put an end to
their betrothal privately. 20 He had been dwelling upon this, when
an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream. "Joseph, son of
David," the angel said, "do not be afraid to take Mary for your wife,
for her child has been conceived by the power of the Holy Spirit. 21
She shall give birth to a son; and you shall give him the name Jesus,
for it is he who shall save his people from their sins." 22 All this
happened in fulfilment of these words of the Lord in the Prophet,

where he says— 23 'Behold! the virgin shall be with child and shall
give birth to a son, And they will give him the name Immanuel'—a
word which means 'God is with us.' 24 When Joseph awoke from his
sleep, he did as the angel of the Lord had directed him. 25 He made
Mary his wife, but did not live with her as her husband until after
the birth of her son; and to this son he gave the name Jesus.

Chapter 2

1 After the birth of Jesus at Bethlehem in Judea, in the reign
of King Herod, some Astrologers from the East arrived in Jerusalem,
asking: 2 "Where is the new-born King of the Jews? for we saw his
star in the east, and have come to do homage to him." 3 When King
Herod heard of this, he was much troubled, and so, too, was all
Jerusalem. 4 He called together all the Chief Priests and Teachers of
the Law in the nation, and questioned them as to where the Christ
was to be born. 5 "At Bethlehem in Judea," was their answer; "for
it is said in the Prophet— 6 'And thou, Bethlehem in Judah's land,
Art in no way least among the chief cities of Judah; For out of thee
will come a Chieftain—One who will shepherd my people Israel.'" 7
Then Herod secretly sent for the Astrologers, and ascertained from
them the date of the appearance of the star; 8 And, sending them to
Bethlehem, he said: "Go and make careful inquiries about the child,
and, as soon as you have found him, bring me word, that I, too, may
go and do homage to him."

9 The Astrologers heard what the King had to say, and then
continued their journey. And the star which they had seen in the
east led them on, until it reached, and stood over, the place where
the child was. 10 At the sight of the star they were filled with joy. 11
Entering the house, they saw the child with his mother, Mary, and
fell at his feet and did homage to him. Then they unpacked their
treasures, and offered to the child presents of gold, frankincense,
and myrrh. 12 But afterwards, having been warned in a dream not
to go back to Herod, they returned to their own country by another
road.

13 After they had left, an angel of the Lord appeared to
Joseph in a dream, and said: "Awake, take the child and his mother,
and seek refuge in Egypt; and stay there until I bid you return,
for Herod is about to search for the child, to put him to death." 14
Joseph awoke, and taking the child and his mother by night, went

into Egypt, 15 And there he stayed until Herod's death; in fulfilment
of these words of the Lord in the Prophet, where he says—'Out of
Egypt I called my Son.'

16 When Herod found that he had been trifled with by the
Astrologers, he was very angry. He sent and put to death all the
boys in Bethlehem and the whole of that neighbourhood, who were
two years old or under, guided by the date which he had ascertained
from the Astrologers. 17 Then were fulfilled these words spoken in
the Prophet Jeremiah, where he says— 18 'A voice was heard in
Ramah, Weeping and much lamentation; Rachel, weeping for her
children, Refused all comfort because they were not.'

19 But, on the death of Herod, an angel of the Lord appeared
in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, and said: 20 "Awake, take the child
and his mother, and go into the Land of Israel, for those who sought
to take the child's life are dead." 21 And he awoke, and taking the
child and his mother, went into the Land of Israel. 22 But, hearing
that Archelaus had succeeded his father Herod as King of Judea, he
was afraid to go back there; and having been warned in a dream,
he went into the part of the country called Galilee. 23 And there he
settled in the town of Nazareth, in fulfilment of these words in the
Prophets—'He will be called a Nazarene.'

Chapter 3

1 About that time John the Baptist first appeared, proclaiming
in the Wilderness of Judea: 2 "Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven
is at hand." 3 This is he who was spoken of in the Prophet Isaiah,
where he says—'The voice of one crying aloud in the Wilderness:
"Make ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight."' 4 John
wore clothing made of camels' hair, with a belt of leather round
his waist, and his food was locusts and wild honey. 5 At that time
Jerusalem, and all Judea, as well as the whole district of the Jordan,
went out to him 6 And were baptized by him in the river Jordan,
confessing their sins.

7 When, however, John saw many of the Pharisees and
Sadducees coming to receive his baptism, he said to them: "You
brood of vipers! Who has prompted you to seek refuge from the
coming judgement? 8 Let your life, then, prove your repentance; 9
And do not think that you can say among yourselves 'Abraham is
our ancestor,' for I tell you that out of these very stones God is able

to raise descendants for Abraham! 10 Already the axe is lying at the
root of the trees. Therefore every tree that fails to bear good fruit
will be cut down and thrown into the fire. 11 I, indeed, baptize you
with water to teach repentance; but He who is Coming after me is
more powerful than I, and I am not fit even to carry his sandals. He
will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire. 12 His winnowing-
fan is in his hand, and he will clear his threshing-floor, and store his
grain in the barn, but the chaff he will burn with inextinguishable
fire."

13 Then Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan, to John, to be
baptized by him. 14 But John tried to prevent him. "It is I," he said,
"who need to be baptized by you; why then do you come to me?" 15
"Let it be so for the present," Jesus answered, "since it is fitting for us
thus to satisfy every claim of religion." Upon this, John consented. 16
After the baptism of Jesus, and just as he came up from the water,
the heavens opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending, like a
dove, and alighting upon him, 17 And from the heavens there came a
voice which said: "This is my son, the Beloved, in whom I delight."

Chapter 4

1 Then Jesus was led up into the Wilderness by the Spirit to
be tempted by the Devil. 2 And, after he had fasted for forty days
and forty nights, he became hungry. 3 And the Tempter came to
him, and said: "If you are God's Son, tell these stones to become
loaves of bread." 4 But Jesus answered: "Scripture says—'It is not
on bread alone that man is to live, but on every word that comes
from the mouth of God.'" 5 Then the Devil took him to the Holy
City, and, placing him on the parapet of the temple, said to him: 6
"If you are God's Son, throw yourself down, for Scripture says—'He
will give his angels commands about thee, And on their hands they
will upbear thee, Lest ever thou shouldst strike thy foot against a
stone.'" 7 "Scripture also says," answered Jesus, "Thou shalt not
tempt the Lord thy God.'" 8 The third time, the Devil took Jesus to
a very high mountain, and, showing him all the kingdoms of the
world and their splendour, said to him: 9 "All these I will give you, if
you will fall at my feet and do homage to me." 10 Then Jesus said to
him: "Begone, Satan! for Scripture says—'Thou shalt do homage to
the Lord thy God, and worship him only.'" 11 Then the Devil left him
alone, and angels came and ministered to him.

12 When Jesus heard that John had been committed to
prison, he retired to Galilee. 13 Afterwards, leaving Nazareth, he
went and settled at Capernaum, which is by the side of the Sea,
within the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali; 14 In fulfilment of
these words in the Prophet Isaiah— 15 'The land of Zebulun and
the land of Naphtali, The land of the Road by the Sea, and beyond
the Jordan, With Galilee of the Gentiles— 16 The people who were
dwelling in darkness Have seen a great Light, And, for those who
were dwelling in the shadow-land of Death, A Light has risen!' 17
At that time Jesus began to proclaim—"Repent, for the Kingdom of
Heaven is at hand."

18 As Jesus was walking along the shore of the Sea of Galilee,
he saw two brothers—Simon, also known as Peter, and his brother
Andrew—casting a net into the Sea; for they were fishermen. 19
"Come and follow me," Jesus said, "and I will set you to fish for
men." 20 The two men left their nets at once and followed him. 21
Going further on, he saw two other men who were also brothers,
James, Zebediah's son, and his brother John, in their boat with
their father, mending their nets. Jesus called them, 22 And they at
once left their boat and their father, and followed him.

23 And Jesus went all through Galilee, teaching in their
Synagogues, proclaiming the Good News of the Kingdom, and
curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness among the
people; 24 And his fame spread all through Syria. They brought to
him all who were ill with any form of disease, or who were suffering
pain—any who were either possessed by demons, or were lunatic,
or paralyzed; and he cured them. 25 And he was followed by large
crowds from Galilee, the district of the Ten Towns, Jerusalem,
Judea, and from beyond the Jordan.

Chapter 5

1 On seeing the crowds of People, Jesus went up the hill;
and, when he had taken his seat, his disciples came up to him; 2 And
he began to teach them as follows:

3 "Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the Kingdom
of Heaven. 4 Blessed are the mourners, for they shall be comforted.
5 Blessed are the gentle, for they shall inherit the earth. 6 Blessed
are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall
be satisfied. 7 Blessed are the merciful, for they shall find mercy. 8

Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God. [9] Blessed are
the peacemakers, for they shall be called Sons of God. [10] Blessed are
those who have been persecuted in the cause of righteousness, for
theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven. [11] Blessed are you when people
taunt you, and persecute you, and say everything evil about you—
untruly, and on my account. [12] Be glad and rejoice, because your
reward in Heaven will be great; for so men persecuted the Prophets
who lived before you.

[13] It is you who are the Salt of the earth; but, if the salt
should lose its strength, what will you use to restore its saltiness?
It is no longer good for anything, but is thrown away, and trampled
underfoot. [14] It is you who are the Light of the world. A town that
stands on a hill cannot be hidden. [15] Men do not light a lamp and put
it under the corn-measure, but on the lamp-stand, where it gives
light to every one in the house. [16] Let your light so shine before the
eyes of your fellow men, that, seeing your good actions, they may
praise your Father who is in Heaven.

[17] Do not think that I have come to do away with the Law or
the Prophets; I have not come to do away with them, but to complete
them. [18] For I tell you, until the heavens and the earth disappear, not
even the smallest letter, nor one stroke of a letter, shall disappear
from the Law until all is done. [19] Whoever, therefore, breaks one of
these commandments, even the least of them, and teaches others
to do so, will be the least-esteemed in the Kingdom of Heaven; but
whoever keeps them, and teaches others to do so, will be esteemed
great in the Kingdom of Heaven. [20] Indeed I tell you that, unless your
religion is above that of the Teachers of the Law, and Pharisees, you
will never enter the Kingdom of Heaven.

[21] You have heard that to our ancestors it was said—'Thou
shalt not commit murder,' and 'Whoever commits murder shall be
liable to answer for it to the Court.' [22] I, however, say to you that
any one who cherishes anger against his brother shall be liable to
answer for it to the Court; and whoever pours contempt upon his
brother shall be liable to answer for it to the High Council, while
whoever calls down curses upon him shall be liable to answer for it
in the fiery Pit. [23] Therefore, when presenting your gift at the altar,
if even there you remember that your brother has some grievance
against you, [24] Leave your gift there, before the altar, go and be
reconciled to your brother, first, then come and present your gift. [25]

Be ready to make friends with your opponent, even when you meet
him on your way to the court; for fear that he should hand you over
to the judge, and the judge to his officer, and you should be thrown
into prison. [26] I tell you, you will not come out until you have paid
the last penny.

[27] You have heard that it was said—'Thou shalt not commit
adultery.' [28] I, however, say to you that any one who looks at a woman
with an impure intention has already committed adultery with her
in his heart. [29] If your right eye is a snare to you, take it out and
throw it away. It would be best for you to lose one part of your body,
and not to have the whole of it thrown into the Pit. [30] And, if your
right hand is a snare to you, cut it off and throw it away. It would
be best for you to lose one part of your body, and not to have the
whole of it go down to the Pit. [31] It was also said—'Let any one who
divorces his wife serve her with a notice of separation.' [32] I, however,
say to you that any one who divorces his wife, except on the ground
of her unchastity, leads to her committing adultery; while any one
who marries her after her divorce is guilty of adultery.

[33] Again, you have heard that to our ancestors it was said—
'Thou shalt not break an oath, but thou shall keep thine oaths as a
debt due to the Lord.' [34] I, however, say to you that you must not
swear at all, either by Heaven, since that is God's throne, [35] Or by
the earth, since that is his footstool, or by Jerusalem, since that is
the city of the Great King. [36] Nor should you swear by your head,
since you cannot make a single hair either white or black. [37] Let
your words be simply 'Yes' or 'No'; anything beyond this comes
from what is wrong.

[38] You have heard that it was said—'An eye for an eye and a
tooth for a tooth.' [39] I, however, say to you that you must not resist
wrong; but, if any one strikes you on the right cheek, turn the other
to him also; [40] And, when any one wants to go to law with you, to
take your coat, let him have your cloak as well; [41] And, if any one
compels you to go one mile, go two miles with him. [42] Give to him
who asks of you; and, from him who wants to borrow from you, do
not turn away.

[43] You have heard that it was said—'Thou shalt love thy
neighbour and hate thy enemy.' [44] I, however, say to you—Love
your enemies, and pray for those who persecute you, [45] That you
may become Sons of your Father who is in Heaven; for he causes

his sun to rise upon bad and good alike, and sends rain upon the
righteous and upon the unrighteous. 46 For, if you love only those
who love you, what reward will you have? Even the tax-gatherers
do this! 47 And, if you show courtesy to your brothers only, what are
you doing more than others? Even the Gentiles do this! 48 You, then,
must become perfect—as your heavenly Father is perfect.

Chapter 6

1 Take care not to perform your religious duties in public in
order to be seen by others; if you do, your Father who is in Heaven
has no reward for you. 2 Therefore, when you do acts of charity, do
not have a trumpet blown in front of you, as hypocrites do in the
Synagogues and in the streets, that they may be praised by others.
There, I tell you, is their reward! 3 But, when you do acts of charity,
do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, 4 So
that your charity may be secret; and your Father, who sees what is
in secret, will recompense you.

5 And, when you pray, you are not to behave as hypocrites
do. They like to pray standing in the Synagogues and at the corners
of the streets, that they may be seen by men. There, I tell you, is
their reward! 6 But, when one of you prays, let him go into his own
room, shut the door, and pray to his Father who dwells in secret;
and his Father, who sees what is secret, will recompense him. 7
When praying, do not repeat the same words over and over again,
as is done by the Gentiles, who think that by using many words they
will obtain a hearing. 8 Do not imitate them; for God, your Father,
knows what you need before you ask him.

9 You, therefore, should pray thus—'Our Father, who art in
Heaven, May thy name be held holy, 10 Thy Kingdom come, thy will
be done—on earth, as in Heaven. 11 Give us to-day the bread that we
shall need; 12 And forgive us our wrong-doings, as we have forgiven
those who have wronged us; 13 And take us not into temptation,
but deliver us from Evil.' 14 For, if you forgive others their offences,
your heavenly Father will forgive you also; 15 But, if you do not
forgive others their offences, not even your Father will forgive your
offences.

16 And, when you fast, do not put on gloomy looks, as
hypocrites do who disfigure their faces that they may be seen by
men to be fasting. That, I tell you, is their reward! 17 But, when one

of your fasts, let him anoint his head and wash his face, 18 That he
may not be seen by men to be fasting, but by his Father who dwells
in secret; and his Father, who sees what is secret, will recompense
him.

19 Do not store up treasures for yourselves on earth, where
moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. 20 But
store up treasures for yourselves in Heaven, where neither moth
nor rust destroys, and where thieves do not break in or steal. 21 For
where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. 22 The lamp
of the body is the eye. If your eye is unclouded, your whole body
will be lit up; 23 But, if your eye is diseased, your whole body will
be darkened. And, if the inner light is darkness, how intense must
that darkness be! 24 No one can serve two masters, for either he will
hate one and love the other, or else he will attach himself to one and
despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money.

25 That is why I say to you, Do not be anxious about your
life here—what you can get to eat or drink; nor yet about your
body—what you can get to wear. Is not life more than food, and the
body than its clothing? 26 Look at the wild birds—they neither sow,
nor reap, nor gather into barns; and yet your heavenly Father feeds
them! And are not you more precious than they? 27 But which of you,
by being anxious, can prolong his life a single moment? 28 And why
be anxious about clothing? Study the wild lilies, and how they grow.
They neither toil nor spin; 29 Yet I tell you that even Solomon in all
his splendour was not robed like one of these. 30 If God so clothes
even the grass of the field, which is living to-day and to-morrow
will be thrown into the oven, will not he much more clothe you, O
men of little faith? 31 Do not then ask anxiously 'What can we get to
eat?' or 'What can we get to drink?' or 'What can we get to wear?' 32
All these are the things for which the nations are seeking, and your
heavenly Father knows that you need them all. 33 But first seek his
Kingdom and the righteousness that he requires, and then all these
things shall be added for you. 34 Therefore do not be anxious about
to-morrow, for to-morrow will bring its own anxieties. Every day
has trouble enough of its own.

Chapter 7

1 Do not judge, that you may not be judged. 2 For, just as
you judge others, you will yourselves be judged, and the measure

that you mete will be meted out to you. 3 And why do you look at
the straw in your brother's eye, while you pay no attention at all to
the beam in yours? 4 How will you say to your brother 'Let me take
out the straw from your eye,' when all the time there is a beam in
your own? 5 Hypocrite! Take out the beam from your own eye first,
and then you will see clearly how to take out the straw from your
brother's. 6 Do not give what is sacred to dogs; nor yet throw your
pearls before pigs, lest they should trample them under their feet,
and then turn and attack you.

7 Ask, and your prayer shall be granted; search, and you
shall find; knock, and the door shall be opened to you. 8 For he that
asks receives, he that searches finds, and to him that knocks the
door shall be opened. 9 Who among you, when his son asks him for a
loaf, will give him a stone, 10 Or when he asks for a fish, will give him
a snake? 11 If you, then, wicked though you are, know how to give
good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is
in Heaven give what is good to those that ask him!

12 Do to others whatever you would wish them to do to you;
for that is the teaching of both the Law and the Prophets. 13 Go
in by the small gate. Broad and spacious is the road that leads to
destruction, and those that go in by it are many; 14 For small is the
gate, and narrow the road, that leads to Life, and those that find it
are few.

15 Beware of false Teachers—men who come to you in the
guise of sheep, but at heart they are ravenous wolves. 16 By the fruit
of their lives you will know them. Do people gather grapes from
thorn bushes, or figs from thistles? 17 So, too, every sound tree bears
good fruit, while a worthless tree bears bad fruit. 18 A sound tree
cannot produce bad fruit, nor can a worthless tree bear good fruit. 19
Every tree that fails to bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into
the fire. 20 Hence it is by the fruit of their lives that you will know
such men.

21 Not every one who says to me 'Master! Master!' will
enter the Kingdom of Heaven, but only he who does the will of
my Father who is in Heaven. 22 On 'That Day' many will say to me
'Master, Master, was not it in your name that we taught, and in
your name that we drove out demons, and in your name that we
did many miracles?' 23 And then I shall say to them plainly 'I never
knew you. Go from my presence, you who live in sin.' 24 Everyone,

therefore, that listens to this teaching of mine and acts upon it may
be compared to a prudent man, who built his house upon the rock.
25 The rain poured down, the rivers rose, the winds blew and beat
upon that house, but it did not fall, for its foundations were upon
the rock. 26 And every one that listens to this teaching of mine and
does not act upon it may be compared to a foolish man, who built
his house on the sand. 27 The rain poured down, the rivers rose, the
winds blew and struck against that house, and it fell; and great was
its downfall." 28 By the time that Jesus had finished speaking, the
crowd was filled with amazement at his teaching. 29 For he taught
them like one who had authority, and not like their Teachers of the
Law.

Chapter 8

1 When Jesus had come down from the hill, great crowds
followed him. 2 And he saw a leper who came up, and bowed to the
ground before him, and said: "Master, if only you are willing, you
are able to make me clean." 3 Stretching out his hand, Jesus touched
him, saying as he did so: "I am willing; become clean." Instantly he
was made clean from his leprosy; 4 And then Jesus said to him: "Be
careful not to say a word to any one, but go and show yourself to
the Priest, and offer the gift directed by Moses, as evidence of your
cure."

5 After Jesus had entered Capernaum, a Captain in the
Roman army came up to him, entreating his help. 6 "Sir," he said,
"my manservant is lying ill at my house with a stroke of paralysis,
and is suffering terribly." 7 "I will come and cure him," answered
Jesus. 8 "Sir," the Captain went on, "I am unworthy to receive you
under my roof; but only speak, and my manservant will be cured.
9 For I myself am a man under the orders of others, with soldiers
under me; and, if I say to one of them 'Go,' he goes, and to another
'Come,' he comes, and to my slave 'Do this,' he does it." 10 Jesus
was surprised to hear this, and said to those who were following
him: "Never I tell you, in any Israelite have I met with such faith
as this! 11 Yes, and many will come in from East and West and take
their places beside Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the Kingdom of
Heaven; 12 While the heirs to the Kingdom will be 'banished into
the darkness' outside; there, there will be weeping and grinding of
teeth." 13 Then Jesus said to the Captain: "Go now, and it shall be

according to your faith." And the man was cured that very hour.

14 When Jesus went into Peter's house, he saw Peter's mother-
in-law prostrated with fever. 15 On his taking her hand, the fever left
her, and she rose and began to wait upon him. 16 In the evening the
people brought to Jesus many who were possessed by demons; and
he drove out the spirits with a word, And cured all who were ill, 17
In fulfilment of these words in the Prophet Isaiah—'He took our
infirmities on himself, and bore the burden of our diseases.'

18 Seeing a crowd round him, Jesus gave orders to go across.
19 And a Teacher of the Law came up to him, and said: "Teacher, I
will follow you wherever you go." 20 "Foxes have holes," answered
Jesus, "and wild birds their roosting-places, but the Son of Man
has nowhere to lay his head." 21 "Master," said another, who was a
disciple, "let me first go and bury my father." 22 But Jesus answered:
"Follow me, and leave the dead to bury their dead."

23 Then he got into the boat, followed by his disciples. 24
Suddenly so great a storm came on upon the Sea, that the waves
broke right over the boat. But Jesus was asleep; 25 And the disciples
came and roused him. "Master," they cried, "save us; we are lost!" 26
"Why are you so timid?" he said. "O men of little faith!" Then Jesus
rose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and a great calm followed.
27 The men were amazed, and exclaimed: "What kind of man is this,
that even the winds and the sea obey him!"

28 And on getting to the other side—the country of the
Gadarenes—Jesus met two men who were possessed by demons,
coming out of the tombs. They were so violent that no one was able
to pass that way. 29 Suddenly they shrieked out: "What do you want
with us, Son of God? Have you come here to torment us before our
time?" 30 A long way off, there was a drove of many pigs, feeding; 31
And the foul spirits began begging Jesus: "If you drive us out, send
us into the drove of pigs." 32 "Go," he said. The spirits came out, and
entered the pigs; and the whole drove rushed down the steep slope
into the Sea, and died in the water. 33 At this the men who tended
them ran away and went to the town, carrying the news of all that
had occurred, and of what had happened to the possessed men. 34
At the news the whole town went out to meet Jesus, and, when they
saw him, they entreated him to go away from their neighbourhood.

Chapter 9

1 Afterwards Jesus got into a boat, and, crossing over,
came to his own city. 2 And there some people brought to him a
paralyzed man on a bed. When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the
man: "Courage, Child! Your sins are forgiven." 3 Then some of the
teachers of the Law said to themselves: "This man is blaspheming!"
4 Knowing their thoughts, Jesus exclaimed: "Why do your cherish
such wicked thoughts? 5 Which, I ask, is the easier?—to say 'Your
sins are forgiven'? or to say 'Get up, and walk about'? 6 But, that you
may know that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins"—
then he said to the paralyzed man—"Get up, take up your bed, and
return to your home." 7 The man got up and went to his home. 8
When the crowd saw this, they were awe-struck, and praised God
for giving such power to men.

9 As Jesus went along, he saw a man, called Matthew, sitting
in the tax-office, and said to him: "Follow me." Matthew got up and
followed him. 10 And, later on, when he was at table in the house,
a number of tax-gatherers and outcasts came in and took their
places at table with Jesus and his disciples. 11 When the Pharisees
saw this, they said to his disciples: "Why does your Teacher eat in
the company of tax-gatherers and outcasts?" 12 On hearing this,
Jesus said: "It is not those who are in health that need a doctor, but
those who are ill. 13 Go and learn what this means—'I desire mercy,
and not sacrifice'; for I did not come to call the religious, but the
outcast."

14 Then John's disciples came to Jesus, and asked: "Why
do we and the Pharisees fast while your disciples do not?" 15
Jesus answered: "Can the bridegroom's friends mourn as long as
the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come, when the
bridegroom will be parted from them, and they will fast then. 16 No
man ever puts a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; for such
a patch tears away from the garment, and a worse rent is made. 17
Nor do people put new wine into old wine-skins; for, if they do, the
skins burst, and the wine runs out, and the skins are lost; but they
put new wine into fresh skins, and so both are preserved."

18 While Jesus was saying this, a President of a Synagogue
came up and bowed to the ground before him. "My daughter," he
said, "Has just died; but come and place your hand on her, and

she will be restored to life." [19] So Jesus rose and followed him, and his disciples went also. [20] But meanwhile a woman, who had been suffering from haemorrhage for twelve years, came up behind and touched the tassel of his cloak. [21] "If I only touch his cloak," she said to herself, "I shall get well." [22] Turning and seeing her, Jesus said: "Courage, Daughter! your faith has delivered you." And the woman was delivered from her malady from that very hour. [23] When Jesus reached the President's house, seeing the flute-players, and a number of people all in confusion, [24] He said: "Go away, the little girl is not dead; she is asleep." They began to laugh at him; [25] But, when the people had been sent out, Jesus went in, and took the little girl's hand, and she rose. [26] The report of this spread through all that part of the country.

[27] As Jesus was passing on from there, he was followed by two blind men, who kept calling out: "Take pity on us, Son of David!" [28] When he had gone indoors, the blind men came up to him; and Jesus asked them: "Do you believe that I am able to do this?" "Yes, Master!" they answered. [29] Upon that he touched their eyes, and said: "It shall be according to your faith." [30] Then their eyes were opened. Jesus sternly cautioned them. "See that no one knows of it," he said. [31] But the men went out, and spread the news about him through all that part of the country. [32] Just as they were going out, some people brought up to Jesus a dumb man who was possessed by a demon; [33] And, as soon as the demon had been driven out, the dumb man spoke. The people were astonished at this, and exclaimed: "Nothing like this has ever been seen in Israel!" [34] But the Pharisees said: "He drives out the demons by the help of the chief of the demons."

[35] Jesus went round all the towns and the villages, teaching in their Synagogues, proclaiming the Good News of the Kingdom, and curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness. [36] But, when he saw the crowds, his heart was moved with compassion for them, because they were distressed and harassed, 'like sheep without a shepherd'; [37] And he said to his disciples: "The harvest is abundant, but the labourers are few. [38] Therefore pray to the Owner of the harvest to send labourers to gather in his harvest."

Chapter 10

[1] Calling his twelve Disciples to him, Jesus gave them

authority over foul spirits, so that they could drive them out, as well as the power of curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness. [2] The names of the twelve Apostles are these: First Simon, also known as Peter, and his brother Andrew; James the son of Zebediah, and his brother John; [3] Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas and Matthew the tax-gather; James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus; [4] Simon the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot—the Apostle who betrayed him.

[5] These twelve Jesus sent out as his Messengers, after giving them these instructions—"Do not go to the Gentiles, nor enter any Samaritan town, [6] But make your way rather to the lost sheep of Israel. [7] And on your way proclaim that the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand. [8] Cure the sick, raise the dead, make the lepers clean, drive out demons. You have received free of cost, give free of cost. [9] Do not provide yourselves with gold, or silver, or pence in your purses; [10] Not even with a bag for the journey, or a change of clothes, or sandals, or even a staff; for the worker is worth his food. [11] Whatever town or village you visit, find out who is worthy in that place, and remain there till you leave. [12] As you enter the house, greet it. [13] Then, if the house is worthy, let your blessing rest upon it, but, if it is unworthy, let your blessing return upon yourselves. [14] If no one welcomes you, or listens to what you say, as you leave that house or that town, shake off its dust from your feet. [15] I tell you, the doom of the land of Sodom and Gomorrah will be more bearable in the 'Day of Judgement' than the doom of that town.

[16] Remember, I am sending you out as my Messengers like sheep among wolves. So be as wise as serpents, and as blameless as doves. [17] Be on your guard against your fellow men, for they will betray you to courts of law, and scourge you in their Synagogues; [18] And you will be brought before governors and kings for my sake, that you may witness for me before them and the nations. [19] Whenever they betray you, do not be anxious as to how you shall speak or what you shall say, for what you shall say will be given you at the moment; [20] For it will not be you who speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaks within you. [21] Brother will betray brother to death, and the father his child; and children will turn against their parents, and cause them to be put to death; [22] And you will be hated by every one on account of my Name. Yet the man that endures to the end shall be saved. [23] But, when they persecute you in one town,

escape to the next; for, I tell you, you will not have come to the end of the towns of Israel before the Son of Man comes. 24 A scholar is not above his teacher, nor a servant above his master. 25 It is enough for a scholar to be treated like his teacher, and a servant like his master. If the head of the house has been called Baal-zebub, how much more the members of his household! 26 Do not, therefore, be afraid of them. There is nothing concealed which will not be revealed, nor anything hidden which will not become known. 27 What I tell you in the dark, say again in the light; and what is whispered in your ear, proclaim upon the housetops. 28 And do not be afraid of those who kill the body, but are unable to kill the soul; rather be afraid of him who is able to destroy both soul and body in the Pit. 29 Are not two sparrows sold for a half-penny? Yet not one of them will fall to the ground without your Father's knowledge. 30 While as for you, the very hairs of your head are numbered. 31 Do not, therefore, be afraid; you are of more value than many sparrows. 32 Every one, therefore, who shall acknowledge me before his fellow men, I, too, will acknowledge before my Father who is in Heaven; 33 But, if any one disowns me before his fellow men, I, too, will disown him before my Father who is in Heaven. 34 Do not imagine that I have come to bring peace upon the earth. I have come to bring, not peace, but the sword. 35 For I have come to set—'a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. 36 A man's enemies will be the members of his own household.' 37 He who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. 38 And the man who does not take his cross and follow in my steps is not worthy of me. 39 He who has found his life will lose it, while he who, for my sake, has lost his life shall find it. 40 He who welcomes you is welcoming me; and he who welcomes me is welcoming him who sent me as his Messenger. 41 He who welcomes a Prophet, because he is a Prophet, shall receive a Prophet's reward; and he who welcomes a good man, because he is a good man, shall receive a good man's reward. 42 And, if any one gives but a cup of cold water to one of these lowly ones because he is a disciple, I tell you that he shall assuredly not lose his reward."

Chapter 11

1 After Jesus had finished giving directions to his twelve

Disciples, he left that place in order to teach and preach in their towns. 2 Now John had heard in prison what the Christ was doing, and he sent a message by his disciples, 3 And asked—" Are you 'The Coming One,' or are we to look for someone else?" 4 The answer of Jesus to the question was—" Go and report to John what you hear and see— 5 The blind recover their sight and the lame walk, the lepers are made clean and the deaf hear, the dead, too, are raised to life, and the good news is told to the poor. 6 And blessed is the man who finds no hindrance in me."

7 While these men were going back, Jesus began to say to the crowds with reference to John: 8 "What did you go out into the Wilderness to look at? A reed waving in the wind? If not, what did you go out to see? A man richly dressed? Why, those who wear rich things are to be found in the courts of kings! 9 What, then, did you go for? To see a Prophet? Yes, I tell you, and far more than a Prophet. 10 This is the man of whom Scripture says—'Behold, I am myself sending my Messenger before thy face, And he shall prepare thy way before thee.' 11 I tell you, no one born of a woman has yet appeared who is greater than John the Baptist; and yet the lowliest in the Kingdom of Heaven is greater than he. 12 From the time of John the Baptist to this very hour, the Kingdom of Heaven has been taken by force, and men using force have been seizing it. 13 For the teaching of all the Prophets and of the Law continued till the time of John; 14 And—if you are ready to accept it—John is himself the Elijah who was destined to come. 15 Let him who has ears hear.

16 But to what shall I compare the present generation? It is like little children sitting in the market-places and calling out to their playmates— 17 'We have played the flute for you, but you have not danced; We have wailed, but you have not mourned.' 18 For, when John came, neither eating nor drinking, men said 'He has a demon in him'; 19 And now that the Son of Man has come, eating and drinking, they are saying 'Here is a glutton and a wine-drinker, a friend of tax-gatherers and outcasts!' And yet Wisdom is vindicated by her actions." 20 Then Jesus began to reproach the towns in which most of his miracles had been done, because they had not repented: 21 "Alas for you, Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida! For, if the miracles which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. 22 Yet, I tell you, the doom of Tyre and Sidon will be more bearable in the

'Day of Judgement' than yours. 23 And you, Capernaum! Will you 'exalt yourself to Heaven'? 'You shall go down to the Place of Death.' For, if the miracles which have been done in you had been done in Sodom, it would have been standing to this day. 24 Yet, I tell you, the doom of Sodom will be more bearable in the 'Day of Judgement' than yours."

25 At that same time Jesus uttered the words: "I thank thee, Father, Lord of Heaven and earth, that, though thou has hidden these things from the wise and learned, thou hast revealed them to the child-like! 26 Yes, Father, I thank thee that this has seemed good to thee. 27 Everything has been committed to me by my Father; nor does any one fully know the Son, except the Father, or fully know the Father, except the Son and those to whom the Son may choose to reveal him. 28 Come to me, all you who toil and are burdened, and I will give you rest! 29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn from me, for I am gentle and lowly-minded, and 'you shall find rest for your souls'; 30 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light."

Chapter 12

1 About the same time Jesus walked through the corn-fields one Sabbath. His disciples were hungry, and began to pick some ears of wheat and eat them. 2 But, when the Pharisees saw this, they said: "Look! your disciples are doing what it is not allowable to do on a Sabbath!" 3 "Have not you read," replied Jesus, "what David did, when he and his companions were hungry— 4 How he went into the House of God, and how they ate the consecrated bread, through it was not allowable for him or his companions to eat it, but only for the priests? 5 And have not you read in the law that, on the Sabbath, the priest in the Temple break the Sabbath and yet are not guilty? 6 Here, however, I tell you, there is something greater than the Temple! 7 And had you learned the meaning of the words—'I desire mercy, and not sacrifice,' you would not have condemned those who are not guilty. 8 For the Son of Man is lord of the Sabbath." 9 Passing on, Jesus went into their Synagogue, 10 And there he saw a man with a withered hand. Some people asked Jesus whether it was allowable to work a cure on the Sabbath—so that they might have a charge to bring against him. 11 But Jesus said to them: "Which of you, if he had only one sheep, and that sheep fell into a pit on the Sabbath, would not lay hold of it and pull it out? 12 And how much more precious

a man is than a sheep! Therefore it is allowable to do good on the Sabbath." 13 Then he said to the man. "Stretch out your hand." The man stretched it out; and it had become as sound as the other.

14 On coming out, the Pharisees plotted against Jesus, to put him to death. 15 Jesus, however, became aware of it, and went away from that place. A number of people followed him, and he cured them all; 16 but he warned them not to make him known, 17 in fulfilment of these words in the Prophet Isaiah— 18 'Behold! the Servant of my Choice, My Beloved, in whom my heart delights! I will breathe my spirit upon him, And he shall announce a time of judgement to the Gentiles. 19 He shall not contend, nor cry aloud, Neither shall any one hear his voice in the streets; 20 A bruised reed he will not break, And a smouldering wick he will not quench, Till he has brought the judgement to a victorious issue, 21 And on his name shall the Gentiles rest their hopes.'

22 Then some people brought to Jesus a possessed man, who was blind and dumb; and he cured him, so that the man who had been dumb both talked and saw. 23 At this all the people were astounded. "Is it possible that this is the son of David?" they exclaimed. 24 But the Pharisees heard of it and said: "He drives out demons only by the help of Baal-zebub the chief of the demons." 25 Jesus, however, was aware of what was passing in their minds, and said to them: "Any kingdom divided against itself becomes a desolation, and any town or household divided against itself will not last. 26 So, if Satan drives Satan out, he must be divided against himself; and how, then, can his kingdom last? 27 And, if it is by Baal-zebub's help that I drive out demons, by whose help is it that your own sons drive them out? Therefore they shall themselves be your judges. 28 But, if it is by the help of the Spirit of God that I drive out demons, then the Kingdom of God must already be upon you. 29 How, again, can any one get into a strong man's house and carry off his goods, without first securing him? And not till then will he plunder his house. 30 He who is not with me is against me, and he who does not help me to gather is scattering. 31 Therefore, I tell you, men will be forgiven every sin and slander; but slander against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven. 32 Whoever speaks against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven, either in the present age, or in the age to come. 33 You must assume either that both tree and fruit are good, or that

both tree and fruit are worthless; since it is by its fruits that a tree is known. 34 You brood of vipers! how can you, evil as you are, say anything good? For what fills the heart will rise to the lips. 35 A good man, from his good stores, produces good things; while an evil man, from his evil stores, produces evil things. 36 I tell you that for every careless thing that men say, they must answer on the 'Day of Judgement.' 37 For it is by your words that you will be acquitted, and by your words that you will be condemned."

38 At this point, some Teachers of the Law and Pharisees interposed. "Teacher," they said, "we want to see some sign from you." 39 "It is a wicked and unfaithful generation," answered Jesus, "that is asking for a sign, and no sign shall be given it except the sign of the Prophet Jonah. 40 For, just as 'Jonah was inside the sea-monster three days and three nights,' so shall the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. 41 At the Judgement, the men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation, and will condemn it, because they repented at Jonah's proclamation; and here is more than a Jonah! 42 At the Judgement the Queen of the South will rise up with the present generation, and will condemn it, because she came from the very ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon; and here is more than a Solomon! 43 No sooner does a foul spirit leave a man, than it passes through places where there is no water, in search of rest, and does not find it. 44 Then it says 'I will go back to the home which I left'; but, on coming there, it finds it unoccupied, and swept, and put in order. 45 Then it goes and brings with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in, and make their home there; and the last state of that man proves to be worse than the first. So, too, will it be with this wicked generation."

46 While he was still speaking to the crowds, his mother and brothers were standing outside, asking to speak to him. 47 Someone told him this, and Jesus replied: 48 "Who is my mother? and who are my brothers?" 49 Then, stretching out his hands towards his disciples, he said: "Here are my mother and my brothers! 50 For any one who does the will of my Father who is in Heaven is my brother and sister and mother."

Chapter 13

1 That same day, when Jesus had left the house and was sitting

by the Sea, 2 such great crowds gathered round him, that he got into a boat, and sat in it, while all the people stood upon the beach. 3 Then he told them many truths in parables. "The sower," he began, "went out to sow; and, 4 As he was sowing, some seed fell along the path, and the birds came and ate it up. 5 Some fell on rocky places, where it had not much soil, and, having no depth of soil, sprang up at once. 6 As soon as the sun had risen, it was scorched, and, having no root, withered away. 7 Some, again, fell into the brambles; but the brambles shot up and choked it. 8 Some, however, fell on good soil, and yielded a return, sometimes one hundred, sometimes sixty, sometimes thirty fold. 9 Let him who has ears hear." 10 Afterwards his disciples came to him, and said: "Why do you speak to them in parables?" 11 "To you," answered Jesus, "the knowledge of the hidden truths of the Kingdom of Heaven has been imparted, but not to those. 12 For, to all who have, more will be given, and they shall have abundance; but, from all who have nothing, even what they have will be taken away. 13 That is why I speak to them in parables, because, though they have eyes, they do not see, and though they have ears, they do not hear or understand. 14 And in them is being fulfilled that prophecy of Isaiah which says—'You will hear with your ears without ever understanding, And, though you have eyes, you will see without ever perceiving, 15 For the mind of this nation has grown dense, And their ears are dull of hearing, Their eyes also have they closed; Lest some day they should perceive with their eyes, And with their ears they should hear, And in their mind they should understand, and should turn—And I should heal them.' 16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they hear; 17 For I tell you that many Prophets and good men have longed for the sight of the things which you are seeing, yet never saw them, and to hear the things which you are hearing, yet never heard them. 18 Listen, then, yourselves to the parable of the Sower. 19 When any one hears the Message of the Kingdom without understanding it, the Evil One comes and snatches away what has been sown in his mind. This is the man meant by the seed which was sown along the path. 20 By the seed which was sown on rocky places is meant the man who hears the Message, and at once accepts it joyfully; 21 But, as he has no root, he stands for only a short time; and, when trouble or persecution arises on account of the Message, he falls away at once. 22 By the seed which was sown among the brambles is

meant the man who hears the Message, but the cares of life and the glamour of wealth completely choke the Message, so that it gives no return. 23 But by the seed which was sown on the good ground is meant the man who hears the Message and understands it, and really yields a return, sometimes one hundred, sometimes sixty, sometimes thirty fold."

24 Another parable which Jesus told them was this—"The Kingdom of Heaven is compared to a man who sowed good seed in his field. 25 But, while every one was asleep, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and then went away. 26 So, when the blades of corn shot up, and came into ear, the tares made their appearance also. 27 On this the owner's servants came to him, and said 'Was not it good seed that you sowed in your field? Where, then, do the tares in it come from?' 28 'An enemy has done this,' was his answer. 'Do you wish us, then,' they asked,' to go and gather them together?' 29 'No,' said he, 'for fear that, while you are gathering the tares, you should root up the wheat as well. 30 Let both grow side by side till harvest; and then I shall say to the reapers, Gather the tares together first, and tie them in bundles for burning; but bring all the wheat into my barn.'" 31 Another parable which he told them was this—"The Kingdom of Heaven is like a mustard-seed, which a man took and sowed in his field. 32 This seed is smaller than all other seeds, but, when it has grown up, it is larger than the herbs and becomes a tree, so that 'the wild birds come and roost in its branches.'" 33 This was another parable which Jesus related—"The Kingdom of Heaven is like some yeast which a woman took and covered up in three pecks of flour, until the whole had risen." 34 Of all this Jesus spoke to the crowd in parables; indeed to them he used never to speak at all except in parables, 35 in fulfilment of these words in the Prophet—'I will speak to them in parables; I will utter things kept secret since the foundation of the world.' 36 Then Jesus left the crowd, and went into the house. Presently his disciples came to him, and said: "Explain to us the parable of the tares in the field." 37 And he answered: "The sower of the good seed is the Son of Man. 38 The field is the world. By the good seed is meant the People of the Kingdom. The tares are the wicked, 39 And the enemy who sowed them is the Devil. The harvest-time is the close of the age, and the reapers are angels. 40 And, just as the tares are gathered and burnt, so it will be at the close of the age. 41 The Son of Man will send his

angels, and they will gather from his kingdom all that hinders and those who live in sin, 42 And 'will throw them into the fiery furnace,' where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth. 43 Then shall the righteous shine, like the sun, in the Kingdom of their Father. Let him who has ears hear.

44 The Kingdom of Heaven is like a treasure hidden in a field, which a man found and hid again, and then, in his delight, went and sold everything that he had, and bought that field. 45 Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like a merchant in search of choice pearls. 46 Finding one of great value, he went and sold everything that he had, and bought it. 47 Or again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like a net which was cast into the sea, and caught fish of all kinds. 48 When it was full, they hauled it up on the beach, and sat down and sorted the good fish into baskets, but threw the worthless ones away. 49 So will it be at the close of the age. The angels will go out and separate the wicked from the righteous, 50 And 'will throw them into the fiery furnace,' where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth. 51 Have you understood all this?" Jesus asked. "Yes," they answered. 52 Then he added: "So every Teacher of the Law, who has received instruction about the Kingdom of Heaven, is like a householder who produces from his stores things both new and old."

53 When Jesus had finished these parables, he withdrew from that place. 54 Going to his own part of the country, he taught the people in their Synagogue in such a manner that they were deeply impressed. "Where did he get this wisdom?" they said, "and the miracles? 55 Is not he the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary, and his brothers James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas? 56 And his sisters, too—are not they all living among us? Where, then did he get all this?" 57 These things proved a hindrance to their believing in him; whereupon Jesus said: "A prophet is not without honour, except in his own country and in his own house." 58 And he did not work many miracles there, because of their want of faith.

Chapter 14

1 At that time Prince Herod heard of the fame of Jesus, 2 And said to his attendants: "This must be John the Baptist; he must be risen from the dead, and that is why these miraculous powers are active in him." 3 For Herod had arrested John, put him in chains,

and shut him up in prison, to please Herodias, the wife of Herod's
brother Philip. 4 For John had said to him 'You have no right to be
living with her.' 5 Yet, though Herod wanted to put him to death, he
was afraid of the people, because they looked on John as a Prophet. 6
But, when Herod's birthday came, the daughter of Herodias danced
before his guests, and so pleased Herod, 7 That he promised with
an oath to give her whatever she asked. 8 Prompted by her mother,
the girl said 'Give me here, on a dish, the head of John the Baptist.'
9 The king was distressed at this; yet, on account of his oath and of
the guests at his table, he ordered it to be given her. 10 He sent and
beheaded John in the prison; 11 And his head was brought on a dish
and given to the girl, and she took it to her mother. 12 Then John's
disciples came, and took the body away, and buried it; and went and
told Jesus.

13 When Jesus heard of it, he retired privately in a boat to a
lonely spot. The people, however, heard of his going, and followed
him in crowds from the towns on foot. 14 On getting out of the boat,
Jesus saw a great crowd, and his heart was moved at the sight of
them; and he cured all the sick among them. 15 In the evening the
disciples came up to him, and said: "This is a lonely spot, and the
day is now far advanced; send the crowds away, that they may go
to the villages, and buy themselves food." 16 But Jesus said: "They
need not go away, it is for you to give them something to eat." 17 "We
have nothing here," they said, "except five loaves and two fishes." 18
"Bring them here to me," was his reply. 19 Jesus ordered the people
to take their seats on the grass; and, taking the five loaves and the
two fishes, he looked up to Heaven, and said the blessing, and, after
he had broken the loaves, gave them to his disciples; and they gave
them to the crowds. 20 Every one had sufficient to eat, and they
picked up enough of the broken pieces that were left to fill twelve
baskets. 21 The men who ate were about five thousand in number,
without counting women and children.

22 Immediately afterwards Jesus made the disciples get
into a boat and cross over in advance of him, while he dismissed
the crowds. 23 After dismissing the crowds, he went up the hill by
himself to pray; and, when evening fell, he was there alone. 24 The
boat was by this time some miles from shore, labouring in the
waves, for the wind was against her. 25 Three hours after midnight,
however, Jesus came towards the disciples, walking on the water. 26

But, when they saw him walking on the water, they were terrified.
"It is a ghost," they exclaimed, and cried out for fear. 27 But Jesus at
once spoke to them. "Courage!" he said, "It is I; do not be afraid!" 28
"Master," Peter exclaimed, "if it is you, tell me to come to you on the
water." 29 And Jesus said: "Come." So Peter got down from the boat,
and walked on the water, and went towards Jesus; 30 But, when he
felt the wind, he was frightened, and, beginning to sink, cried out:
"Master! Save me!" 31 Instantly Jesus stretched out his hand, and
caught hold of him. "O man of little faith!" he said, "Why did you
falter?" 32 When they had got into the boat, the wind dropped. 33 But
the men in the boat threw themselves on their faces before him, and
said: "You are indeed God's Son."

34 When they had crossed over, they landed at Gennesaret. 35
But the people of that place, recognizing Jesus, sent out to the whole
country round, and brought to him all who were ill, 36 Begging him
merely to let them touch the tassel of his cloak; and all who touched
were made perfectly well.

Chapter 15

1 Then some Pharisees and Teachers of the Law came to
Jesus, and said: 2 "How is it that your disciples break the traditions
of our ancestors? For they do not wash their hands when they eat
food." 3 His reply was: "How is it that you on your side break God's
commandments out of respect for your own traditions? 4 For God
said—'Honour thy father and mother,' and 'Let him who reviles his
father or mother suffer death,' 5 But you say 'Whenever any one
says to his father or mother "Whatever of mine might have been of
service to you is 'Given to God,'" 6 He is in no way bound to honour
his father.' In this way you have nullified the words of God on
account of your traditions. 7 Hypocrites! It was well said by Isaiah
when he prophesied about you— 8 'This is a people that honour
me with their lips, While their hearts are far removed from me; 9
But vainly do they worship me, For they teach but the precepts of
men.'"

10 Then Jesus called the people to him, and said: "Listen, and
mark my words. 11 It is not what enters a man's mouth that 'defiles'
him, but what comes out from his mouth—that does defile him!" 12
On this his disciples came up to him, and said: "Do you know that
the Pharisees were shocked on hearing what you said?" 13 "Every

plant," Jesus replied, "that my heavenly Father has not planted will be rooted up. 14 Let them be; they are but blind guides; and, if one blind man guides another, both of them will fall into a ditch." 15 Upon this, Peter said to Jesus: "Explain this saying to us." 16 "What, do even you understand nothing yet?" Jesus exclaimed. 17 "Do not you see that whatever goes into the mouth passes into the stomach, and is afterwards expelled? 18 But the things that come out from the mouth proceed from the heart, and it is these that defile a man; 19 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts—murder, adultery, unchastity, theft, perjury, slander. 20 These are the things that defile a man; but eating with unwashed hands does not defile a man."

21 On going away from that place, Jesus retired to the country round Tyre and Sidon. 22 There, a Canaanite woman of that district came out and began calling to Jesus: "Take pity on me, Master, Son of David; my daughter is grievously possessed by a demon." 23 But Jesus did not answer her a word; and his disciples came up and begged him to send her away. "She keeps calling out after us," they said. 24 "I was not sent," replied Jesus, "to any one except the lost sheep of Israel." 25 But the woman came, and, bowing to the ground before him, said: "Master, help me." 26 "It is not fair," replied Jesus, "to take the children's food and throw it to dogs." 27 "Yes, Master," she said, "for even dogs do feed on the scraps that fall from their owners' table." 28 "Your faith is great," was his reply to the woman; "it shall be as you wish!" And her daughter was cured that very hour.

29 On leaving that place, Jesus went to the shore of the Sea of Galilee; and then went up the hill, and sat down., you will do what not only what has been done to the fig tree, but, even if you should say to this hill 'Be lifted up and hurled into the sea!' it would be done. 30 Great crowds of people came to him, bringing with them those who were lame, crippled, blind, or dumb, and many others. They put them down at his feet, and he cured them; 31 And the crowds were astonished, when they saw the dumb talking, the cripples made sound, the lame walking about, and the blind with their sight restored; and they praised the God of Israel. 32 Afterwards Jesus called his disciples to him, and said: "My heart is moved at the sight of all these people, for they have already been with me three days and they have nothing to eat; and I am unwilling to send them away hungry, for fear that they should break down on the way." 33 "Where

can we," his disciples asked, "in a lonely place find enough bread for such a crowd as this?" 34 "How many loaves have you?" said Jesus. "Seven," they answered, "and a few small fish." 35 Telling the crowd to sit down on the ground, 36 Jesus took the seven loaves and the fish, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke them, and gave them to the disciples; and the disciples gave them to the crowds. 37 Every one had sufficient to eat, and they picked up seven baskets full of the broken pieces left. 38 The men who ate were four thousand in number without counting women and children. 39 Then, after dismissing the crowds, Jesus got into the boat, and went to the neighbourhood of Magadan.

Chapter 16

1 Here the Pharisees and Sadducees came up, and, to test Jesus, requested him to show them some sign from the heavens. 2 But Jesus answered: "In the evening you say 'It will be fine weather, for the sky is as red as fire.' 3 But in the morning you say 'To-day it will be stormy, for the sky is as red as fire and threatening.' You learn to read the sky; yet you are unable to read the signs of the times! 4 A wicked and unfaithful generation is asking for a sign, but no sign shall be given it except the sign of Jonah." So he left them and went away.

5 Now the disciples had crossed to the opposite shore, and had forgotten to take any bread. 6 Presently Jesus said to them: "Take care and be on your guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." 7 But the disciples began talking among themselves about their having brought no bread. 8 On noticing this, Jesus said: "Why are you talking among yourselves about your being short of bread, O men of little faith? 9 Do not you yet see, nor remember the five loaves for the five thousand, and how many baskets you took away? 10 Nor yet the seven loaves for the four thousand, and how many basketfuls you took away? 11 How is it that you do not see that I was not speaking about bread? Be on your guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." 12 Then they understood that he had told them to be on their guard, not against the leaven of bread, but against the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

13 On coming into the neighbourhood of Caesarea Philippi, Jesus asked his disciples this question—"Who do people say that the Son of Man is?" 14 "Some say John the Baptist," they answered,

"Others, however, say that he is Elijah, while others again say Jeremiah, or one of the Prophets." 15 "But you," he said, "who do you say that I am?" 16 And to this Simon Peter answered: "You are the Christ, the Son of the Living God." 17 "Blessed are you, Simon, Son of Jonah," Jesus replied. "For no human being has revealed this to you, but my Father who is in Heaven. 18 Yes, and I say to you, Your name is 'Peter—a Rock, and on this rock I will build my Church, and the Powers of the Place of Death shall not prevail over it. 19 I will give you the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven. Whatever you forbid on earth will be held in Heaven to be forbidden, and whatever you allow on earth will be held in Heaven to be allowed." 20 Then he charged his disciples not to tell any one that he was the Christ.

21 At that time Jesus Christ began to explain to his disciples that he must go to Jerusalem, and undergo much suffering at the hands of the Councillors, and Chief Priests, and Teachers of the Law, and be put to death, and rise on the third day. 22 But Peter took Jesus aside, and began to rebuke him. "Master," he said, "please God that shall never be your fate!" 23 Jesus, however, turning to Peter, said: "Out of my way, Satan! You are a hindrance to me; for you look at things, not as God does, but as man does."

24 Then Jesus said to his disciples: "If any man wishes to walk in my steps, let him renounce self, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25 For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, and whoever, for my sake, loses his life shall find it. 26 What good will it do a man to gain the whole world, if he forfeits his life? or what will a man give that is of equal value with his life? 27 For the Son of Man is to come in his Father's Glory, with his angels, and then he 'will give to every man what his actions deserve.' 28 I tell you, some of those who are standing here will not know death till they have seen the Son of Man coming into his Kingdom."

Chapter 17

1 Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter, and the brothers James and John, and led them up a high mountain alone. 2 There his appearance was transformed before their eyes; his face shown like the sun, and his clothes became as white as the light. 3 And all at once Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Jesus. 4 "Master," exclaimed Peter, interposing, "it is good to be here; if you wish, I will make three tents here, one for you, one for Moses,

and one for Elijah." 5 While he was still speaking, a bright cloud enveloped them, and there was a voice from the cloud that said—"This is my Son, the Beloved, in whom I delight; him you must hear." 6 The disciples, on hearing this, fell on their faces, greatly afraid. 7 But Jesus came and touched them, saying as he did so: "Rise up, and do not be afraid." 8 When they raised their eyes, they saw no one but Jesus himself alone. 9 As they were going down the mountain side, Jesus gave them this warning—"Do not speak of this vision to any one, until the Son of Man has risen from the dead." 10 "How is it," his disciples asked, "that our Teachers of the Law say that Elijah has to come first?" 11 "Elijah indeed does come," Jesus replied, "and will restore everything; 12 And I tell you that Elijah has already come, and people have not recognized him, but have treated him just as they pleased. In the same way, too, the Son of Man is destined to undergo suffering at men's hands." 13 Then the disciples understood that it was of John the Baptist that he had spoken to them.

14 When they came to the crowd, a man came up to Jesus, and, kneeling down before him, said: 15 "Master, take pity on my son, for he is epileptic and suffers terribly; indeed, he often falls into the fire and into the water; 16 I brought him to your disciples, but they could not cure him." 17 "O faithless and perverse generation!" Jesus exclaimed, "how long must I be among you? how long must I have patience with you? Bring the boy here to me." 18 Then Jesus rebuked the demon, and it came out of the boy; and he was cured from that very hour. 19 Afterwards the disciples came up to Jesus, and asked him privately: "Why was it that we could not drive it out?" 20 "Because you have so little faith," he answered; "for, I tell you, if your faith were only like a mustard-seed, you could say to this mountain 'Move from this place to that!' and it would be moved; and nothing would be impossible to you. 21 But an evil spirit of this kind is only driven out by prayer and fasting."

22 While Jesus and his disciples were together in Galilee, he said to them: "The Son of Man is destined to be betrayed into the hands of his fellow-men, 23 And they will put him to death, but on the third day he will rise." And the disciples were greatly distressed.

24 After they had reached Capernaum, the collectors of the Temple-rate came up to Peter, and said: "Does not your Master pay the Temple-rate?" 25 "Yes," answered Peter. But, on going into

the house, before he could speak, Jesus said: “What do you think, Simon? From whom do earthly kings take taxes or tribute? From their sons, or from others?” 26 “From others,” answered Peter. “Well then,” continued Jesus, “their sons go free. 27 Still, that we may not shock them, go and throw a line into the Sea; take the first fish that rises, open its mouth, and you will find in it a piece of money. Take that, and give it to the collectors for both of us.”

Chapter 18

1 On the same occasion the disciples came to Jesus, and asked him: “Who is really the greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven?” 2 Jesus called a little child to him, and placed it in the middle of them, and then said: 3 “I tell you, unless you change and become like little children, you will not enter the Kingdom of Heaven at all. 4 Therefore, any one who will humble himself like this child—that man shall be the greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven. 5 And any one who, for the sake of my Name, welcomes even one little child like this, is welcoming me. 6 But, if any one puts a snare in the way of one of these lowly ones who believe in me, it would be best for him to be sunk in the depths of the sea with a great millstone hung round his neck.

7 Alas for the world because of such snares! There cannot but be snares; yet alas for the man who is answerable for the snare! 8 If your hand or your foot is a snare to you, cut it off, and throw it away. It would be better for you to enter the Life maimed or lame, than to have both hands, or both feet, and be thrown into the aeonian fire. 9 If your eye is a snare to you, take it out, and throw it away. It would be better for you to enter the Life with only one eye, than to have both eyes and be thrown into the fiery Pit. 10 Beware of despising one of these lowly ones, for in Heaven, I tell you, their angels always see the face of my Father who is in Heaven. 11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. 12 What think you? If a man owns a hundred sheep, and one of them strays, will he not leave the ninety-nine on the hills, and go and search for the one that is straying? 13 And, if he succeeds in finding it, I tell you that he rejoices more over that one sheep than over the ninety-nine which did not stray. 14 So, too, it is the will of my Father who is in Heaven that not one of these lowly ones should be lost.

15 If your Brother does wrong, go to him and convince him

of his fault when you and he are alone. If he listens to you, you have won your Brother. 16 But, if he does not listen to you, take with you one or two others, so that ‘on the evidence of two or three witnesses, every word may be put beyond dispute.’ 17 If he refuses to listen to them, speak to the Church; and, if he also refuses to listen to the Church, treat him as you would a Gentile or a tax-gatherer. 18 I tell you, all that you forbid on earth will be held in Heaven to be forbidden, and all that you allow on earth will be held in Heaven to be allowed. 19 Again, I tell you that, if but two of you on earth agree as to what they shall pray for, whatever it be, it will be granted them by my Father who is in Heaven. 20 For where two or three have come together in my Name, I am present with them.”

21 Then Peter came up, and said to Jesus: “Master, how often am I to forgive my Brother when he wrongs me? As many as seven times?” 22 But Jesus answered: “Not seven times, but ‘seventy times seven.’ 23 And therefore the Kingdom of Heaven may be compared to a king who wished to settle accounts with his servants. 24 When he had begun to do so, one of them was brought to him who owed him six million pounds; 25 And, as he could not pay, his master ordered him to be sold towards the payment of the debt, together with his wife, and his children, and everything that he had. 26 Thereupon the servant threw himself down on the ground before him and said ‘Have patience with me, and I will pay you all.’ 27 The master was moved with compassion; and he let him go, and forgave him the debt. 28 But, on going out, that same servant came upon one of his fellow-servants who owed him ten pounds. Seizing him by the throat, he said ‘Pay what you owe me.’ 29 Thereupon his fellow-servant threw himself on the ground and begged for mercy. ‘Have patience with me,’ he said, ‘and I will pay you.’ 30 But the other would not, but went and put him in prison till he should pay his debt. 31 When his fellow-servants saw what had happened, they were greatly distressed, and went to their master and laid the whole matter before him. 32 Upon that the master sent for the servant, and said to him ‘You wicked servant! When you begged me for mercy, I forgave you the whole of that debt. 33 Ought not you, also, to have shown mercy to your fellow-servant, just as I showed mercy to you?’ 34 Then his master, in anger, handed him over to the jailers, until he should pay the whole of his debt. 35 So, also, will my heavenly Father do to you, unless each one of you forgives his Brother from

his heart."

Chapter 19

1 At the conclusion of this teaching, Jesus withdrew from
Galilee, and went into that district of Judea which is on the other
side of the Jordan. 2 Great crowds followed him, and he cured them
there.

3 Presently some Pharisees came up to him, and, to test
him, said: "Has a man the right to divorce his wife for every cause?"
4 "Have not you read," replied Jesus, "that at the beginning the
Creator 'made them male and female,' 5 And said—'For this reason
a man shall leave his father and mother, and be united to his wife,
and the man and his wife shall become one'? 6 So that they are no
longer two, but one. What God himself, then, has yoked together
man must not separate." 7 "Why, then," they said, "did Moses direct
that a man should 'serve his wife with a notice of separation and
divorce her'?" 8 "Moses, owing to the hardness of your hearts,"
answered Jesus, "permitted you to divorce your wives, but that was
not so at the beginning. 9 But I tell you that any one who divorces his
wife, except on the ground of her unchastity, and marries another
woman, is guilty of adultery." 10 "If that," said the disciples, "is the
position of a man with regard to his wife, it is better not to marry."
11 "It is not every one," replied Jesus, "who can accept this teaching,
but only those who have been enabled to do so. 12 Some men, it is
true, have from birth been disabled for marriage, while others have
been disabled by their fellow men, and others again have disabled
themselves for the sake of the Kingdom of Heaven. Let him accept
it who can."

13 Then some little children were brought to Jesus, for him
to place his hands on them, and pray; but the disciples found fault
with those who had brought them. 14 Jesus, however, said: "Let the
little children come to me, and do not hinder them, for it is to the
childlike that the Kingdom of Heaven belongs." 15 So he placed his
hands on them, and then went on his way.

16 And a man came up to Jesus, and said: "Teacher, what
good thing must I do to obtain Immortal life?" 17 "Why ask me
about goodness?" answered Jesus. "There is but One who is good.
If you want to enter the Life, keep the commandments." 18 "What
commandments?" asked the man. "These," answered Jesus:

—"'Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not commit adultery. Thou shalt
not steal. Thou shalt not say what is false about others. 19 Honour
thy father and thy mother.' And 'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as
thou dost thyself." 20 "I have observed all these," said the young
man. "What is still wanting in me?" 21 "If you wish to be perfect,"
answered Jesus, "go and sell your property, and give to the poor,
and you shall have wealth in Heaven; then come and follow me." 22
On hearing these words, the young man went away distressed, for
he had great possessions.

23 At this, Jesus said to his disciples: "I tell you that a rich
man will find it hard to enter the Kingdom of Heaven! 24 I say again,
it is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich
man to enter the Kingdom of Heaven!" 25 On hearing this, the
disciples exclaimed in great astonishment: "Who then can possibly
be saved?" 26 But Jesus looked at them, and said: "With men this is
impossible, but with God everything is possible." Then Peter turned
and said to Jesus: 27 "But we—we left everything, and followed you;
what, then, shall we have?" 28 "I tell you," answered Jesus, "that at
the New Creation, 'when the Son of Man takes his seat on his throne
of glory,' you who followed me shall be seated upon twelve thrones,
as judges of the twelve tribes of Israel. 29 Every one who has left
houses, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or children, or
land, on account of my Name, will receive many times as much, and
will 'gain Immortal Life.' 30 But many who are first now will then be
last, and those who are last will be first.

Chapter 20

1 For the Kingdom of Heaven is like an employer who went
out in the early morning to hire labourers for his vineyards. 2 He
agreed with the labourers to pay them two shillings a day, and sent
them into his vineyard. 3 On going out again, about nine o'clock,
he saw some others standing in the market-place, doing nothing.
4 'You also may go into my vineyard,' he said, 'and I will pay you
what is fair.' 5 So the men went. Going out again about mid-day
and about three o'clock, he did as before. 6 When he went out about
five, he found some other men standing there, and said to them
'Why have you been standing here all day long, doing nothing?' 7
'Because no one has hired us,' they answered. 'You also may go into
my vineyard,' he said. 8 In the evening the owner of the vineyard

said to his steward 'Call the labourers, and pay them their wages, beginning with the last, and ending with the first. 9 Now when those who had been hired about five o'clock went up, they received two shillings each. 10 So, when the first went up, they thought that they would receive more, but they also received two shillings each; 11 On which they began to grumble at their employer. 12 'These last,' they said, 'have done only one hour's work, and yet you have put them on the same footing with us, who have borne the brunt of the day's work, and the heat.' 13 'My friend,' was his reply to one of them, 'I am not treating you unfairly. Did not you agree with me for two shillings? 14 Take what belongs to you, and go. I choose to give to this last man the same as to you. 15 Have not I the right to do as I choose with what is mine? Are you envious because I am liberal?' 16 So those who are last will be first, and the first last."

17 When Jesus was on the point of going up to Jerusalem, he gathered the twelve disciples round him by themselves, and said to them as they were on their way: 18 "Listen! We are going up to Jerusalem; and there the Son of Man will be betrayed to the Chief Priests and Teachers of the Law, and they will condemn him to death, 19 And give him up to the Gentiles for them to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify; and on the third day he will rise."

20 Then the mother of Zebediah's sons came to him with her sons, bowing to the ground, and begging a favour. 21 "What is it that you want?" he asked. "I want you to say," she replied, "that in your Kingdom these two sons of mine may sit, one on your right, and the other on your left." 22 "You do not know what you are asking," was Jesus' answer. "Can you drink the cup that I am to drink?" "Yes," they exclaimed, "we can." 23 "You shall indeed drink my cup," he said, "but as to a seat at my right and at my left—that is not mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared by my Father." 24 On hearing of this, the ten others were very indignant about the two brothers. 25 Jesus, however, called the ten to him, and said: "The rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them as you know, and their great men oppress them. 26 Among you it is not so. 27 No, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to take the first place among you, must be your slave; 28 Just as the Son of Man came, not to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many."

29 As they were going out of Jericho, a great crowd followed

him. 30 Two blind men who were sitting by the road-side, hearing that Jesus was passing, called out: "Take pity on us, Master, Son of David!" 31 The crowd told them to be quiet; but the men only called out the louder: "Take pity on us, Master, Son of David!" 32 Then Jesus stopped and called them. "What do you want me to do for you?" he said. 33 "Master," they replied, "we want our eyes to be opened." 34 So Jesus, moved with compassion, touched their eyes, and immediately they recovered their sight, and followed him.

Chapter 21

1 When they had almost reached Jerusalem, having come as far as Bethphage, on the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent on two disciples. 2 "Go to the village facing you," he said, "and you will immediately find an ass tethered, with a foal by her side; untie her, and lead her here for me. 3 And, if any one says anything to you, you are to say this—'The Master wants them'; and he will send them at once." 4 This happened in fulfilment of these words in the Prophet— 5 'Say to the daughter of Zion—"Behold, thy King is coming to thee, Gentle, and riding on an ass, And on the foal of a beast of burden."' 6 So the disciples went and did as Jesus had directed them. 7 They led the ass and the foal back, and, when they had put their cloaks on them, he seated himself upon them. 8 The immense crowd of people spread their cloaks in the road, while some cut branches off the trees, and spread them on the road. 9 The crowds that led the way, as well as those that followed behind, kept shouting: "God save the Son of David! Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord! God save him from on high!" 10 When he had entered Jerusalem, the whole city was stirred, and asked— 11 "Who is this?", to which the crowd replied—"This is the Prophet Jesus from Nazareth in Galilee."

12 Jesus went into the Temple Courts, and drove out all those who were buying and selling there. He overturned the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of the pigeon-dealers, 13 And said to them: "Scripture says—'My House shall be called a house of prayer'; but you are making it 'a den of robbers.'" 14 While he was still in the Temple Courts, some blind and some lame people came up to him, and he cured them. 15 But, when the Chief Priests and the Teachers of the Law saw the wonderful things that Jesus did, and the boys who were calling out in the Temple Courts "God save the Son of David!", they were indignant, 16 And said to him: "Do you hear what

these boys are saying?" "Yes," answered Jesus; "but did you never read the words—'Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings thou hast called forth perfect praise'?" 17 Then he left them, and went out of the city to Bethany, and spent the night there.

18 The next morning, in returning to the city, Jesus became hungry; 19 And, noticing a solitary fig tree by the road-side, he went up to it, but found nothing on it but leaves. So he said to it: "Never again shall fruit be gathered off you." And suddenly the fruit tree withered up. 20 When the disciples saw this, they exclaimed in astonishment: "How suddenly the fig tree withered up!" 21 "I tell you," replied Jesus, "if you have faith, without ever a doubt, you will do what not only what has been done to the fig tree, but, even if you should say to this hill 'Be lifted up and hurled into the sea!' it would be done. 22 And whatever you ask for in your prayers will, if you have faith, be granted you."

23 After Jesus had come into the Temple Courts, the Chief Priests and the Councillors of the Nation came up to him as he was teaching, and said: "What authority have you to do these things? Who gave you this authority?" 24 "I, too," said Jesus in reply, "will ask you one question; if you will give me an answer to it, then I, also, will tell you what authority I have to act as I do. 25 It is about John's baptism. What was its origin? divine or human?" But they began arguing among themselves: "If we say 'divine,' he will say to us 'Why then did not you believe him?' 26 But if we say 'human,' we are afraid of the people, for every one regards John as a Prophet." 27 So the answer they gave Jesus was—"We do not know." "Then I," he said, "refuse to tell you what authority I have to do these things.

28 What do you think of this? There was a man who had two sons. He went to the elder and said 'Go and work in the vineyard to-day my son.' 29 'Yes, sir,' he answered; but he did not go. 30 Then the father went to the second son, and said the same. 'I will not,' he answered; but afterwards he was sorry and went. 31 Which of the two sons did as his father wished?" "The second," they said. "I tell you," added Jesus, "that tax-gatherers and prostitutes are going into the Kingdom of God before you. 32 For when John came to you, walking in the path of righteousness, you did not believe him, but tax-gatherers and prostitutes did; and yet you, though you saw this, even then were not sorry, nor did you believe him.

33 Listen to another parable. A man, who was an employer,

once planted a vineyard, put a fence round it, dug a winepress in it, built a tower, and then let it out to tenants and went abroad. 34 When the time for the vintage drew near, he sent his servants to the tenants, to receive his share of the produce. 35 But the tenants seized his servants, beat one, killed another, and stoned a third. 36 A second time the owner sent some servants, a larger number than before, and the tenants treated them in the same way. 37 As a last resource he sent his son to them. 'They will respect my son,' he said. 38 But the tenants, on seeing his son, said to each other 'Here is the heir! Come, let us kill him, and get his inheritance.' 39 So they seized him, and threw him outside the vineyard, and killed him. 40 Now, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those tenants?" 41 "Miserable wretches!" they exclaimed, "he will put them to a miserable death, and he will let out the vineyard to other tenants, who will pay him his share of the produce at the proper times." 42 Then Jesus added: "Have you never read in the Scriptures?—'The very stone which the builders despised—Has now itself become the corner-stone; This corner-stone has come from the Lord, And is marvellous in our eyes.' 43 And that, I tell you, is why the Kingdom of God will be taken from you, and given to a nation that does produce the fruit of the Kingdom. 44 Yes, and he who falls on this stone will be dashed to pieces, while any one on whom it falls—it will scatter him as dust." 45 After listening to these parables, the Chief Priests and the Pharisees saw that it was about them that he was speaking; 46 Yet, although eager to arrest him, they were afraid of the crowds, who regarded him as a Prophet.

Chapter 22

1 Once more Jesus spoke to them in parables. 2 "The Kingdom of Heaven," he said, "may be compared to a king who gave a banquet in honour of his son's wedding. 3 He sent his servants to call those who had been invited to the banquet, but they were unwilling to come. 4 A second time he sent some servants, with orders to say to those who had been invited 'I have prepared my breakfast, my cattle and fat beasts are killed and everything is ready; come to the banquet.' 5 They, however, took no notice, but went off, one to his farm, another to his business; 6 While the rest, seizing his servants, ill-treated them and killed them. 7 The king, in anger, sent his troops, put those murderers to death, and set their

city on fire. 8 Then he said to his servants 'The banquet is prepared,
but those who were invited were not worthy. 9 So go to the cross-
roads, and invite everyone you find to the banquet.' 10 The servants
went out into the roads and collected all the people whom they
found, whether bad or good; and the bridal-hall was filled with
guests. 11 But, when the king went in to see his guests, he noticed
there a man who had not put on a wedding-robe. 12 So he said to him
'My friend, how is it that you came in here without a wedding-robe?'
The man was speechless. 13 Then the king said to the attendants
'Tie him hand and foot, and 'put him out into the darkness' outside,
where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.' 14 For many are
called, but few chosen."

15 Then the Pharisees went away and conferred together as to
how they might lay a snare for Jesus in the course of conversation.
16 They sent their disciples, with the Herodians, to say to him:
"Teacher, we know that you are an honest man, and that you teach
the way of God honestly, and are not afraid of any one; for you pay
no regard to a man's position. 17 Tell us, then, what you think. Are
we right in paying taxes to the Emperor, or not?" 18 Perceiving their
malice, Jesus answered: "Why are you testing me, you hypocrites?
19 Show me the coin with which the tax is paid." And, when they had
brought him a florin, 20 He asked: "Whose head and title are these?"
21 "The Emperor's," they answered: on which he said to them: "Then
pay to the Emperor what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what
belongs to God." 22 They wondered at his answer, and left him alone
and went away.

23 That same day some Sadducees came up to Jesus,
maintaining that there is no resurrection. Their question was this:
— 24 "Teacher, Moses said—'Should a man die without children,
the man's brother shall become the husband of the widow, and
raise a family for his brother.' 25 Now we had living among us seven
brothers; of whom the eldest married and died, and, as he had no
family, left his wife for his brother. 26 The same thing happened
to the second and the third brothers, and indeed to all the seven.
27 The woman herself died last of all. 28 At the resurrection, then,
whose wife will she be out of the seven, all of them having had
her?" 29 "Your mistake," replied Jesus, "is due to your ignorance of
the Scriptures, and of the power of God. 30 For at the resurrection
there is no marrying or being married, but all who rise are as angels

in Heaven. 31 As to the resurrection of the dead, have you not read
these words of God— 32 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of
Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of dead men, but of
living." 33 The crowds, who had been listening to him, were greatly
struck with his teaching.

34 When the Pharisees heard that Jesus had silenced the
Sadducees, they collected together. 35 Then one of them, a Student
of the Law, to test him, asked this question— 36 "Teacher, what is the
great commandment in the Law?" 37 His answer was: "'Thou shalt
love the Lord thy God with all thy Heart, and with all thy soul, and
with all thy mind.' 38 This is the great first commandment. 39 The
second, which is like it, is this—'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as
thou dost thyself.' 40 On these two commandments hang all the Law
and the Prophets."

41 Before the Pharisees separated, Jesus put this question to
them— 42 "What do you think about the Christ? Whose son is he?"
"David's," they said. 43 "How is it, then," Jesus replied, "that David,
speaking under inspiration, calls him 'lord,' in the passage- 44 'The
Lord said to my Lord: "Sit at my right hand, Until I put thy enemies
beneath thy feet"'? 45 Since, then, David calls him 'lord,' how is he
David's son?" 46 No one could say a word in answer; nor did any one
after that day venture to question him further.

Chapter 23

1 Then Jesus speaking to the crowds and to his disciples, said:
2 "The teachers of the Law and the Pharisees now occupy the chair
of Moses. 3 Therefore practice and lay to heart everything that they
tell preach but do not practice. 4 While they make up heavy loads
and pile them on other men's shoulder's they decline, themselves,
to lift a finger to move them. 5 All their actions are done to attract
attention. They widen their phylacteries, and increase the size of
their tassels, 6 and like to have the place of honour at dinner, and
the best seats in the Synagogues, 7 and to be greeted in the markets
with respect, and to be called 'Rabbi' for everybody. 8 But do not
allow yourselves to be called 'Rabbi,' for you have only one Father,
the heavenly Father. 9 And do not call any one Father, the heavenly
Father. 10 Nor must you allow yourselves to be called 'Leaders,' for
you have only one Leader, the Christ. 11 The man who would be the
greatest among you must be your servant. 12 Whoever shall exalt

himself will be humbled, and whoever shall humble himself will be exalted.

13 But alas for you, Teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You turn the key of the Kingdom of Heaven in men's faces. For you do not go in yourselves, nor yet allow those who try to go in to do so. 14 Alas for you, Teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You destroy widow's houses, even while pretending to make long prayers; therefore you shall receive greater condemnation. 15 Alas for you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You scour land and sea to make a single convert, and, when he is gained, you make him twice as deserving of the Pit as you are yourselves. 16 Alas for you, you blind guides! You say 'if any answer by the Temple, his oath counts for nothing; but, if any one swears by the gold of the Temple, his oath is binding him'! 17 Fools that you are and blind! Which is the more important? The gold? Or the Temple which has given sacredness to the gold? 18 You say, too, 'If any one swears by the altar, his oath counts for nothing, but, if any one swears by the offering placed on it, his oath is binding on him'! 19 Blind indeed! Which is the more important? The offering? or the altar which gives sacredness to the offering? 20 Therefore a man, swearing by the altar, swears by it and by all that is on it, 21 and a man, swearing by the Temple, swears by it and by him who dwells in it, 22 while a man, swearing by Heaven, swears by the throne of God, and by him who sits upon it. 23 Alas for you, Teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You pay tithes on mint, fennel, and caraway seed, and have neglected the weightier matters of the Law—justice, mercy, and good faith. These last you ought to have put into practice, without neglecting the first. 24 You blind guides, to strain out a gnat and to swallow a camel! 25 Alas for you, Teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You clean the outside of the cup and the dish, but inside they are filled with the results of greed and self-indulgence. 26 You blind Pharisee! First clean the inside of the cup and the dish, so that the outside may become clean as well. 27 Alas for you, Teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You are like whitewashed tombs, which indeed look fair outside, while inside they are filled with dead men's bones and all kinds of filth. 28 It is the same with you. Outwardly, and to others, you have the look of religious men, but inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and

sin. 29 Alas for you, Teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You build the tombs of the Prophets, and decorate the monuments of religious men, 30 and say 'Had we been living in the days of our ancestors, we should have taken part in their murder of the Prophets! 31 By doing this you are furnishing evidence against yourselves that you are true children of the men who murdered the Prophets. 32 Fill up the measure of your ancestor's guilt. 33 You serpents and brood of vipers! How can you escape being sentenced to the Pit?

34 That is why I send you Prophets, wise men, and Teachers of the Law, some of whom you will crucify and kill, and some of whom you will scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute from town to town; 35 in order that upon your heads may fall every drop of innocent 'blood split on earth,' from the blood of innocent Abel down to that of Zechariah, Barachiah's son, whom you murdered between the Temple and the altar. 36 All this, I tell you, will come home to the present generation. 37 Jerusalem! Jerusalem! She who slays the Prophets and stones the messengers sent to her—Oh, how often have I wished to gather your children round me, as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you would not came! 38 Verily, your house is left to you desolate! 39 For nevermore, I tell you, shall you see me, until you say—'Blessed is He who comes in the Name of the Lord!'"

Chapter 24

1 Leaving the Temple Courts, Jesus was walking away, when his disciples came up to draw his attention to the Temple buildings. 2 "Do you see all these things?" was his answer. "I tell you, not a single stone will be left here upon another, which will not be throne down," 3 So, while Jesus was sitting on the Mount of Olives, his disciples came up to him privately and said: "Tell us when this will be, and what will be the sign of your Coming, and of the close of the age."

4 Jesus replied to them as follows: "See that no one leads you astray; 5 for, many will take my name, and come saying 'I am the Christ,' and will lead many astray. 6 And you will hear of wars and rumours of wars; take care not to be alarmed, for such things must occur; but the end is not yet here. 7 For 'nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom,' and there will be famines

and earthquakes in various places. [8] All this, however, will be but the beginning of the birth pangs! [9] When that time comes, they will give you up to persecution, and will put you to death, and you will be hated by all nations on account of my Name. [10] And then many will fall away, and will betray one another, and hate one another. [11] Many false Prophets, also, will appear and lead many astray; [12] and, owing to the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold. [13] Yet the man that endures to the end shall be saved. [14] And this Good News of the Kingdom shall be proclaimed throughout the world as a witness to all nations; and then will come the end. [15] As soon, then, as you see 'the Foul Desecration,' mentioned by the Prophet Daniel, standing in the Holy Place," (the reader must consider what this means) [16] "then those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the mountains; [17] and a man on the housetop must not go down to get the things that are in his house; [18] nor must one who is on his farm turn back to get his cloak. [19] And alas for the women that are with child, and for those that are nursing infants in those days! [20] Pray, too, that your flight may not take place in winter, nor on a Sabbath; [21] for that will be 'a time of great distress, the like of which has not occurred from the beginning of the world down to the present time'—no, nor ever will again. [22] And had not those days been limited, not a single soul would escape; but for the sake of 'God's People' a limit will be put to them. [23] And, at that time, if any one should say to you 'Look! here is the Christ!' or 'Here he is!', do not believe it; [24] For false Christs and false Prophets will arise, and will display great signs and marvels, so that, were it possible, even God's People would be led astray. [25] Remember, I have told you beforehand. [26] Therefore, if people say to you 'He is in the Wilderness!', do not go out there; or 'He is in an inner room!', do not believe it; [27] For, just as lightning will start from the east and flash across to the west, so will it be with the Coming of the Son of Man. [28] Wherever a dead body lies, there will the vultures flock.' [29] Immediately after the distress of those days, 'the sun will be darkened, the moon will not give her light, the stars will fall from the heavens,' and 'the forces of the heavens will be convulsed.' [30] Then will appear the sign of the Son of Man in the heavens; and all the peoples of the earth will mourn, when they see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the heavens,' with power and great glory; [31] And he will send his angels, with a great trumpet, and they will

gather his People round him from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

[32] Learn the lesson taught by the fig tree. As soon as its branches are full of sap, and it is bursting into leaf, you know that summer is near. [33] And so may you, as soon as you see all these things, know that he is at your doors. [34] I tell you, even the present generation will not pass away, till all these things have taken place. [35] The heavens and the earth will pass away, but my words shall never pass away. [36] But about that Day and Hour, no one knows—not even the angels of Heaven, nor yet the Son—but only the Father himself. [37] For, just as in the days of Noah, so will it be at the Coming of the Son of Man. [38] In those days before the flood they went on eating and drinking, marrying and being married, up to the very day on which Noah entered the ark, [39] Taking not notice till the flood came and swept them one and all away; and so will it be at the Coming of the Son of Man. [40] At that time, of two men on a farm one will be taken and one left; [41] Of two women grinding with the hand-mill one will be taken and one left. [42] Therefore watch; for you cannot be sure on what day your Master is coming. [43] But this you do know, that, had the owner of the house known at what time of night the thief was coming, he would have been on the watch, and would not have allowed his house to be broken into. [44] Therefore, do you also prepare, since it is just when you are least expecting him that the Son of Man will come. [45] Who, then is that trustworthy, careful servant, who has been placed by his master over his household, to give them their food at the proper time? [46] Happy will that servant be whom his master, when he comes home, shall find doing this. [47] I tell you that his master will put him in charge of the whole of his property. [48] But, should he be a bad servant, and say to himself 'My master is a long time in coming,' [49] And begin to beat his fellow-servants, and eat and drink with drunkards, [50] That servant's master will come on a day when he does not expect him, and at an hour of which he is unaware, [51] And will flog him severely, and assign him his place among the hypocrites, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.

Chapter 25

[1] Then the Kingdom of Heaven will be like ten bridesmaids who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. [2] Five

of them were foolish, and five were prudent. [3] The foolish ones took
their lamps, but took no oil with them; [4] While the prudent ones,
besides taking their lamps, took oil in their jars. [5] As the bridegroom
was late in coming, they all became drowsy, and slept. [6] But at
midnight a shout was raised—'The Bridegroom is coming! Come out
to meet him!' [7] Then all the bridesmaids awoke and trimmed their
lamps. [8] And the foolish said to the prudent 'Give us some of your
oil; our lamps are going out.' [9] But the prudent ones answered 'No,
for fear that there will not be enough for you and for us. Go instead
to those who sell it, and buy for yourselves.' [10] But while they were
on their way to buy it, the bridegroom came; and the bridesmaids
who were ready went in with him to the banquet, and the door was
shut. [11] Afterwards the other bridesmaids came. 'Sir, Sir,' they said,
'open the door to us!' [12] But the bridegroom answered 'I tell you, I do
not know you.' [13] Therefore watch, since you know neither the Day
nor the Hour.

[14] For it is as though a man, going on his travels, called
his servants, and gave his property into their charge. [15] He gave
three thousand pounds to one, twelve hundred to another, and six
hundred to a third, in proportion to the ability of each. Then he set
out on his travels. [16] The man who had received the three thousand
pounds went at once and traded with it, and made another three
thousand. [17] So, too, the man who had received the twelve hundred
pounds made another twelve hundred. [18] But the man who had
received the six hundred went and dug a hole in the ground, and
hid his master's money. [19] After a long time the master of those
servants returned, and settled accounts with them. [20] The man
who had received the three thousand pounds came up and brought
three thousand more. 'Sir,' he said, 'you entrusted me with three
thousand pounds; look, I have made another three thousand!' [21]
'Well done, good, trustworthy servant!' said his master. 'You have
been trustworthy with a small sum; now I will place a large one in
your hands; come and share your master's joy!' [22] Then the one who
had received the twelve hundred pounds came up and said 'Sir,
you entrusted me with twelve hundred pounds; look, I have made
another twelve hundred!' [23] 'Well done, good, trustworthy servant!'
said his master. 'You have been trustworthy with a small sum; now
I will place a large one in your hands; come and share your master's
joy!' [24] The man who had received the six hundred pounds came up,

too, and said 'Sir, I knew that you were a hard man; you reap where
you have not sown, and gather up where you have not winnowed;
[25] And, in my fear, I went and hid your money in the ground; look,
here is what belongs to you!' [26] 'You lazy, worthless servant!' was
his master's reply. 'You knew that I reap where I have not sown,
and gather up where I have not winnowed? [27] Then you ought to
have placed my money in the hands of bankers, and I, on my return,
should have received my money, with interest. [28] 'Therefore,' he
continued, 'take away from him the six hundred pounds, and give
it to the one who has the six thousand. [29] For, to him who has, more
will be given, and he shall have abundance; but, as for him who has
nothing, even what he has will be taken away from him. [30] As for the
useless servant, 'put him out into the darkness' outside, where there
will be weeping and grinding of teeth.'

[31] When the Son of Man has come in his glory and all the
angels with him, then he 'will take his seat on his throne of glory';
[32] And all the nations will be gathered before him, and he will
separate the people—just as a shepherd separates sheep from
goats— [33] Placing the sheep on his right hand, and the goats on his
left. [34] Then the King will say to those on his right 'Come, you who
are blessed by my Father, enter upon possession of the Kingdom
prepared for you ever since the beginning of the world. [35] For, when
I was hungry, you gave me food; when I was thirsty, you gave me
drink; when I was a stranger, you took me to your homes; [36] When I
was naked, you clothed me; when I fell ill, you visited me; and when
I was in prison, you came to me.' [37] Then the Righteous will answer
'Lord, when did we see you hungry, and feed you? Or thirsty, and
give you a drink? [38] When did we see you a stranger, and take you
to our homes? Or naked, and clothe you? [39] When did we see you ill,
or in prison, and come to you?' [40] And the King will reply 'I tell you,
as often as you did it to one of these my Brothers, however lowly,
you did it to me.' [41] Then he will say to those on his left 'Go from my
presence, accursed, into the 'aeonian fire which has been prepared
for the Devil and his angels.' [42] For, when I was hungry, you gave me
no food; when I was thirsty, you gave me no drink; [43] When I was
a stranger, you did not take me to your homes; when I was naked,
you did not clothe me; and, when I was ill and in prison, you did
not visit me.' [44] Then they, in their turn, will answer 'Lord, when did
we see you hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or ill, or in

prison, and did not supply your wants?' 45 And then he will reply 'I tell you, as often as you failed to do it to one of these, however lowly, you failed to do it to me.' 46 And these last will go away 'into aeonian punishment,' but the righteous 'into aeonian life.'"

Chapter 26

1 When Jesus had finished all this teaching, he said to his disciples: 2 "You know that in two days time the Festival of the Passover will be here; and that the Son of Man is to be given up to be crucified." 3 Then the Chief Priests and the Councillors of the Nation met in the house of the High Priest, who was called Caiaphas, 4 And plotted together to arrest Jesus by stealth and put him to death; 5 But they said: "Not during the Festival, for fear of causing a riot."

6 After Jesus had reached Bethany, and while he was in the house of Simon the leper, 7 a woman came up to him with an alabaster jar of very costly perfume, and poured the perfume upon his head as he was at table. 8 The disciples were indignant at seeing this. "What is this waste for?" they exclaimed. 9 "It could have been sold for a large sum, and the money given to poor people." 10 "Why are you troubling the woman?" Jesus said, when he noticed it. "For this is a beautiful deed that she has done to me. 11 You always have the poor with you, but you will not always have me. 12 In pouring this perfume on my body, she has done it for my burying. 13 I tell you, wherever, in the whole world, this Good News is proclaimed, what this woman has done will be told in memory of her."

14 It was then that one of the Twelve, named Judas Iscariot, made his way to the Chief Priests, 15 And said "What are you willing to give me, if I betray Jesus to you?" The Priests 'weighed him out thirty pieces of silver' as payment. 16 So from that time Judas looked for an opportunity to betray Jesus.

17 On the first day of the Festival of the Unleavened Bread, the disciples came up to Jesus, and said: "Where do you wish us to make preparations for you to eat the Passover?" 18 "Go into the city to a certain man," he answered, "and say to him 'The Teacher says—My time is near. I will keep the Passover with my disciples at your house.'" 19 The disciples did as Jesus directed them, and prepared the Passover. 20 In the evening Jesus took his place with the twelve disciples, 21 And, while they were eating, he said: "I tell you that one of you will betray me." 22 In great grief they began to say to him,

one by one: "Can it be I, Master?" 23 "The one who dipped his bread beside me in the dish," replied Jesus, "is the one who will betray me. 24 True, the Son of Man must go, as Scripture says of him, yet alas for that man by whom the Son of Man is being betrayed! For that man 'it would be better never to have been born!'" 25 And Judas, who was betraying him, turned to him and said: "Can it be I, Rabbi?" "It is," answered Jesus.

26 While they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the blessing, broke it and, as he gave it to his disciples, said: "Take it and eat it; this is my body." 27 Then he took a cup, and, after saying the thanksgiving, gave it to them, with the words: "Drink from it, all of you; 28 For this is my Covenant blood, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins. 29 And I tell you that I shall never, after this, drink of this juice of the grape, until that day when I shall drink it new with you in the Kingdom of my Father." 30 They then sang a hymn, and went out to the Mount of Olives.

31 Then Jesus said to them: "Even you will all fall away from me to-night. Scripture says—'I will strike down the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock will be scattered.' 32 But, after I have risen, I shall go before you into Galilee." 33 "If every one else falls away from you," Peter answered, "I shall never fall away!" 34 "I tell you," replied Jesus, "that this very night, before the cock crows, you will disown me three times!" 35 "Even if I must die with you," Peter exclaimed, "I shall never disown you!" All the disciples spoke in the same way.

36 Then Jesus came with them to a garden called Gethsemane, and he said to his disciples: "Sit down here while I go and pray yonder." 37 Taking with him Peter and the two sons of Zebediah, he began to show signs of sadness and deep distress of mind. 38 "I am sad at heart," he said, "sad even to death; wait here and watch with me." 39 Going on a little further, he threw himself on his face in prayer. "My Father," he said, "if it is possible, let me be spared this cup; only, not as I will, but as thou willest." 40 Then he came to his disciples, and found them asleep. "What!" he said to Peter, "could none of you watch with me for one hour? 41 Watch and pray, that you may not fall into temptation. True, the spirit is eager, but human nature is weak." 42 Again, a second time, he went away, and prayed. "My Father," he said, "if I cannot be spared this cup, but must drink it, thy will be done!" 43 And coming back again he found them asleep, for their eyes were heavy. 44 So he left them, and went

away again, and prayed a third time, again saying the same words.
45 Then he came to the disciples, and said: "Sleep on now, and rest
yourselves. Hark! my time is close at hand, and the Son of Man is
being betrayed into the hands of wicked men. 46 Up, and let us be
going. Look! my betrayer is close at hand."

47 And, while he was still speaking, Judas, who was one
of the Twelve, came in sight; and with him was a great crowd of
people, with swords and clubs, sent from the Chief Priests and
Councillors of the Nation. 48 Now the betrayer had arranged a
signal with them. "The man whom I kiss," he had said, "will be the
one; arrest him." 49 So he went up to Jesus at once, and exclaimed:
"Welcome, Rabbi!" and kissed him; 50 On which Jesus said to him:
"Friend, do what you have come for." Thereupon the men went up,
seized Jesus, and arrested him. 51 Suddenly one of those who were
with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and striking
the High Priest's servant, cut off his ear. 52 "Sheathe your sword,"
Jesus said, "for all who draw the sword will be put to the sword. 53
Do you think that I cannot ask my Father for help, when he would
at once send to my aid more than twelve legions of angels? 54 But in
that case how would the Scriptures be fulfilled, which say that this
must be?" 55 Jesus at the same time said to the crowds: "Have you
come out, as if after a robber, with swords and clubs, to take me? I
have sat teaching day after day in the Temple Courts, and yet you
did not arrest me." 56 The whole of this occurred in fulfilment of the
Prophetic Scriptures. Then the disciples all forsook him and fled.

57 Those who had arrested Jesus took him to Caiaphas, the
High Priest, where the Teachers of the Law and the Councillors had
assembled. 58 Peter followed him at a distance as far as the courtyard
of the offices, to see the end. 59 Meanwhile the Chief Priests and the
whole of the High Council were trying to get such false evidence
against Jesus, as would warrant putting him to death, 60 But they
did not find any, although many came forward with false evidence.
Later on, however, two men came forward and said: 61 "This man
said 'I am able to destroy the Temple of God, and to build it in three
days.'" 62 Then the High Priest stood up, and said to Jesus: "Have
you no answer? What is this evidence which these men are giving
against you?" 63 But Jesus remained silent. On this the High Priest
said to him: "I adjure you, by the Living God, to tell us whether
you are the Christ, the Son of God." 64 "It is true," Jesus answered;

"Moreover I tell you all that hereafter you shall 'see the Son of Man
sitting on the right hand of the Almighty, and coming on the clouds
of the heavens.'" 65 Then the High Priest tore his robes. "This is
blasphemy!" he exclaimed. "Why do we want any more witnesses?
You have just heard his blasphemy! 66 What is your decision?" They
answered: "He deserves death." 67 Then they spat in his face, and
struck him, while others dealt blows at him, saying as they did so:
68 "Now play the Prophet for us, you Christ! Who was it that struck
you?"

69 Peter, meanwhile, was sitting outside in the courtyard;
and a maidservant came up to him, and exclaimed: "Why, you were
with Jesus the Galilean!" 70 But Peter denied it before them all. "I
do not know what you mean," he replied. 71 When he had gone out
into the gateway, another maid saw him, and said to those who were
there: "This man was with Jesus of Nazareth!" 72 Again he denied
it with an oath: "I do not know the man!" 73 But soon afterwards
those who were standing by came up and said to Peter: "You also
are certainly one of them; why, your very way of speaking proves
it!" 74 Then Peter began to swear, with most solemn imprecations: "I
do not know the man." At that moment a cock crowed; 75 and Peter
remembered the words which Jesus had said—'Before a cock has
crowed, you will disown me three times'; and he went outside, and
wept bitterly.

Chapter 27

1 At daybreak all the Chief Priests and the Councillors of
the Nation consulted together against Jesus, to bring about his
death. 2 They put him in chains and led him away, and gave him up
to the Roman Governor, Pilate. 3 Then Judas, who betrayed him,
seeing that Jesus was condemned, repented of what he had done,
and returned the thirty pieces of silver to the Chief Priests and
Councillors. 4 "I did wrong in betraying a good man to his death," he
said. "What has that to do with us?" they replied. "You must see to
that yourself." 5 Judas flung down the pieces of silver in the Temple,
and left; and went away and hanged himself. 6 The Chief Priests
took the pieces of silver, but they said: "We must not put them into
the Temple treasury, because they are blood-money." 7 So, after
consultation, they bought with them the 'Potter's Field' for a burial-
ground for foreigners; 8 And that is why that field is called the 'Field

of Blood' to this very day. 9 Then it was that these words spoken by the Prophet Jeremiah were fulfilled—'They took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him who was valued, whom some of the people of Israel valued, 10 And gave them for the Potter's field, as the Lord commanded me.'

11 Meanwhile Jesus was brought before the Roman Governor. "Are you the King of the Jews?" asked the Governor. "It is true," answered Jesus. 12 While charges were being brought against him by the Chief Priests and Councillors, Jesus made no reply. 13 Then Pilate said to him: "Do not you hear how many accusations they are making against you?" 14 Yet Jesus made no reply—not even a single word; at which the Governor was greatly astonished. 15 Now, at the Feast, the Governor was accustomed to grant the people the release of any one prisoner whom they might choose. 16 At that time they had a notorious prisoner called Barabbas. 17 So, when the people had collected, Pilate said to them: "Which do you wish me to release for you? Barabbas? Or Jesus who is called 'Christ'?" 18 For he knew that it was out of jealousy that they had given Jesus up to him. 19 While he was still on the Bench, his wife sent this message to him—"Do not have anything to do with that good man, for I have been very unhappy to-day in a dream on account of him." 20 But the Chief Priests and the Councillors persuaded the crowds to ask for Barabbas, and to kill Jesus. 21 The Governor, however, said to them: "Which of these two do you wish me to release for you?" "Barabbas," they answered. 22 "What then," Pilate asked, "shall I do with Jesus who is called 'Christ'?" "Let him be crucified," they all replied. 23 "Why, what harm has he done?" he asked. But they kept shouting furiously: "Let him be crucified!" 24 When Pilate saw that his efforts were unavailing, but that, on the contrary, a riot was beginning, he took some water, and washed his hands in the sight of the crowd, saying as he did so: "I am not answerable for this bloodshed; you must see to it yourselves." 25 And all the people answered: "His blood be on our heads and on our children's!"

26 The Pilate released Barabbas to them; but Jesus he scourged, and gave him up to be crucified. 27 After that, the Governor's soldiers took Jesus with them into the Government House, and gathered the whole garrison round him. 28 They stripped him, and put on him a red military cloak, 29 And having twisted some thorns into a crown, put it on his head, and a rod in

his right hand, and then, going down on their knees before him, they mocked him. "Long life to you, King of the Jews!" they said. 30 They spat at him and, taking the rod, kept striking him on the head; 31 And, when they had left off mocking him, they took off the military cloak, and put his own clothes on him, and led him away to be crucified. 32 As they were on their way out, they came upon a man from Cyrene of the name of Simon; and they compelled him to go with them to carry the cross.

33 On reaching a place named Golgotha (a place named from its likeness to a skull), 34 they gave him some wine to drink which had been mixed with gall; but after tasting it, Jesus refused to drink it. 35 When they had crucified him, they divided his clothes among them by casting lots. 36 Then they sat down, and kept watch over him there. 37 Above his head they fixed the accusation against him written out—'THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.' 38 At the same time two robbers were crucified with him, one on the right, the other on the left. 39 The passers-by railed at him, shaking their heads as they said: 40 "You who 'destroy the Temple and build one in three days,' save yourself! If you are God's Son, come down from the cross!" 41 In the same way the Chief Priests, with the Teaches of the Law and Councillors, said in mockery: 42 "He saved others, but he cannot save himself! He is the 'King of Israel'! Let him come down from the cross now, and we will believe in him. 43 He has trusted in God; if God wants him, let him deliver him now; for he said 'I am God's Son.'" 44 Even the robbers, who were crucified with him, reviled him in the same way. 45 After mid-day a darkness came over all the country, lasting till three in the afternoon. 46 And about three Jesus called out loudly: "Eloi, Eloi, lema sabacthani"—that is to say, 'O my God, my God, why has thou forsaken me?' 47 Some of those standing by heard this, and said: "The man is calling for Elijah!" 48 One of them immediately ran and took a sponge, and, filling it with common wine, put it on the end of a rod, and offered it to him to drink. 49 But the rest said: "Wait and let us see if Elijah is coming to save him." However another man took a spear, and pierced his side; and water and blood flowed from it.

50 But Jesus, uttering another loud cry, gave up his spirit. 51 Suddenly the Temple curtain was torn in two from top to bottom, the earth shook, the rocks were torn asunder, 52 the tombs opened, and the bodies of many of God's People who had fallen asleep

rose, 53 And they, leaving their tombs, went, after the resurrection of Jesus, into the Holy City, and appeared to many people. 54 The Roman Captain, and the men with him who were watching Jesus, on seeing the earthquake and all that was happening, became greatly frightened and exclaimed: "This must indeed have been God's Son!" 55 There were many women there, watching from a distance, who had accompanied Jesus from Galilee and had been attending on him. 56 Among them were Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of Zebediah's sons.

57 When evening had fallen, there came a rich man belonging to Ramah, named Joseph, who had himself become a disciple of Jesus. 58 He went to see Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus; upon which Pilate ordered it to be given him. 59 So Joseph took the body, and wrapped it in a clean linen sheet, 60 And laid it in his newly-made tomb which he had cut in the rock; and, before he left, he rolled a great stone against the entrance of the tomb. 61 Mary of Magdala and the other Mary remained behind, sitting in front of the grave. 62 The next day—that is, the day following the Preparation-Day—the Chief Priests and Pharisees came in a body to Pilate, and said: 63 "Sir, we remember that, during his lifetime, that impostor said 'I shall rise after three days.' 64 So order the tomb to be made secure till the third day. Otherwise his disciples may come and steal him, and then say to the people 'He has risen from the dead,' when the latest imposture will be worse than the first." 65 "You may have a guard," was Pilate's reply; "go and make the tomb as secure as you can." 66 So they went made the tomb secure, by sealing the stone, in presence of the guard.

Chapter 28

1 After the Sabbath, as the first day of the week began to dawn, Mary of Magdala and the other Mary had gone to look at the grave, 2 When suddenly a great earthquake occurred. For an angel of the Lord descended from Heaven, and came and rolled away the stone, and seated himself upon it. 3 His appearance was as dazzling as lightning, and his clothing was as white as snow; 4 And, in their terror of him, the men on guard trembled violently and became like dead men. 5 But the angel, addressing the women, said; "You need not be afraid. I now that it is Jesus, who was crucified, for whom you are looking. 6 He is not here; for he has risen, as he said he would.

Come, and see the place where he was lying; 7 And then go quickly and say to him disciples 'He has risen from the dead, and is going before you into Galilee; there you will see him.' Remember, I have told you." 8 On this they left the tomb quickly, in awe and great joy, and ran to tell the news to the disciples. 9 Suddenly Jesus me them. "Welcome!" he said. The women went up to him, and clasped his feet, bowing to the ground before him. Then Jesus said to them: 10 "Do not be afraid; go and tell my brothers to set out for Galilee, and they shall see me there."

11 While they were still on their way, some of the guard came into the city, and reported to the Chief Priests everything that had happened. 12 So they and the Councillors met and, after holding a consultation, gave a large sum of money to the soldiers, 13 And told them to say that his disciples came in the night, and stole him while they were asleep; 14 "And should this matter come before the Governor," they added, "we will satisfy him, and see that you have nothing to fear." 15 So the soldiers took the money, and did as they were instructed. And this story has been current among the Jews from that day to this.

16 The eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain where Jesus told them to meet him; 17 And, when they saw him, they bowed to the ground before him; although some felt doubtful. 18 Then Jesus came up, and spoke to them thus: "All authority in heaven and on the earth has been given to me. 19 Therefore go and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them into the Faith of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, 20 And teaching them to lay to heart all the commands that I have given you; and, remember, I myself am with you every day until the close of the age."

The Gospel According to Mark

Chapter 1

1 The beginning of the Good News about Jesus Christ. 2 It is
said in the Prophet Isaiah—'Behold! I send my Messenger before
thy face; He shall prepare thy way.' 3 'The voice of one crying aloud
in the Wilderness: "Make ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths
straight."' 4 And in fulfilment of this, John the Baptizer appeared
in the Wilderness, proclaiming a baptism upon repentance, for
the forgiveness of sins. 5 The whole of Judea, as well as all the
inhabitants of Jerusalem, went out to him; and they were baptized
by him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins. 6 John was clad
in clothing of camels' hair, with a belt of leather round his waist,
and lived on locusts and wild honey; 7 And he proclaimed—"There
is coming after me one more powerful than I, and I am not fit even
to stoop down and unfasten his sandals. 8 I have baptized you with
water, but he will baptize you with the Holy Spirit."

9 Now about that time Jesus came from Nazareth in
Galilee, and was baptized by John in the Jordan. 10 And just as he
was coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens rent apart,
and the Spirit, like a dove, descending upon him, 11 And from the
heavens came a voice—"Thou art my Son, the Beloved; in thee I
delight." 12 Immediately afterwards the Spirit drove Jesus out into
the Wilderness; 13 And he was there in the Wilderness forty days,
tempted by Satan, and among the wild beasts, while the angels
ministered to him.

14 After John had been committed to prison, Jesus went to
Galilee, proclaiming the Good News of God— 15 "The time has come,
and the Kingdom of God is at hand; repent, and believe the Good
News." 16 As Jesus was going along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, he
saw Simon and his brother Andrew casting a net in the Sea, for they
were fishermen. 17 "Come and follow me," Jesus said, "and I will
set you to fish for men." 18 They left their nets at once, and followed
him. 19 Going on a little further, he saw James, Zebediah's son, and
his brother John, who also were in their boat mending the nets. 20
Jesus at once called them, and they left their father Zebediah in
the boat with the crew, and went after him. 21 And they walked into

Capernaum. On the next Sabbath Jesus went into the Synagogue and began to teach. 22 The people were amazed at his teaching, for he taught them like one who had authority, and not like the Teachers of the Law.

23 Now there was in their Synagogue at the time a man under the power of a foul spirit, who called out: 24 "What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are—the Holy One of God!" 25 But Jesus rebuked the spirit: "Be silent! Come out from him." 26 The foul spirit threw the man into a fit, and with a loud cry came out from him. 27 And they were all so amazed that they kept asking: "What is this? Strange teaching indeed! He gives his commands with authority even to the foul spirits, and they obey him!" 28 And the fame of Jesus spread at once in all directions, through the whole neighbourhood of Galilee.

29 As soon as they had come out from the Synagogue, they went, with James and John, into the house of Simon and Andrew. 30 Now Simon's mother-in-law was lying ill with fever, and they at once told Jesus about her. 31 Jesus went up to her and, grasping her hand, raised her up; the fever left her, and she began to wait upon them. 32 In the evening, after sunset, the people brought to Jesus all who were ill or possessed by demons; 33 And the whole city was gathered round the door. 34 Jesus cured many who were ill with various diseases, and drove out many demons, and would not permit them to speak, because they knew him to be the Christ. 35 In the morning, long before daylight, Jesus rose and went out, and, going to a lonely spot, there began to pray. 36 But Simon and his companions hastened after him; 37 and, when they found him, they exclaimed: "Every one is looking for you!" 38 But Jesus said to them: "Let us go somewhere else, into the country towns near, that I may make my proclamation in them also; for that was why I came." 39 And he went about making his proclamation in their Synagogues all through Galilee, and driving out the demons.

40 One day a leper came to Jesus and, falling on his knees, begged him for help. "If only you are willing," he said, "you are able to make me clean." 41 Moved with compassion, Jesus stretched out his hand and touched him, saying as he did so: "I am willing; become clean." 42 Instantly the leprosy left the man, and he became clean; 43 And then Jesus, after sternly warning him, immediately sent him away, and said to him: 44 "Be careful not to say anything to any one;

but go and show yourself to the Priest, and make the offerings for your cleansing directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure." 45 The man, however, went away, and began to speak about it publicly, and to spread the story so widely, that Jesus could no longer go openly into a town, but stayed outside in lonely places; and people came to him from every direction.

Chapter 2

1 Some days later, when Jesus came back to Capernaum, the news spread that he was in a house there; 2 And so many people collected together, that after a while there was no room for them even round the door; and he began to tell them his Message. 3 And some people came bringing to him a paralyzed man, who was being carried by four bearers. 4 Being, however, unable to get him near to Jesus, owing to the crowd, they removed the roofing below which Jesus was; and, when they had made an opening, they let down the mat on which the paralyzed man was lying. 5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the man: "Child, your sins are forgiven." 6 But some of the Teachers of the Law who were sitting there were debating in their minds: 7 "Why does this man speak like this? He is blaspheming! Who can forgive sins except God?" 8 Jesus, at once intuitively aware that they wee debating with themselves in this way, said to them: "Why are you debating in your minds about this? 9 Which is easier?—to say to the paralyzed man, 'Your sins are forgiven'? or to say 'Get up, and take up your mat, and walk about'? 10 But that you may know that the Son of Man has power to forgive sins on earth"—here he said to the paralyzed man— 11 "To you I say, Get up, take up your mat, and return to your home." 12 The man got up, and immediately took up his mat, and went out before them all; at which they were amazed, and, as they praised God, they said: "We have never seen anything like this!"

13 Jesus went out again to the Sea; and all the people came to him, and he taught them. 14 As he went along, he saw Levi, the son of Alphaeus, sitting in the tax-office, and said to him: "Follow me." Levi got up and followed him. 15 And later on he was in his house at table, and a number of tax-gatherers and outcasts took their places at table with Jesus and his disciples; for many of them were following him. 16 When the Teachers of the Law belonging to the party of the Pharisees saw that he was eating in the company of

such people, they said to his disciples: “He is eating in the company of tax-gatherers and outcasts!” 17 Hearing this, Jesus said: “It is not those who are in health that need a doctor, but those who are ill. I did not come to call the religious, but the outcast.”

18 Now John’s disciples and the Pharisees were keeping a fast, and people came and asked Jesus: “Why is it that John’s disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees fast, while yours do not?” 19 Jesus answered: “Can the bridegroom’s friends fast, while the bridegroom is with them? As long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. 20 But the days will come, when the bridegroom will be parted from them, and they will fast then—when that day comes. 21 No man ever sews a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; if he does, the patch tears away from it—the new from the old—and a worse rent is made. 22 And no man ever puts new wine into old wine-skins; if he does, the wine will burst the skins, and both the wine and the skins are lost. But new wine is put into fresh skins.” 23 One Sabbath, as Jesus was walking through the cornfields, his disciples began to pick the ears of wheat as they went along. 24 “Look!” the Pharisees said to him, “why are they doing what is not allowed on the Sabbath?” 25 “Have you never read,” answered Jesus, “what David did when he was in want and hungry, he and his companions— 26 How he went into the House of God, in the time of Abiathar the High Priest, and ate ‘the consecrated bread,’ which only the priests are allowed to eat, and gave some to his comrades as well?” 27 Then Jesus added: “The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath; 28 So the Son of Man is lord even of the Sabbath.”

Chapter 3

1 On another occasion Jesus went in to a Synagogue, where they was a man whose hand was withered. 2 And they watched Jesus closely, to see if he would cure the man on the Sabbath, so that they might have a charge to bring against him. 3 “Stand out in the middle,” Jesus said to the man with the withered hand; 4 And to the people he said: “Is it allowable to do good on the Sabbath—or harm? to save a life, or destroy it?” 5 As they remained silent, Jesus looked round at them in anger, grieving at the hardness of their hearts, and said to the man: “Stretch out your hand.” The man stretched it out; and his hand had become sound. 6 Immediately on

leaving the Synagogue, the Pharisees and the Herodians united in laying a plot against Jesus, to put him to death. 7 Then Jesus went away with his disciples to the Sea, followed by a great number of people from Galilee. 8 And a great number, hearing of all that he was doing, came to him from Judea, from Jerusalem, from Edom, from beyond the Jordan, and from the country round Tyre and Sidon. 9 So Jesus told his disciples to keep a small boat close by, for fear the crowd should crush him. 10 For he had cured many of them, and so people kept crowding upon him, that all who were afflicted might touch him. 11 The foul spirits, too, whenever they caught sight of him, flung themselves down before him, and screamed out: “You are the Son of God”! 12 But he repeatedly warned them not to make him known.

13 And Jesus made his way up the hill, and called those whom he wished; and they went to him. 14 And he appointed twelve—whom he also named ‘Apostles’—that they might be with him, and that he might send them out as his Messengers, to preach, 15 And with power to drive out demons. 16 So he appointed the Twelve—Peter (which was the name that Jesus gave to Simon), 17 James, the son of Zebediah, and his brother John (to whom he gave the name of Boanerges, which means the Thunderers), 18 Andrew, Philip, Bartholomew, Matthew, Thomas, James the son of Alphaeus, Thaddaeus, Simon the Zealot, 19 And Judas Iscariot, the man that betrayed him. 20 Jesus went into a house; and again a crowd collected, so that they were not able even to eat their food. 21 When his relations heard of it, they went to take charge of him, for they said that he was out of his mind.

22 And the Teachers of the Law, who had come down from Jerusalem, said: “He has Baal-zebub in him, and he drives the demons out by the help of Baal-zebub, their chief.” 23 So Jesus called them to him, and answered them in parables: “How can Satan drive out Satan? 24 When a kingdom is divided against itself, it cannot last; 25 And when a household is divided against itself, it will not be able to last. 26 So, if Satan is in revolt against himself and is divided, he cannot last—his end has come! 27 No man who has got into a strong man’s house can carry off his goods, without first securing him; and not till then will he plunder his house. 28 I tell you that men will be forgiven everything—their sins, and all the slanders that they utter; 29 but whoever slanders the Holy Spirit remains unforgiven to the

end; he has to answer for an enduring sin." 30 This was said in reply to the charge that he had a foul spirit in him.

31 And his mother and his brothers came, and stood outside, and sent to ask him to come to them. 32 There was a crowd sitting round Jesus, and some of them said to him: "Look, your mother and your brothers are outside, asking for you." 33 "Who is my mother? and my brothers?" was his reply. 34 Then he looked around on the people sitting in a circle round him, and said: "Here are my mother and my brothers! 35 Whoever does the will of God is my brother and sister and mother."

Chapter 4

1 Jesus again began to teach by the Sea; and, as an immense crowd was gathering round him, he got into a boat, and sat in it on the Sea, while all the people were on the shore at the water's edge. 2 Then he taught them many truths in parables; and in the course of his teaching he said to them: 3 "Listen! The sower went out to sow; 4 And presently, as he was sowing, some of the seed fell along the path; and the birds came, and ate it up. 5 Some fell on rocky ground, where it had not much soil, and, having no depth of soil, sprang up at once; 6 But, when the sun rose, it was scorched, and, having no root, withered away. 7 Some of the seed fell among brambles; but the brambles shot up and completely choked it, and it yielded no return. 8 Some fell into good soil, and, shooting up and growing, yielded a return, amounting to thirty, sixty, and even a hundred fold." 9 And Jesus said: "Let any one who has ears to hear with hear." 10 Afterwards, when he was alone, his followers and the Twelve asked him about his parables; 11 And he said: "To you the hidden truth of the Kingdom of God has been imparted; but to those who are outside it all teaching takes the form of parables, that— 12 'Though they have eyes, they may see without perceiving; And though they have ears, they may hear without understanding; Lest some day they should turn and be forgiven.' 13 You do not know the meaning of this parable!" he went on; "Then how will you understand all the other parables? 14 The sower sows the Message. 15 The People meant by the seed that falls along the path are these—where the Message is sown, but, as soon as they have heard it, Satan immediately comes and carries away the Message that has been sown in them. 16 So, too, those meant by the seed sown on the rocky places are the people

who, when they have heard the Message, at once accept it joyfully; 17 But, as they have no root, they stand only for a short time; and so, when trouble or persecution arises on account of the Message, they fall away at once. 18 Those meant by the seed sown among the brambles are different; they are the people who hear the Message, 19 But the cares of life, and the glamour of wealth, and cravings for many other things come in and completely choke the Message, so that it gives no return. 20 But the people meant by the seed sown on the good ground are those who hear the Message, and welcome it, and yield a return, thirty, sixty, and even a hundred fold."

21 And Jesus said to them: "Is a lamp brought to be put under the corn-measure or under the couch, instead of being put on the lampstand? 22 Nothing is hidden unless it is some day to come to light, nor was anything ever kept hidden but that it should some day come into the light of day. 23 Let all who have ears to hear with hear. 24 Take care what you listen to," said Jesus. "The measure you mete will be meted out to you, and more will be added for you. 25 For, to those who have, more will be given; while, from those who have nothing, even what they have will be taken away." 26 Jesus also said: "This is what the Kingdom of God is like—like a man who has scattered seed on the ground, 27 And then sleeps by night and rises by day, while the seed is shooting up and growing—he knows not how. 28 The ground bears the crop of itself—first the blade, then the ear, and then the full grain in the ear; 29 But, as soon as the crop is ready, immediately he 'puts in the sickle because harvest has come'." 30 Jesus also said: "To what can we liken the Kingdom of God? 31 By what can we illustrate it? Perhaps by the growth of a mustard-seed. This seed, when sown in the ground, though it is smaller than all other seeds, 32 Yet, when sown, shoots up, and becomes larger than any other herb, and puts out great branches, so that even 'the wild birds can roost in its shelter.'" 33 With many such parables Jesus used to speak to the people of his Message, as far as they were able to receive it; 34 And to them he never used to speak except in parables; but in private to his own disciples he explained everything.

35 In the evening of the same day, Jesus said to them: "Let us go across." 36 So, leaving the crowd behind, they took him with them, just as he was, in the boat; and there were other boats with him. 37 A violent squall came on, and the waves kept dashing into

the boat, so that the boat was actually filling. 38 Jesus was in the stern asleep upon the cushion; and the disciples roused him and cried: “Teacher! is it nothing to you that we are lost?” 39 Jesus rose and rebuked the wind, and said to the sea: “Hush! Be still!” Then the wind dropped, and a great calm followed. 40 “Why are you so timid?” he exclaimed. “Have you no faith yet?” 41 But they were struck with great awe, and said to one another: “Who can this be that even the wind and the sea obey him?”

Chapter 5

1 And they came to the other side of the Sea—the country of the Gerasenes; 2 And, as soon as Jesus had got out of the boat, he met a man coming out of the tombs, who was under the power of a foul spirit, 3 And who made his home in the tombs. No one had ever been able to secure him, even with a chain; 4 For, though he had many times been left secured with fetters and chains, he had snapped the chains and broken the fetters to pieces, and no one could master him. 5 Night and day alike, he was continually shrieking in the tombs and among the hills, and cutting himself with stones. 6 Catching sight of Jesus from a distance, he ran and bowed to the ground before him, 7 Shrieking out in a loud voice: “What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? For God’s sake do not torment me!” 8 For Jesus had said: “Come out from the man, you foul spirit.” 9 And he asked him: “What is your name?” “My name,” he said, “is Legion, for there are many of us;” 10 and he begged Jesus again and again not to send them away out of that country. 11 There was a large drove of pigs close by, feeding on the hill-side. 12 And the spirits begged Jesus: “Send us into the pigs, that we may take possession of them.” 13 Jesus gave them leave. They came out, and entered into the pigs; and the drove—about two thousand in number—rushed down the steep slope into the Sea and were drowned in the Sea. 14 On this the men who tended them ran away, and carried the news to the town, and to the country round; and the people went to see what had happened. 15 When they came to Jesus, they found the possessed man sitting there, clothed and in his right mind—the very man who had had the ‘Legion’ in him—and they were awe-struck. 16 Then those who had seen it related to them all that had happened to the possessed man, as well as about the pigs; 17 Upon which they began to beg Jesus to leave their

neighbourhood. 18 As Jesus was getting into the boat, the possessed man begged him to let him stay with him. 19 But Jesus refused. “Go back to your home, to your own people,” he said, “and tell them of all that the Lord has done for you, and how he took pity on you.” 20 So the man went, and began to proclaim in the district of the Ten Towns all that Jesus had done for him; and every one was amazed.

21 By the time Jesus had re-crossed in the boat to the opposite shore, a great number of people had gathered to meet him, and were standing by the Sea. 22 And one of the Presidents of the Synagogue, whose name was Jaeirus, came and, as soon as he saw Jesus, threw himself at his feet with repeated entreaties. 23 “My little daughter,” he said, “is at the point of death; I beg you to come and place your hands on her, that her life may be spared.” 24 So Jesus went with him. A great number of People followed Jesus, and kept pressing round him. 25 Meanwhile a woman who for twelve years had suffered from haemorrhage, 26 And undergone much at the hands of many doctors, (spending all she had without obtaining any relief, but, on the contrary, growing worse), 27 Heard about Jesus, came behind in the crowd, and touched his cloak. 28 “If I can only touch his clothes,” she said, “I shall get well!” 29 At once the mischief was stopped, and she felt in herself that she was cured of her complaint. 30 Jesus at once became aware of the power that had gone out from him, and, turning round in the crowd, he said: “Who touched my clothes?” 31 “You see the people pressing round you,” exclaimed his disciples, “and yet you say ‘Who touched me?’” 32 But Jesus looked about to see who had done it. 33 Then the woman, in fear and trembling, knowing what had happened to her, came and threw herself down before him, and told him the whole truth. 34 “Daughter,” he said, “your faith has delivered you. Go, and peace be with you; be free from your complaint.”

35 Before he had finished speaking, some people from the house of the President of the Synagogue came and said: “Your daughter is dead! Why should you trouble the Teacher further?” 36 But Jesus, overhearing what they were saying, said to the President of the Synagogue: “Do not be afraid; only have faith.” 37 And he allowed no one to accompany him, except Peter, James, and John, the brother of James. 38 Presently they reached the President’s house, where Jesus saw a scene of confusion—people weeping and wailing incessantly. 39 “Why this confusion and weeping?”

he said on entering. "The little child is not dead; she is asleep." 40 They began to laugh at him; but he sent them all out, and then, with the child's father and mother and his companions, went into the room where she was lying. 41 Taking her hand, Jesus said to her: "Taleitha, koum!"—which means 'little girl, I am speaking to you—Rise!' 42 The little girl stood up at once, and began to walk about; for she was twelve years old. And, as soon as they saw it, they were overwhelmed with amazement; 43 But Jesus repeatedly cautioned them not to let any one know of it, and told them to give her something to eat.

Chapter 6

1 On leaving that place, Jesus, followed by his disciples, went to his own part of the country. 2 When the Sabbath came, he began to teach in the Synagogue; and the people, as they listened, were deeply impressed. "Where did he get this?" they said, "and what is this wisdom that has been given him? and these miracles which he is doing? 3 Is not he the carpenter, the son of Mary, and the brother of James, and Joses, and Judas, and Simon? And are not his sisters, too, living here among us?" This proved a hindrance to their believing in him; 4 On which Jesus said: "A prophet is not without honour, except in his own country, and among his own relations, and in his own home." 5 And he could not work any miracle there, beyond placing his hands upon a few infirm persons, and curing them; 6 And he wondered at the want of faith shown by the people. Jesus went round the villages, one after another, teaching.

7 He called the Twelve to him, and began to send them out as his Messengers, two and two, and gave them authority over foul spirits. 8 He instructed them to take nothing but a staff for the journey—not even bread, or a bag, or pence in their purse; 9 But they were to wear sandals, and not to put on a second coat. 10 "Whenever you go to stay at a house," he said, "remain there till you leave that place; 11 And if a place does not welcome you, or listen to you, as you go out of it shake off the dust that is on the soles of your feet, as a protest against them." 12 So they set out, and proclaimed the need of repentance. 13 They drove out many demons, and anointed with oil many who were infirm, and cured them.

14 Now King Herod heard of Jesus; for his name had become well known. People were saying—"John the Baptizer must have

risen from the dead, and that is why these miraculous powers are active in him." 15 Others again said—"He is Elijah," and others—"He is a Prophet, like one of the great Prophets." 16 But when Herod heard of him, he said—"The man whom I beheaded—John—he must be risen!" 17 For Herod himself had sent and arrested John, and put him in prison, in chains, to please Herodias, the wife of his brother Philip, because Herod had married her. 18 For John had said to Herod—'You have no right to be living with your brother's wife.' 19 So Herodias was incensed against John, and wanted to put him to death, but was unable to do so, 20 Because Herod stood in fear of John, knowing him to be an upright and holy man, and protected him. He had listened to John, but still remained much perplexed, and yet he found pleasure in listening to him. 21 A suitable opportunity, however, occurred when Herod, on his birthday, gave a dinner to his high officials, and his generals, and the foremost men in Galilee. 22 And when his daughter—that is, the daughter of Herodias—came in and danced, she delighted Herod and those who were dining with him. 'Ask me for whatever you like,' the King said to the girl, 'and I will give it to you'; 23 And he swore to her that he would give her whatever she asked him—up to half his kingdom. 24 The girl went out, and said to her mother 'What must I ask for?' 'The head of John the Baptizer,' answered her mother. 25 So she went in as quickly as possible to the King, and made her request. 'I want you,' she said, 'to give me at once, on a dish, the head of John the Baptist.' 26 The King was much distressed; yet, on account of his oath and of the guests at his table, he did not like to refuse her. 27 He immediately despatched one of his bodyguard, with orders to bring John's head. The man went and beheaded John in the prison, 28 And, bringing his head on a dish, gave it to the girl, and the girl gave it to her mother. 29 When John's disciples heard of it, they came and took his body away, and laid it in a tomb.

30 When the Apostles came back to Jesus, they told him all that they had done and all that they had taught. 31 "Come by yourselves privately to some lonely spot," he said, "and rest for a while"—for there were so many people coming and going that they had not time even to eat. 32 So they set off privately in their boat for a lonely spot. 33 And many people saw them going, and recognized them, and from all the towns they flocked together to the place on foot, and got there before them. 34 On getting out of the boat,

Jesus saw a great crowd, and his heart was moved at the sight of them, because they were 'like sheep without a shepherd'; and he began to teach them many things. 35 When it grew late, his disciples came up to him, and said: "This is a lonely spot, and it is already late. 36 Send the people away, so that they may go to the farms and villages around and buy themselves something to eat." 37 But Jesus answered: "It is for you to give them something to eat." "Are we to go and buy twenty pounds' worth of bread," they asked, "to give them to eat?" 38 "How many loaves have you?" he asked; "Go, and see." When they had found out, they told him: "Five, and two fishes." 39 Jesus directed them to make all the people take their seats on the green grass, in parties; 40 And they sat down in groups—in hundreds, and in fifties. 41 Taking the five loaves and the two fishes, Jesus looked up to Heaven, and said the blessing; he broke the loaves into pieces, and gave them to his disciples for them to serve out to the people, and he divided the two fishes also among them all. 42 Every one had sufficient to eat; 43 And they picked up enough broken pieces to fill twelve baskets, as well as some of the fish. 44 The men who ate the bread were five thousand in number.

45 Immediately afterwards Jesus made his disciples get into the boat, and cross over in advance, in the direction of Bethsaida, while he himself was dismissing the crowd. 46 After he had taken leave of the people, he went away up the hill to pray. 47 When evening fell, the boat was out in the middle of the Sea, and Jesus on the shore alone. 48 Seeing them labouring at the oars—for the wind was against them—about three hours after midnight Jesus came towards them, walking on the water, intending to join them. 49 But, when they saw him walking on the water, they thought it was a ghost, and cried out; 50 For all of them saw him, and were terrified. But Jesus at once spoke to them. "Courage!" he said, "it is I; do not be afraid!" 51 Then he got into the boat with them, and the wind dropped. The disciples were utterly amazed, 52 For they had not understood about the loaves, their minds being slow to learn. 53 When they had crossed over, they landed at Gennesaret, and moored the boat. 54 But they had no sooner left her than the people, recognizing Jesus, 55 Hurried over the whole country-side, and began to carry about upon mats those who were ill, wherever they heard he was. 56 So wherever he went—to villages, or towns, or farms—they would lay their sick in the market-places, begging him

to let them touch only the tassel of his cloak; and all who touched were made well.

Chapter 7

1 One day the Pharisees and some of the Teachers of the Law who had come from Jerusalem gathered round Jesus. 2 They had noticed that some of his disciples ate their food with their hands 'defiled,' by which they meant unwashed. 3 (For the Pharisees, and indeed all strict Jews, will not eat without first scrupulously washing their hands, holding in this to the traditions of their ancestors. 4 When they come from market, they will not eat without first sprinkling themselves; and there are many other customs which they have inherited and hold to, such as the ceremonial washing of cups, and jugs, and copper pans). 5 So the Pharisees and the Teachers of the Law asked Jesus this question—"How is it that your disciples do not follow the traditions of our ancestors, but eat their food with defiled hands?" 6 His answer was: "It was well said by Isaiah when he prophesied about you hypocrites in the words—'This is a people that honour me with their lips, While their hearts are far removed from me; 7 But vainly do they worship me, For they teach but the precepts of men.' 8 You neglect God's commandments and hold to the traditions of men. 9 Wisely do you set aside God's commandments," he exclaimed, "to keep your own traditions! 10 For while Moses said 'Honour thy father and thy mother,' and 'Let him who reviles his father or mother suffer death,' 11 You say 'If a man says to his father or mother "Whatever of mine might have been of service to you is Korban"' (which means 'Given to God')— 12 Why, then you do not allow him to do anything further for his father or mother! 13 In this way you nullify the words of God by your traditions, which you hand down; and you do many similar things." 14 Then Jesus called the people to him again, and said: "Listen to me, all of you, and mark my words. 15 There is nothing external to a man, which by going into him can 'defile' him; but the things that come out from a man are the things that defile him. 16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear." 17 When Jesus went indoors, away from the crowd, his disciples began questioning him about this saying. 18 "What, do even you understand so little?" exclaimed Jesus. "Do not you see that there is nothing external to a man, which by going into a man, can 'defile' him, 19 Because it does not pass into his heart, but

into his stomach, and is afterwards got rid of?"—in saying this Jesus pronounced all food 'clean.' 20 "It is what comes out from a man," he added, "that defiles him, 21 For it is from within, out of the hearts of men, that there come evil thoughts—unchastity, theft, murder, adultery, 22 Greed, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, envy, slander, haughtiness, folly; 23 All these wicked things come from within, and do defile a man."

24 On leaving that place, Jesus went to the district of Tyre and Sidon. And he went into a house, and did not wish anyone to know it, but could not escape notice. 25 For a woman, whose little daughter had a foul spirit in her, heard of him immediately, and came and threw herself at his feet— 26 The woman was a foreigner, a native of Syrian Phoenicia—and she begged him to drive the demon out of her daughter. 27 "Let the children be satisfied first," answered Jesus. "For it is not fair to take the children's food, and throw it to dogs." 28 "Yes, Master," she replied; "even the dogs under the table do feed on the children's crumbs." 29 "For saying that," he answered, "you may go. The demon has gone out of your daughter." 30 The woman went home, and found the child lying on her bed, and the demon gone.

31 On returning from the district of Tyre, Jesus went, by way of Sidon, to the Sea of Galilee, across the district of the Ten Towns. 32 Some people brought to him a man who was deaf and almost dumb, and they begged Jesus to place his hand on him. 33 Jesus took him aside from the crowd quietly, put his fingers into the man's ears, and touched his tongue with saliva. 34 Then, looking up to Heaven, he sighed, and said to the man: "Ephphatha!" which means 'Be opened.' 35 The man's ears were opened, the string of his tongue was freed, and he began to talk plainly. 36 Jesus insisted upon their not telling any one; but the more he insisted, the more perseveringly they made it known, 37 And a profound impression was made upon the people. "He has done everything well!" they exclaimed. "He makes even the deaf hear and the dumb speak!"

Chapter 8

1 About that time, when there was again a great crowd of people who had nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples to him, and said: 2 "My heart is moved at the sight of all these people, for they have already been with me three days and they have nothing to eat;

3 And if I send them away to their homes hungry, they will break down on the way; and some of them have come a long distance." 4 "Where will it be possible," his disciples answered, "to get sufficient bread for these people in this lonely place?" 5 "How many loaves have you?" he asked. "Seven," they answered. 6 Jesus told the crowd to sit down upon the ground. Then he took the seven loaves, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke them, and gave them to his disciples to serve out; and they served them out to the crowd. 7 They had also a few small fish; and, after he had said the blessing, he told the disciples to serve out these as well. 8 The people had sufficient to eat, and they picked up seven baskets full of the broken pieces that were left. 9 There were about four thousand people. Then Jesus dismissed them.

10 Immediately afterwards, getting into the boat with his disciples, Jesus went to the district of Dalmanutha. 11 Here the Pharisees came out, and began to argue with Jesus, asking him for some sign from the heavens, to test him. 12 Sighing deeply, Jesus said: "Why does this generation ask for a sign? I tell you, no sign shall be given it." 13 So he left them to themselves, and, getting into the boat again, went away to the opposite shore. 14 Now the disciples had forgotten to take any bread with them, one loaf being all that they had in the boat. 15 So Jesus gave them this warning. "Take care," he said, "beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod." 16 They began talking to one another about their being short of bread. 17 And, noticing this, Jesus said to them: "Why are you talking about your being short of bread? Do not you yet see or understand? Are your minds still so slow or comprehension? 18 'Though you have eyes, do you not see? and though you have ears, do you not hear?' Do not you remember, 19 When I broke up the five loaves for the five thousand, how many baskets of broken pieces you picked up?" "Twelve," they said. 20 "And when the seven for the four thousand, how many basketfuls of broken pieces did you pick up?" "Seven," they said. 21 "Do not you understand now?" he repeated.

22 They came to Bethsaida. There some people brought a blind man to Jesus, and begged him to touch him. 23 Taking the blind man's hand, Jesus led him to the outskirts of the village, and, when he had put saliva on the man's eyes, he placed his hands on him, and asked him: "Do you see anything?" 24 The man looked up, and said: "I see the people, for, as they walk about, they look to

me like trees." 25 Then Jesus again placed his hands on the man's
eyes; and the man saw clearly, his sight was restored, and he saw
everything with perfect distinctness. 26 Jesus sent him to his home,
and said: "Do not go even into the village."

27 Afterwards Jesus and his disciples went into the villages
round Caesarea Philippi; and on the way he asked his disciples this
question—"Who do people say that I am?" 28 "John the Baptist,"
they answered, "but others say Elijah, while others say one of the
Prophets." 29 "But you," he asked, "who do you say that I am?" To
this Peter replied: "You are the Christ." 30 On which Jesus charged
them not to say this about him to anyone. 31 Then he began to teach
them that the Son of Man must undergo much suffering, and that
he must be rejected by the Councillors, and the Chief Priests, and
the Teachers of the Law, and be put to death, and rise again after
three days. 32 This statement he made openly. But Peter took Jesus
aside, and began to rebuke him. 33 Jesus, however, turning round
and seeing his disciples, rebuked Peter. "Out of my sight, Satan!"
he exclaimed. "For you look at things, not as God does, but as man
does." 34 Calling the people and his disciples to him, Jesus said: "If
any man wishes to walk in my steps, let him renounce self, take up
his cross, and follow me. 35 For whoever wishes to save his life will
lose it, and whoever, for my sake and for the sake of the Good News,
will lose his life shall save it. 36 What good is it to a man to gain the
whole world and forfeit his life? 37 For what could a man give that is
of equal value with his life? 38 Whoever is ashamed of me and of my
teaching, in this unfaithful and wicked generation, of him will the
Son of Man be ashamed, when he comes in his Father's Glory with
the holy angels."

Chapter 9

1 "I tell you," he added, "that some of those who are standing
here will not know death till they have seen the Kingdom of God
come in power." 2 Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter, James,
and John, and led them up a high mountain alone by themselves.
There his appearance was transformed before their eyes, 3 And his
clothes became of a more dazzling white than any bleacher in the
world could make them. 4 And Elijah appeared to them, in company
with Moses; and they were talking with Jesus. 5 "Rabbi," said Peter,
interposing, "it is good to be here; let us make three tents, one for

you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah." 6 For he did not know what
to say, because they were much afraid. 7 Then a cloud came down
and enveloped them; and from the cloud there came a voice—"This
is my Son, the Beloved; him you must hear." 8 And suddenly, on
looking round, they saw that there was now no one with them but
Jesus alone. 9 As they were going down the mountain-side, Jesus
cautioned them not to relate what they had seen to any one, till
after the Son of Man should have risen again from the dead. 10
They seized upon these words and discussed with one another what
this 'rising from the dead' meant. 11 "How is it," they asked Jesus,
"that our Teachers of the Law say that Elijah has to come first?" 12
"Elijah does indeed come first," answered Jesus, "and re-establish
everything; and does not Scripture speak, with regard to the Son of
Man, of his undergoing much suffering and being utterly despised?
13 But I tell you that Elijah has come, and people have treated him
just as they pleased, as Scripture says of him."

14 When they came to the other disciples, they saw a great
crowd round them, and some Teachers of the Law arguing with
them. 15 But, as soon as they saw Jesus, all the people, in great
astonishment, ran up and greeted him. 16 "What are you arguing
about with them?" Jesus asked. 17 "Teacher," answered a man in
the crowd, "I brought my son to see you, as he has a dumb spirit in
him; 18 And, wherever it seizes him, it dashes him down; he foams
at the mouth and grinds his teeth, and he is pining away. I asked
your disciples to drive the spirit out, but they failed." 19 "O faithless
generation!" exclaimed Jesus. "How long must I be with you? how
long must I have patience with you? Bring the boy to me." 20 They
brought him to Jesus; but no sooner did the boy see him than the
spirit threw him into convulsions; and he fell on the ground, and
rolled about, foaming at the mouth. 21 "How long has he been like
this?" Jesus asked the boy's father. 22 "From his childhood," he
answered; "and it has often thrown him into fire and into water
to put an end to his life; but, if you can possibly do anything, take
pity on us, and help us!" 23 "Why say 'possibly'?" Jesus replied.
"Everything is possible for one who has faith." 24 The boy's father
immediately cried out: "I have faith; help my want of faith!" 25 But,
when Jesus saw that a crowd was quickly collecting, he rebuked the
foul spirit: "Deaf and dumb spirit, it is I who command you. Come
out from him and never enter him again." 26 With a loud cry the

spirit threw the boy into repeated convulsions, and then came out from him. The boy looked like a corpse, so that most of them said that he was dead. 27 But Jesus took his hand, and lifted him; and he stood up. 28 When Jesus had gone indoors, his disciples asked him privately: "Why could not we drive it out?" 29 "A spirit of this kind," he said, "can be driven out only by prayer."

30 Leaving that place, Jesus and his disciples went on their way through Galilee; but he did not wish any one to know it, 31 for he was instructing his disciples, and telling them—"The Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of his fellow men, and they will put him to death, but, when he has been put to death, he will rise again after three days." 32 But the disciples did not understand his meaning and were afraid to question him. 33 They came to Capernaum. When Jesus had gone into the house, he asked them: "What were you discussing on the way?" 34 But they were silent; for on the way they had been arguing with one another which was the greatest. 35 Sitting down, Jesus called the Twelve and said: "If any one wishes to be first, he must be last of all, and servant of all." 36 Then Jesus took a little child, and placed it in the middle of them. Folding it in his arms, he said to them: 37 "Any one who, for the sake of my Name, welcomes even a little child like this is welcoming me, and any one who welcomes me is welcoming not me, but him who sent me as his Messenger." 38 "Teacher," said John, "we saw a man driving out demons by using your name, and we tried to prevent him, because he did not follow us." 39 "None of you must prevent the man," answered Jesus, "for no one will use my name in working a miracle, and yet find it easy to speak evil of me. 40 He who is not against us is for us.

41 If any one gives you a cup of water because you belong to Christ, I tell you, he shall assuredly not lose his reward. 42 And, if any one puts a snare in the way of one of these lowly ones who believe in me, it would be far better for him if he had been thrown into the sea with a great millstone round his neck. 43 If your hand proves a snare to you, cut it off. It would be better for you to enter the Life maimed, than to have both your hands and go into the Pit, into the inextinguishable fire 44 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. 45 If your foot proves a snare to you, cut it off. It would be better for you to enter the Life lame, than to have both your feet and be thrown into the Pit 46 Where their worm dieth

not, and the fire is not quenched. 47 If your eye proves a snare to you, tear it out. It would be better for you to enter the Kingdom of God with only one eye, than to have both eyes and be thrown into the Pit, 48 where 'their worm does not die, and the fire is not put out.' 49 For it is by fire that every one will be salted. 50 Salt is good, but, if the salt should lose its saltiness, what will you use to season it? You must have salt in yourselves, and live at peace with one another."

Chapter 10

1 On leaving that place, Jesus went into the district of Judea on the other side of the Jordan. Crowds gathered about him again; and again, as usual, he began teaching them. 2 Presently some Pharisees came up and, to test him, asked: "Has a husband the right to divorce his wife?" 3 "What direction did Moses give you?" replied Jesus. 4 "Moses," they said, "permitted a man to 'draw up in writing a notice of separation and divorce his wife.'" 5 "It was owing to the hardness of your hearts," said Jesus, "that Moses gave you this direction; 6 But, at the beginning of the Creation, God 'made them male and female.' 7 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother, 8 And the man and his wife shall become one;' so that they are no longer two, but one. 9 What God himself, then, has yoked together man must not separate." 10 When they were indoors, the disciples asked him again about this, 11 And he said: "Any one who divorces his wife and marries another woman is guilty of adultery against his wife; 12 And, if the woman divorces her husband and marries another man, she is guilty of adultery."

13 Some of the people were bringing little children to Jesus, for him to touch them; but the disciples found fault with those who had brought them. 14 When, however, Jesus saw this, he was indignant. "Let the little children come to me," he said, "do not hinder them; for it is to the childlike that the Kingdom of God belongs. 15 I tell you, unless a man receives the Kingdom of God like a child, he will not enter it at all." 16 Then he folded the children in his arms, and, placing his hands on them, gave them his blessing.

17 And, as Jesus was resuming his journey, a man came running up to him, and threw himself on his knees before him. "Good Teacher," he asked, "what must I do to gain Immortal Life?" 18 "Why do you call me good?" answered Jesus. "No one is good but God. 19 You know the commandments—'Do not kill. Do not commit

adultery. Do not steal. Do not say what is false about others. Do not cheat. Honour thy father and thy mother.'" [20] "Teacher," he replied, "I have observed all these from my childhood." [21] Jesus looked at the man, and his heart went out to him, and he said: "There is still one thing wanting in you; go and sell all that you have, and give to the poor, and you shall heave wealth in Heaven; then come and follow me." [22] But the man's face clouded at these words, and he went away distressed, for he had great possessions. [23] Then Jesus looked round, and said to his disciples: "How hard it will be for men of wealth to enter the Kingdom of God!" [24] The disciples were amazed at his words. But Jesus said again: "My children, how hard a thing it is to enter the Kingdom of God! [25] It is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God." [26] "Then who can be saved?" they exclaimed in the greatest astonishment. [27] Jesus looked at them, and answered: "With men it is impossible, but not with God; for everything is possible with God." [28] "But we," began Peter, "we left everything and have followed you." [29] "I tell you," said Jesus, "there is no one who has left house, or brothers, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or land, on my account and on account of the Good News, [30] Who will not receive a hundred times as much, even now in the present—houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and land—though not without persecutions, and, in the age that is coming, Immortal Life. [31] But many who are first now will then be last, and the last will be first."

[32] One day, when they were on their way, going up to Jerusalem, Jesus was walking in front of the Apostles, who were filled with misgivings; while those who were following behind were alarmed. Gathering the Twelve round him once more, Jesus began to tell them what was about to happen to him. [33] "Listen!" he said. "We are going up to Jerusalem; and there the Son of Man will be betrayed to the Chief Priests and the Teachers of the Law, and they will condemn him to death, and they will give him up to the Gentiles, [34] Who will mock him, spit upon him, and scourge him, and put him to death; and after three days he will rise again." [35] James and John, the two sons of Zebediah, went to Jesus, and said: "Teacher, we want you to do for us whatever we ask." [36] "What do you want me to do for you?" he asked. [37] "Grant us this," they answered, "to sit, one on your right, and the other on your left,

when you come in glory." [38] "You do not know what you are asking," Jesus said to them. "Can you drink the cup that I am to drink? or receive the baptism that I am to receive?" [39] "Yes," they answered, "we can." "You shall indeed drink the cup that I am to drink," Jesus said, "and receive the baptism that I am to receive, [40] But as to a seat at my right or at my left—that is not mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared." [41] On hearing of this, the ten others were at first very indignant about James and John. [42] But Jesus called the ten to him, and said: "Those who are regarded as ruling among the Gentiles lord it over them, as you know, and their great men oppress them. [43] But among you it is not so. No, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, [44] And whoever wants to take the first place among you must be the servant of all; [45] For even the Son of Man came, not be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many."

[46] They came to Jericho. When Jesus was going out of the town with his disciples and a large crowd, Bartimaeus, the son of Timaeus, a blind beggar, was sitting by the road-side. [47] Hearing that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to call out: "Jesus, Son of David, take pity on me." [48] Many of the people kept telling him to be quiet; but the man continued to call out all the louder: "Son of David, take pity on me." [49] Then Jesus stopped. "Call him," he said. So they called the blind man. "Courage!" they exclaimed. "Get up; he is calling you." [50] The man threw off his cloak, sprang up, and came to Jesus. [51] "What do you want me to do for you?" said Jesus, addressing him. "Rabboni," the blind man answered, "I want to recover my sight." [52] "You may go," Jesus said; "your faith has delivered you." Immediately he recovered his sight, and began to follow Jesus along the road.

Chapter 11

[1] When they had almost reached Jerusalem, as far as Bethphage and Bethany, near the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent on two of his disciples. [2] "Go to the village facing you," he said; "and, as soon as you get there, you will find a foal tethered, which no one has ever ridden; untie it, and bring it. [3] And, if any one says to you 'Why are you doing that?', say 'The Master wants it, and will be sure to send it back here at once.'" [4] The two disciples went, and, finding a foal tethered outside a door in the street, they untied it. [5] Some of the

by-standers said to them: “What are you doing, untying the foal?”
6 And the two disciples answered as Jesus had told them; and they
allowed them to go. 7 Then they brought the foal to Jesus, and, when
they had laid their cloaks on it, he seated himself upon it. 8 Many
of the people spread their cloaks on the road, while some strewed
boughs which they had cut from the fields; 9 And those who led the
way, as well as those who followed, kept shouting: “‘God save him!
Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord!’ 10 Blessed is the
coming Kingdom of our father David! ‘God save him from on high!’”
11 Jesus entered Jerusalem, and went into the Temple Courts; and,
after looking round at everything, as it was already late, he went out
to Bethany with the Twelve.

12 The next day, after they had left Bethany, Jesus became
hungry; 13 And, noticing a fig-tree at a distance in leaf, he went to it
to see if by any chance he could find something on it; but, on coming
up to it, he found nothing but leaves, for it was not the season for
figs. 14 So, addressing the tree, he exclaimed: “May no man ever
again eat of your fruit!” And his disciples heard what he said. 15 They
came to Jerusalem. Jesus went into the Temple Courts, and began
to drive out those who were buying and selling there. He overturned
the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of the pigeon-
dealers, 16 And would not allow any one to carry anything across
the Temple Courts. 17 Then he began to teach. “Does not Scripture
say,” he asked, “‘My House shall be called a House of Prayer for all
the nations’? But you have made it a den of robbers.’” 18 Now the
Chief Priests and the Teachers of the Law heard this and began to
look for some way of putting Jesus to death; for they were afraid of
him, since all the people were greatly impressed by his teaching. 19
As soon as evening fell, Jesus and his disciples went out of the city.
20 As they passed by early in the morning, they noticed that the fig-
tree was withered up from the very roots. 21 Then Peter recollected
what had occurred. “Look, Rabbi,” he exclaimed, “the fig-tree which
you doomed is withered up!” 22 “Have faith in God!” replied Jesus.
23 “I tell you that if any one should say to this hill ‘Be lifted up and
hurled into the sea!’, without ever a doubt in his mind, but in the
faith that what he says will be done, he would find that it would be.
24 And therefore I say to you ‘Have faith that whatever you ask for
in prayer is already granted you, and you will find that it will be.’ 25
And, whenever you stand up to pray, forgive any grievance that you

have against any one, that your Father who is in Heaven also may
forgive you your offences. 26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will
your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.”

27 They came to Jerusalem again. While Jesus was walking
about in the Temple Courts, the Chief Priests, the Teachers of the
Law, and the Councillors came up to him. 28 “What authority have
you to do these things?” they said. “Who gave you the authority to
do them?” 29 “I will put one question to you,” said Jesus. “Answer
me that, and then I will tell you what authority I have to act as I
do. 30 It is about John’s baptism. Was it of divine or human origin?
Answer me that.” 31 They began arguing together; “If we say ‘divine,’
he will say ‘Why then did not you believe him?’ 32 Yet can we say
‘human’?”—They were afraid of the people, for everyone regarded
John as undoubtedly a Prophet. 33 So their answer to Jesus was—
“We do not know.” “Then I,” replied Jesus, “refuse to tell you what
authority I have to do these things.”

Chapter 12

1 And Jesus began to speak to them in parables: “A man
once planted a vineyard, put a fence round it, dug a wine-press,
built a tower, and then let it out to tenants and went abroad. 2 At the
proper time he sent a servant to the tenants, to receive from them
a share of the produce of the vintage; 3 But they seized him, and
beat him, and sent him away empty-handed. 4 A second time the
owner sent a servant to them; this man, too, the tenants struck on
the head, and insulted. 5 He sent another, but him they killed; and
so with many others—some they beat and some they killed. 6 He had
still one son, who was very dear to him; and him he sent to them
last of all. ‘They will respect my son,’ he said. 7 But those tenants
said to one another ‘Here is the heir! Come, let us kill him, and his
inheritance will be ours.’ 8 So they seized him, and killed him, and
threw his body outside the vineyard. 9 What will the owner of the
vineyard do? He will come and put the tenants to death, and he will
let the vineyard to others. 10 Have you never read this passage of
Scripture?—‘The very stone which the builders despised has now
itself become the corner-stone; 11 This corner-stone has come from
the Lord, and is marvellous in our eyes.’” 12 After this his enemies
were eager to arrest him, but they were afraid of the crowd; for they
saw that it was at them that he had aimed the parable. So they let

him alone, and went away.

13 Afterwards they sent to Jesus some of the Pharisees and of
the Herodians, to set a trap for him in the course of conversation. 14
These men came to him and said: "Teacher, we know that you are
an honest man, and are not afraid of any one, for you pay no regard
to a man's position, but teach the Way of God honestly; are we right
in paying taxes to the Emperor, or not? 15 Should we pay, or should
we not pay?" Knowing their hypocrisy, Jesus said to them: "Why
are you testing me? Bring me a florin to look at." 16 And, when they
had brought it, he asked: "Whose head and title are these?" "The
Emperor's," they said; 17 And Jesus replied: "Pay to the Emperor
what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what belongs to God."
And they wondered at him.

18 Next came some Sadducees—the men who maintain that
there is no resurrection. Their question was this— 19 "Teacher, in
our Scriptures Moses decreed that, should a man's brother die,
leaving a widow but no child, the man should take the widow as
his wife, and raise up a family for his brother. 20 There were once
seven brothers; of whom the eldest took a wife, but died and left no
family; 21 And the second took her, and died without family; and so
did the third. 22 All the seven died and left no family. The woman
herself died last of all. 23 At the resurrection whose wife will she be,
all seven brothers having had her as their wife?" 24 "Is not the reason
of your mistake," answered Jesus, "your ignorance of the Scriptures
and of the power of God? 25 When men rise from the dead, there is
no marrying or being married; but they are as angels in Heaven. 26
As to the dead, and the fact that they rise, have you never read in
the Book of Moses, in the passage about the Bush, how God spoke
to him thus—'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and
the God of Jacob'? 27 He is not God of dead men, but of living. You
are greatly mistaken."

28 Then came up one of the Teachers of the Law who had
heard their discussions. Knowing that Jesus had answered them
wisely, he asked him this question: "What is the first of all the
commandments?" 29 "The first," answered Jesus, "is—'Hear, O
Israel; the Lord our God is the one Lord; 30 And thou shalt love the
Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all
thy mind, and with all thy strength.' 31 The second is this—'Thou
shalt love thy neighbour as thou dost love thyself.' There is no

commandment greater than these." 32 "Wisely answered, Teacher!"
exclaimed the Teacher of the Law. "It is true, as you say, that 'there
is one God,' and that 'there is no other besides him'; 33 And to 'love
him with all one's heart, and with all one's understanding, and with
all one's strength,' and to 'love one's neighbour as one loves oneself'
is far beyond all 'burnt-offerings and sacrifices.'" 34 Seeing that he
had answered with discernment, Jesus said to him: "You are not far
from the Kingdom of God." After that no one ventured to question
him further.

35 While Jesus was teaching in the Temple Courts, he asked:
"How is it that the Teachers of the Law say that the Christ is to be
David's son? 36 David said himself, speaking under the inspiration
of the Holy Spirit—'The Lord said to my lord: "Sit at my right hand,
Until I put thy enemies beneath thy feet."' 37 David himself calls
him 'lord,' how comes it, then, that he is to be his son?" The mass
of the people listened to Jesus with delight. 38 In the course of his
teaching, Jesus said: "See that you are on your guard against the
Teachers of the Law, who delight to walk about in long robes, and to
be greeted in the streets with respect, 39 And to have the best seats in
the Synagogues, and places of honour at dinner. 40 They are the men
that rob widows of their homes, and make a pretence of saying long
prayers. Their sentence will be all the heavier."

41 Then Jesus sat down opposite the chests for the Temple
offerings, and watched how the people put money into them. Many
rich people were putting in large sums; 42 But one poor widow came
and put in two farthings, which make a half-penny. 43 On this,
calling his disciples to him, Jesus said: "I tell you that this poor
widow has put in more than all the others who were putting money
into the chests; 44 For every one else put in something from what he
had to spare, while she, in her need, put in all she had—everything
that she had to live on."

Chapter 13

1 As Jesus was walking out of the Temple Courts, one of his
disciples said to him: "Teacher, look what fine stones and buildings
these are!" 2 "Do you see these great buildings?" asked Jesus. "Not
a single stone will be left here upon another, which shall not be
thrown down." 3 When Jesus had sat down on the Mount of Olives,
facing the Temple, Peter, James, John and Andrew questioned him

privately: [4] "Tell us when this will be, and what will be the sign when all this is drawing to its close."

[5] Then Jesus began: "See that no one leads you astray. [6] Many will take my name, and come saying 'I am He', and will lead many astray. [7] And, when you hear of wars and rumours of wars, do not be alarmed; such things must occur; but the end is not yet. [8] For 'nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom'; there will be earthquakes in various places; there will be famines. This will be but the beginning of the birth-pangs. [9] See to yourselves! They will betray you to courts of law; and you will be taken to Synagogues and beaten; and you will be brought up before governors and kings for my sake, that you may bear witness before them. [10] But the Good News must first be proclaimed to every nation. [11] Whenever they betray you and hand you over for trial, do not be anxious beforehand as to what you shall say, but say whatever is given you at the moment; for it will not be you who speak, but the Holy Spirit. [12] Brother will betray brother to death, and the father his child; and children will turn against their parents, and cause them to be put to death; [13] And you will be hated by every one on account of my Name. Yet the man that endures to the end shall be saved.

[14] As soon, however, as you see 'the Foul Desecration' standing where he ought not" (the reader must consider what this means) "then those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the mountains; [15] And a man on the house-top must not go down, or go in to get anything out of his house: [16] Nor must one who is on his farm turn back to get his cloak. [17] And alas for the women that are with child, and for those that are nursing infants in those days! [18] Pray, too, that this may not occur in winter. [19] For those days will be a time of distress, the like of which has not occurred from the beginning of God's creation until now—and never will again. [20] And, had not the Lord put a limit to those days, not a single soul would escape; but, for the sake of God's own chosen People, he did limit them. [21] And at that time if any one should say to you 'Look, here is the Christ!' 'Look, there he is!', do not believe it; [22] For false Christs and false Prophets will arise, and display signs and marvels, to lead astray, were it possible, even God's People. [23] But see that you are on your guard! I have told you all this beforehand.

[24] In those days, after that time of distress, 'the sun will be darkened, the moon will not give her light, [25] The stars will be falling

from the heavens,' and 'the forces that are in the heavens will be convulsed.' [26] Then will be seen the 'Son of Man coming in clouds' with great power and glory; [27] And then he will send the angels, and gather his People from the four winds, from one end of the world to the other.

[28] Learn the lesson taught by the fig-tree. As soon as its branches are full of sap, and it is bursting into leaf, you know that summer is near. [29] And so may you, as soon as you see these things happening, know that he is at your doors. [30] I tell you that even the present generation will not pass away, until all these things have taken place. [31] The heavens and the earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away. [32] But about 'That Day,' or 'The Hour,' no one knows—not even the angels in Heaven, nor yet the Son—but only the Father. [33] See that you are on the watch; for you do not know when the time will be. [34] It is like a man going on a journey, who leaves his home, puts his servants in charge—each having his special duty—and orders the porter to watch. [35] Therefore watch, for you cannot be sure when the Master of the house is coming—whether in the evening, at midnight, at daybreak, or in the morning— [36] Lest he should come suddenly and find you asleep. [37] And what I say to you I say to all—Watch!"

Chapter 14

[1] It was now two days before the Festival of the Passover and the Unleavened bread. The Chief Priests and the Teachers of the Law were looking for an opportunity to arrest Jesus by stealth, and to put him to death; [2] For they said: "Not during the Festival, for fear of a riot." [3] When Jesus was still at Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, while he was at table, a woman came with an alabaster jar of choice spikenard perfume of great value. She broke the jar, and poured the perfume on his head. [4] Some of those who were present said to one another indignantly: "Why has the perfume been wasted like this? [5] This perfume could have been sold for more than thirty pounds, and the money given to the poor." [6] "Let her alone," said Jesus, as they began to find fault with her, "why are you troubling her? This is a beautiful deed that she has done for me. [7] You always have the poor with you, and whenever you wish you can do good to them; but you will not always have me. [8] She has done what she could; she has perfumed my body beforehand for my burial.

9 And I tell you, wherever, in the whole world, the Good News is
proclaimed, what this woman has done will be told in memory of
her." 10 After this, Judas Iscariot, one of the Twelve, went to the
Chief Priests, to betray Jesus to them. 11 They were glad to hear what
he said, and promised to pay him. So he looked for a way to betray
Jesus opportunely.

12 On the first day of the Festival of the Unleavened bread,
when it was customary to kill the Passover lambs, his disciples said
to Jesus: "Where do you wish us to go and make preparations for
your eating the Passover?" 13 Jesus sent forward two of his disciples
and said to them: "Go into the city, and there a man carrying a
pitcher of water will meet you; follow him; 14 and, wherever he goes
in, say to the owner of the house 'The Teacher says—Where is my
room where I am to eat the Passover with my disciples?' 15 He will
himself show you a large upstairs room, set out ready; and there
make preparations for us." 16 So the disciples set out and went into
the city, and found everything just as Jesus had told them; and they
prepared the Passover. 17 In the evening he went there with the
Twelve, 18 And when they had taken their places and were eating,
Jesus said: "I tell you that one of you is going to betray me—one who
is eating with me." 19 They were grieved at this, and began to say to
him, one after another: "Can it be I?" 20 "It is one of you Twelve,"
said Jesus, "the one who is dipping his bread beside me into the
dish. 21 True, the Son of Man must go, as Scripture says of him, yet
alas for that man by whom the Son of Man is being betrayed! For
that man 'it would be better never to have been born!'" 22 While they
were eating, Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the blessing,
broke it, and gave it to them, and said: "Take it; this is my body."
23 Then he took a cup, and, after saying the thanksgiving, gave it to
them, and they all drank from it. 24 "This is my Covenant-blood,"
he said, "which is poured out on behalf of many. 25 I tell you that I
shall never again drink of the juice of the grape, until that day when
I shall drink it new in the Kingdom of God." 26 They then sang a
hymn, and went out up the Mount of Olives, 27 Presently Jesus said
to them: "All of you will fall away; for Scripture says—'I will strike
down the Shepherd, and the sheep will be scattered.' 28 Yet, after I
have risen, I shall go before you into Galilee." 29 "Even if every one
else falls away," said Peter, "yet I shall not." 30 "I tell you," answered
Jesus, "that you yourself today—yes, this very night—before the cock

crows twice, will disown me three times." 31 But Peter vehemently
protested: "Even if I must die with you, I shall never disown you!"
And they all said the same.

32 Presently they came to a garden known as Gethsemane,
and Jesus said to his disciples "Sit down here while I pray." 33 He
took with him Peter, James, and John; and began to show signs of
great dismay and deep distress of mind. 34 "I am sad at heart," he
said, "sad even to death; wait here, and watch." 35 Going on a little
further, he threw himself on the ground, and began to pray that, if
it were possible, he might be spared that hour. 36 "Abba, Father," he
said, "all things are possible to thee; take away this cup from me;
yet, not what I will, but what thou willest." 37 Then he came and
found the three Apostles asleep. "Simon," he said to Peter, "are you
asleep? Could not you watch for one hour? 38 Watch and pray," he
said to them all, "that you may not fall into temptation. True, the
spirit is eager, but human nature is weak." 39 Again he went away,
and prayed in the same words; 40 And coming back again he found
them asleep, for their eyes were heavy; and they did not know what
to say to him. 41 A third time he came, and said to them: "Sleep on
now, and rest yourselves. Enough! My time has come. Hark! the
Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of wicked men. 42 Up,
and let us be going. Look! my betrayer is close at hand."

43 And just then, while he was still speaking, Judas, who was
one of the Twelve, came up; and with him a crowd of people, with
swords and clubs, sent by the Chief Priests, the Teachers of the Law,
and the Councillors. 44 Now the betrayer had arranged a signal with
them. "The man whom I kiss," he had said, "will be the one; arrest
him and take him away safely." 45 As soon as Judas came, he went up
to Jesus at once, and said: "Rabbi!" and kissed him. 46 Then the men
seized Jesus, and arrested him. 47 One of those who were standing
by drew his sword, and struck at the High Priest's servant, and cut
off his ear. 48 But Jesus interposed, and said to the men: "Have
you come out, as if after a robber, with swords and clubs, to take
me? 49 I have been among you day after day in the Temple Courts
teaching, and yet you did not arrest me; but this is in fulfilment of
the Scriptures." 50 And all the Apostles forsook him, and fled. 51 One
young man did indeed follow him, wrapped only in a linen sheet.
They tried to arrest him; 52 But he left the sheet in their hands, and
fled naked.

53 Then they took Jesus to the High Priest; and all the Chief
Priests, the Councillors, and the Teachers of the Law assembled. 54
Peter, who had followed Jesus at a distance into the court-yard of
the High Priest, was sitting there among the police-officers, warming
himself at the blaze of the fire. 55 Meanwhile the Chief Priest and the
whole of the High Council were trying to get such evidence against
Jesus as would warrant his being put to death, but they could not
find any; 56 For, though there were many who gave false evidence
against him, yet their evidence did not agree. 57 Presently some
men stood up, and gave this false evidence against him— 58 "We
ourselves heard him say 'I will destroy this Temple made with
hands, and in three days build another made without hands.'" 59 Yet
not even on that point did their evidence agree. 60 Then the High
Priest stood forward, and questioned Jesus. "Have you no answer to
make?" he asked. "What is this evidence which these men are giving
against you?" 61 But Jesus remained silent, and made no answer. A
second time the High Priest questioned him. "Are you," he asked,
"the Christ, the Son of the Blessed One?" 62 "I am," replied Jesus,
"and you shall all see the Son of Man sitting on the right hand of the
Almighty; and 'coming in the clouds of heaven'." 63 At this the High
Priest tore his vestments. "Why do we want any more witnesses?"
he exclaimed. 64 "You heard his blasphemy? What is your verdict?"
They all condemned him, declaring that he deserved death. 65 Some
of those present began to spit at him, and to blindfold his eyes, and
strike him, saying, as they did so, "Now play the Prophet!" and even
the police-officers received him with blows.

66 While Peter was in the court-yard down below, one of the
High Priest's maidservants came up; 67 And, seeing Peter warming
himself, she looked closely at him, and exclaimed: "Why, you were
with Jesus, the Nazarene!" 68 But Peter denied it. "I do not know or
understand what you mean," he replied. Then he went out into the
porch; 69 And there the maidservant, on seeing him, began to say
again to the by-standers: "This is one of them!" 70 But Peter again
denied it. Soon afterwards the bystanders again said to him: "You
certainly are one of them; why you are a Galilean!" 71 But he began
to swear with the most solemn imprecations: "I do not know the
man you are speaking about." 72 At that moment, for the second
time, a cock crowed; and Peter remembered the words that Jesus
had said to him—'Before a cock has crowed twice, you will disown

me three times'; and, as he thought of it, he began to weep.

Chapter 15

1 As soon as it was daylight, the Chief Priests, after holding a
consultation with the Councillors and Teachers of the Law—that is
to say, the whole High Council—put Jesus in chains, and took him
away, and gave him up to Pilate. 2 "Are you the King of the Jews?"
asked Pilate. "It is true," replied Jesus. 3 Then the Chief Priests
brought a number of charges against him; 4 Upon which Pilate
questioned Jesus again. "Have you no reply to make?" he asked.
"Listen, how many charges they are bringing against you." 5 But
Jesus still made no reply whatever; at which Pilate was astonished.
6 Now, at the Feast, Pilate used to grant the people the release of
any one prisoner whom they might ask for. 7 A man called Barabbas
was in prison, with the rioters who had committed murder during a
riot. 8 So, when the crowd went up and began to ask Pilate to follow
his usual custom, 9 He answered: "Do you want me to release the
'King of the Jews' for you?" 10 For he was aware that it was out of
jealousy that the Chief Priests had given Jesus up to him. 11 But the
Chief Priests incited the crowd to get Barabbas released instead. 12
Pilate, however, spoke to them again: "What shall I do then with the
man whom you call the 'King of the Jews'?" 13 Again they shouted:
"Crucify him!" 14 "Why, what harm has he done?" Pilate kept saying
to them. But they shouted furiously: "Crucify him!"

15 And Pilate, wishing to satisfy the crowd, released Barabbas
to them, and, after scourging Jesus, gave him up to be crucified. 16
The soldiers then took Jesus away into the court-yard—that is the
Government House—and they called the whole garrison together.
17 They dressed him in a purple robe, and, having twisted a crown
of thorns, put it on him, 18 And then began to salute him. "Long life
to you, King of the Jews!" they said. 19 And they kept striking him
on the head with a rod, spitting at him, and bowing to the ground
before him—going down on their knees; 20 And, when they had left
off mocking him, they took off the purple robe, and put his own
clothes on him. 21 And they led Jesus out to crucify him; and they
compelled a passer-by, Simon from Cyrene, who was on his way
in from the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to go with
them to carry his cross.

22 They brought Jesus to the place which was known as

Golgotha—a name which means 'Place of a Skull.' [23] There they offered him drugged wine; but Jesus refused it. [24] Then they crucified him, and divided his clothes among them, casting lots for them, to settle what each should take. [25] It was nine in the morning when they crucified him. [26] The words of the charge against him, written up over his head, ran thus—'THE KING OF THE JEWS.' [27] And with him they crucified two robbers, one on the right, and the other on the left. [28] And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors. [29] The passers-by railed at him, shaking their heads, as they said: "Ah! you who 'destroy the Temple and build one in three days, [30] 'come down from the cross and save yourself!" [31] In the same way the Chief Priests, with the Teachers of the Law, said to one another in mockery: [32] "He saved others, but he cannot save himself! Let the Christ, the 'King of Israel,' come down from the cross now, that we may see it and believe." Even the men who had been crucified with Jesus reviled him.

[33] At midday, a darkness came over the whole country, lasting till three in the afternoon. [34] And, at three, Jesus called out loudly: "'Eloi, Eloi, lama sabacthani?'" which means 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?' [35] Some of those standing round heard this, and said: "Listen! He is calling for Elijah!" [36] And a man ran, and, soaking a sponge in common wine, put it on the end of a rod, and offered it to him to drink, saying as he did so: "Wait and let us see if Elijah is coming to take him down." [37] But Jesus, giving a loud cry, expired. [38] The Temple curtain was torn in two from top to bottom. [39] The Roman Officer, who was standing facing Jesus, on seeing the way in which he expired, exclaimed: "This man must indeed have been 'God's Son'!" [40] There were some women also watching from a distance, among them being Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James the Little and of Joseph, and Salome— [41] All of whom used to accompany Jesus when he was in Galilee, and attend on him—besides many other women who had come up with him to Jerusalem.

[42] The evening had already fallen, when, as it was the Preparation Day—the day before the Sabbath— [43] Joseph from Ramah, a Councillor of good position, who was himself living in expectation of the Kingdom of God, came and ventured to go in to see Pilate, and to ask for the body of Jesus. [44] But Pilate was surprised to hear that he had already died. So he sent for the

Officer, and asked if he were already dead; [45] And, on learning from the Officer that it was so, he gave the corpse to Joseph. [46] Joseph, having bought a linen sheet, took Jesus down, and wound the sheet round him, and laid him in a tomb which had been cut out of the rock; and then rolled a stone up against the entrance of the tomb. [47] Mary of Magdala and Mary, the mother of Joseph, were watching to see where he was laid.

Chapter 16

[1] When the Sabbath was over, Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought some spices, so that they might go and anoint the body of Jesus. [2] And very early on the first day of the week they went to the tomb, after sunrise. [3] They were saying to one another: "Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance of the tomb?" [4] But, on looking up, they saw that the stone had already been rolled back; it was a very large one. [5] Going into the tomb, they saw a young man sitting on their right, in a white robe, and they were dismayed; But he said to them: [6] "Do not be dismayed; you are looking for Jesus, the Nazarene, who has been crucified; he has risen, he is not here! Look! Here is the place where they laid him. [7] But go, and say to his disciples and to Peter 'He is going before you into Galilee; there you will see him, as he told you.'" [8] They went out, and fled from the tomb, for they were trembling and bewildered; and they did not say a word to any one, for they were frightened;

[9] After his rising again, early on the first day of the week, Jesus appeared first of all to Mary of Magdala, from whom he had driven out seven demons. [10] She went and told the news to those who had been with him and who were now in sorrow and tears; [11] Yet even they, when they heard that he was alive and had been seen by her, did not believe it. [12] Afterwards, altered in appearance, he made himself known to two of them, as they were walking, on their way into the country. [13] They also went and told the rest, but they did not believe even them.

[14] Later on, he made himself known to the Eleven themselves as they were at a meal, and reproached them with their want of faith and their stubbornness, because they did not believe those who had seen him after he had risen from the dead. [15] Then he said to them: "Go into all the world, and proclaim the Good News to all creation.

16 He who believes and is baptized shall be saved; but he who refuses
to believe will be condemned. 17 Moreover these signs shall attend
those who believe. In my Name they shall drive out demons; they
shall speak with 'tongues'; 18 They shall take up serpents in their
hands; and, if they drink any poison, it shall not hurt them; they will
place their hands on sick people and they shall recover."

19 So the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken to them, was taken
up into Heaven, and sat at the right hand of God. 20 But they set
out, and made the proclamation everywhere, the Lord working with
them, and confirming the Message by the signs which attended it.

The Gospel According to Luke

Chapter 1

1 [To his Excellency, Theophilus. Many attempts have been
already made to draw up an account of those events which have
reached their conclusion among us, 2 Just as they were reported
to us by those who from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and
afterwards became bearers of the Message. 3 And, therefore, I
also, since I have investigated all these events with great care from
their very beginning, have resolved to write a connected history of
them for you, 4 In order that you may be able to satisfy yourself
of the accuracy of the story which you have heard from the lips of
others.]

5 In the reign of Herod, King of Judea, there was a priest
named Zechariah, who belonged to the Division called after Abijah.
His wife, whose name was Elizabeth, was also a descendant of
Aaron. 6 They were both righteous people, who lived blameless lives,
guiding their steps by all the commandments and ordinances of the
Lord. 7 But they had no child, Elizabeth being barren; and both
of them were advanced in years. 8 One day, when Zechariah was
officiating as priest before God, during the turn of his Division, 9 It
fell to him by lot, in accordance with the practice among the priests,
to go into the Temple of the Lord and burn incense; 10 And, as it
was the Hour of Incense, the people were all praying outside. 11 And
an angel of the Lord appeared to him, standing on the right of the
Altar of Incense. 12 Zechariah was startled at the sight and was awe-
struck. 13 But the angel said to him: "Do not be afraid, Zechariah;
your prayer has been heard, and your wife Elizabeth shall bear you
a son, whom you shall call by the name John. 14 He shall be to you
a joy and a delight; and many shall rejoice over his birth. 15 For he
shall be great in the sight of the Lord; he shall not drink any wine
or strong drink, and he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit from the
very hour of his birth, 16 And shall reconcile many of the Israelites
to the Lord their God. 17 He shall go before him in the spirit and
with the power of Elijah, 'to reconcile fathers to their children' and
the disobedient to the wisdom of the righteous, and so make ready
for the Lord a people prepared for him." 18 "How can I be sure of

this?" Zechariah asked the angel. "For I am an old man and my wife
is advanced in years." [19] "I am Gabriel," the angel answered, "who
stand in the presence of God, and I have been sent to speak to you
and to bring you this good news. [20] And now you shall be silent and
unable to speak until the day when this takes place, because you
did not believe what I said, though my words will be fulfilled in
due course." [21] Meanwhile the people were watching for Zechariah,
wondering at his remaining so long in the Temple. [22] When he came
out, he was unable to speak to them, and they perceived that he had
seen a vision there. But Zechariah kept making signs to them, and
remained dumb. [23] And, as soon as his term of service was finished,
he returned home. [24] After this his wife, Elizabeth, expecting to
become a mother, lived in seclusion for five months. [25] "This is what
the Lord has done for me," she said, "now that he has deigned to
take away the reproach under which I have been living."

[26] Six months later the angel Gabriel was sent from God to
a town in Galilee called Nazareth, [27] To a maiden there who was
betrothed to a man named Joseph, a descendant of David. Her
name was Mary. [28] Gabriel came into her presence and said: "Hail,
you who have been highly favoured! The Lord is with you." [29] Mary
was much disturbed at his words, and was wondering to herself
what such a greeting could mean, [30] When the angel spoke again:
"Do not be afraid, Mary, for you have found favour with God. [31]
And now, you shall be with child and give birth to a son, and you
shall give him the name Jesus. [32] The child shall be great and shall
be called 'Son of the Most High,' and the Lord God will give him
the throne of his ancestor David, [33] And he shall reign over the
descendants of Jacob for ever; And to his kingdom there shall be
no end." [34] "How can this be?" Mary asked the angel. "For I have no
husband." [35] "The Holy Spirit shall descend upon you," answered
the angel, "and the Power of the Most High shall overshadow you;
and therefore the child will be called 'holy,' and 'Son of God.' [36] And
Elizabeth, your cousin, is herself also expecting a son in her old age;
and it is now the sixth month with her, though she is called barren;
[37] For no promise from God shall fail to be fulfilled." [38] "I am the
servant of the Lord," exclaimed Mary; "let it be with me as you have
said." Then the angel left her.

[39] Soon after this Mary set out, and made her way quickly
into the hill-country, to a town in Judah; [40] And there she went into

Zechariah's house and greeted Elizabeth. [41] When Elizabeth heard
Mary's greeting, the child moved within her, and Elizabeth herself
was filled with the Holy Spirit, [42] And cried aloud: "Blessed are you
among women, and blessed is your unborn child! [43] But how have
I this honour, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? [44]
For, as soon as your greeting reached my ears, the child moved
within me with delight! [45] Happy indeed is she who believed that
the promise which she received from the Lord would be fulfilled." [46]
And Mary said: "My soul exalts the Lord, [47] My spirit delights in God
my Saviour; [48] For he has remembered his servant in her lowliness;
And from this hour all ages will count me happy! [49] Great things has
the Almighty done for me; And holy is his name. [50] From age to age
his mercy rests On those who reverence him. [51] Mighty are the deeds
of his arm; He scatters the proud with their own devices, [52] He casts
down princes from their thrones, and the lowly he uplifts, [53] The
hungry he loads with gifts, and the rich he sends empty away. [54] He
has stretched out his hand to his servant Israel, Ever mindful of his
mercy [55] (As he promised to our forefathers) For Abraham and his
race for ever." [56] Mary stayed with Elizabeth about three months,
and then returned to her home.

[57] When Elizabeth's time came, she gave birth to a son; [58]
And her neighbours and relations, hearing of the great goodness of
the Lord to her, came to share her joy. [59] A week later they met to
circumcise the child, and were about to call him 'Zechariah' after
his father, [60] When his mother interposed: "No, he is to be called
John." [61] "You have no relation of that name!" they exclaimed;
[62] And they made signs to the child's father, to find out what he
wished the child to be called. [63] Asking for a writing-tablet, he
wrote the words—'His name is John.' Every one was surprised; [64]
And immediately Zechariah recovered his voice and the use of his
tongue, and began to bless God. [65] All their neighbours were awe-
struck at this; and throughout the hill-country of Judea the whole
story was much talked about; [66] And all who heard it kept it in mind,
asking one another—"What can this child be destined to become?"
For the Power of the Lord was with him.

[67] Then his father Zechariah was filled with the Holy Spirit,
and, speaking under inspiration, said: [68] "Blessed is the Lord,
the God of Israel, Who has visited his people and wrought their
deliverance, [69] And has raised up for us the Strength of our Salvation

In the House of his servant David— [70] As he promised by the lips of his Holy Prophets of old— [71] Salvation from our enemies and from the hands of all that hate us, [72] Showing mercy to our forefathers, And mindful of his sacred Covenant. [73] This was the oath which he swore to our forefather Abraham— [74] That we should be rescued from the hands of our enemies, [75] And should serve him without fear in holiness and righteousness, In his presence all our days. [76] And thou, Child, shalt be called Prophet of the Most High, For thou shalt go before the Lord to make ready his way, [77] To give his people the knowledge of salvation In the forgiveness of their sins, [78] Through the tender mercy of our God, Whereby the Dawn will break on us from Heaven, [79] To give light to those who dwell in darkness and the shadow of death, And guide our feet into the way of peace." [80] The child grew and became strong in spirit; and he lived in the Wilds till the time came for his appearance before Israel.

Chapter 2

[1] About that time an edict was issued by the Emperor Augustus that a census should be taken of the whole Empire. [2] (This was the first census taken while Quirinius was Governor of Syria). [3] And every one went to his own town to be registered. [4] Among others Joseph went up from the town of Nazareth in Galilee to Bethlehem, the town of David, in Judea—because he belonged to the family and house of David— [5] To be registered with Mary, his betrothed wife, who was about to become a mother. [6] While they were there her time came, [7] And she gave birth to her first child, a son. And because there was no room for them in the inn, she swathed him round and laid him in a manger.

[8] In that same country-side were shepherds out in the open fields, watching their flocks that night, [9] When an angel of the Lord suddenly stood by them, and the Glory of the Lord shone around them; and they were seized with fear. [10] "Have no fear," the angel said. "For I bring you good news of a great joy in store for all the nation. [11] This day there has been born to you, in the town of David, a Saviour, who is Christ and Lord. [12] And this shall be the sign for you. You will find the infant swathed, and lying in a manger." [13] Then suddenly there appeared with the angel a multitude of the heavenly Host, praising God, and singing— [14] "Glory to God on high, And on earth peace among men in whom he finds pleasure." [15]

Now, when the angels had left them and gone back to Heaven, the shepherds said to one another: "Let us go at once to Bethlehem, and see this thing that has happened, of which the Lord has told us." [16] So they went quickly, and found Mary and Joseph, and the infant lying in a manger; [17] And, when they saw it, they told of all that had been said to them about this child. [18] All who heard the shepherds were astonished at their story, [19] While Mary treasured up all that they said, and dwelt upon it in her thoughts. [20] And the shepherds went back, giving glory and praise to God for all that they had heard and seen, as it had been told them.

[21] Eight days after the birth of the child, when it was time to circumcise him, he received the name Jesus—the name given him by the angel before his conception. [22] When the period of purification of mother and child, enjoined by the Law of Moses, came to an end, his parents took the child up to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord, [23] In compliance with the Law of the Lord that 'every first-born male shall be dedicated to the Lord,' [24] And also to offer the sacrifice enjoined in the Law of the Lord—'a pair of turtle-doves or two young pigeons.'

[25] There was at that time in Jerusalem a man named Simeon, a righteous and devout man, who lived in constant expectation of the Consolation of Israel, and under the guidance of the Holy Spirit. [26] It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he should not die until he had seen the Lord's Christ. [27] Moved by the Spirit, Simeon came into the Temple Courts, and, when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him what was customary under the Law, [28] Simeon himself took the child in his arms, and blessed God, and said: [29] "Now, Lord, thou wilt let thy servant go, According to thy word, in peace, [30] For my eyes have seen the Salvation [31] Which thou hast prepared in the sight of all nations— [32] A Light to bring light to the Gentiles, And to be the Glory of thy people Israel." [33] While the child's father and mother were wondering at what was said about him, [34] Simeon gave them his blessing, and said to Mary, the child's mother: "This child is appointed to be the cause of the fall and rise of many in Israel, and to be a sign much spoken against— [35] Yes, the sword will pierce your own heart—and so the thoughts in many minds will be disclosed." [36] There was also a Prophetess named Hannah, a daughter of Phanuel and of the tribe of Asher. She was far advanced in years, having lived with her husband for seven

years after marriage, 37 And then a widow, till she had reached the age of eighty-four. She never left the Temple Courts, but, fasting and praying, worshiped God night and day. 38 At that moment she came up, and began publicly to thank God and to speak about the child to all who were looking for the deliverance of Jerusalem. 39 When the child's parents had done everything enjoined by the Law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee to their own town of Nazareth. 40 The child grew and became strong and wise, and the blessing of God was upon him.

41 Every year the child's parents used to go to Jerusalem at the Passover Festival. 42 When Jesus was twelve years old, they went according to custom to Jerusalem, 43 And had finished their visit; but, when they started to return, the boy Jesus remained behind in Jerusalem, without their knowing it. 44 Thinking that he was with their fellow-travellers, they went one day's journey before searching for him among their relations and acquaintances; 45 And then, as they did not find him, they returned to Jerusalem, searching everywhere for him. 46 It was not till the third day that they found him in the Temple Courts, sitting among the Teachers, now listening to them, now asking them questions. 47 All who listened to him marvelled at his intelligence and his answers. 48 His parents were amazed when they saw him, and his mother said to him: "My child, why have you treated us like this? Your father and I have been searching for you in great distress." 49 "What made you search for me?" he answered. "Did not you know that I must be in my Father's House?" 50 His parents did not understand what he meant. 51 However he went down with them to Nazareth, and submitted himself to their control; and his mother treasured all that was said in her heart. 52 And Jesus grew in wisdom as he grew in years, and 'gained the blessing of God and men.'

Chapter 3

1 In the fifteenth year of the reign of the Emperor Tiberius, when Pontius Pilate was Governor of Judea, Herod Ruler of Galilee, his brother Philip Ruler of the territory comprising Ituraea and Trachonitis, and Lysanias Ruler of Abilene, 2 And when Annas and Caiaphas were High Priests, a Command from God came to John, the son of Zechariah, while he was in the wilderness. 3 And John went through the whole district of the Jordan, proclaiming

baptism upon repentance, for the forgiveness of sins. 4 This was in fulfilment of what is said in the writings of the Prophet Isaiah—'The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness: "Make ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight. 5 Every chasm shall be filled, Every mountain and hill shall be levelled, The winding ways shall be straightened, The rough roads made smooth, 6 And all mankind shall see the Salvation of God."' 7 And John said to the crowds that went to be baptized by him: "You brood of vipers! who has prompted you to seek refuge from the coming judgement? 8 Let your lives, then, prove your repentance; and do not begin to say among yourselves 'Abraham is our ancestor,' for I tell you that out of these very stones God is able to raise descendants for Abraham! 9 Already, indeed, the axe is lying at the root of the trees. Therefore every tree that fails to bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire." 10 "What are we to do then?" the people asked. 11 "Let the man who has two coats," answered John, "share with him who has none; and the man who has food do the same." 12 Even tax-gatherers came to be baptized, and said to John: "Teacher, what are we to do?" 13 "Do not collect more than you have authority to demand," John answered. 14 And when some soldiers on active service asked "And we—what are we to do?" he said: "Never use violence, or exact anything by false accusation; and be content with your pay."

15 Then, while the people were in suspense, and were all debating with themselves whether John could be the Christ, 16 John, addressing them all, said: "I, indeed, baptize you with water; but there is coming one more powerful than I, and I am not fit even to unfasten his sandals. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire. 17 His winnowing-fan is in his hand, that he may clear his threshing-floor, and store the grain in his barn, but the chaff he will burn with inextinguishable fire." 18 And so with many different exhortations John told his Good News to the people. 19 But Prince Herod, being rebuked by John respecting Herodias, the wife of Herod's brother, and for all the evil things that he had done, 20 Crowned them all by shutting John up in prison.

21 Now after the baptism of all the people, and when Jesus had been baptized and was still praying, the heavens opened, 22 And the Holy Spirit descended, in a visible form, like a dove, upon him, and from the heavens came a voice—"Thou art my Son, the Beloved; in thee I delight." 23 When beginning his work, Jesus was

about thirty years old. He was regarded as the son of Joseph, whose ancestors were—Eli, [24] Mattith, Levi, Melchiah, Janna, Joseph, [25] Mattithiah, Amos, Nahum, Azaliah, Nogah, [26] Mattith, Mattithiah, Shimei, Joseph, Josheh, [27] Johanan, Rhesa, Zerubbabel, Shealtiel, Neriah, [28] Melchiah, Addi, Cosam, Elmodam, Er, [29] Joshua, Eliezer, Joram, Mattith, Levi, [30] Simeon, Judah, Joseph, Jonam, Eliakim, [31] Meleah, Menan, Mattithiah, Nathan, David, [32] Jesse, Obed, Boaz, Salah, Nahshon, [33] Amminadab, Arni, Hezron, Perez, Judah, [34] Jacob, Isaac, Abraham, Terah, Nahor, [35] Serug, Reu, Peleg, Eber, Shelah, [36] Kenan, Arpachshad, Shem, Noah, Lamech, [37] Methuselah, Enoch, Jared, Mahalalel, Kenan, [38] Enosh, Seth and Adam the son of GOD.

Chapter 4

[1] On returning from the Jordan, full of the Holy Spirit, Jesus was led by the power of the Spirit through the Wilderness for forty days, tempted by the Devil. [2] All that time he ate nothing; and, when it was over, he became hungry. [3] So the Devil said to him: "If you are God's Son, tell this stone to become a loaf of bread." [4] And Jesus answered him: "Scripture says—'It is not on bread alone that man is to live.'" [5] And the Devil led Jesus up, and showing him in a single moment all the kingdoms of the earth, said to him: [6] "I will give you all this power, and the splendour of them; for it has been given into my hands and I give it to whom I wish. [7] If you, therefore, will do homage before me, it shall all be yours." [8] And Jesus answered him: "Scripture says—'Thou shalt do homage to the Lord thy God, and worship him only.'" [9] The Devil next led him into Jerusalem, and, placing him on the parapet of the Temple, said: "If you are God's Son throw yourself down from here, [10] For Scripture says—'He will give his angels commands about thee, to guard thee safely,' [11] And 'On their hands they will upbear thee, Lest ever thou shouldst strike thy foot against a stone.'" [12] But Jesus answered him: "It is said—'Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.'" [13] When he had tried every kind of temptation, the Devil left Jesus, till another opportunity.

[14] Moved by the power of the Spirit, Jesus returned to Galilee. Reports about him spread through all that neighbourhood; [15] And he began to teach in their Synagogues, and was honoured by every one. [16] Coming to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, Jesus, as was his custom, went on the Sabbath into the Synagogue,

and stood up to read the Scriptures. [17] The book given him was that of the Prophet Isaiah; and Jesus opened the book and found the place where it says— [18] 'The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, For he has consecrated me to bring Good News to the poor, He has sent me to proclaim release to captives and restoration of sight to the blind, To set the oppressed at liberty, [19] To proclaim the accepted year of the Lord.' [20] Then, closing the book and returning it to the attendant, he sat down. The eyes of all in the Synagogue were fixed upon him, [21] And Jesus began: "This very day this passage has been fulfilled in your hearing." [22] All who were present spoke well of him, and were astonished at the beautiful words that fell from his lips. "Is not he Joseph's son?" they asked. [23] "Doubtless," said Jesus, "you will remind me of the saying—'Doctor, cure yourself;' and you will say 'Do here in your own country all that we have heard that has been done at Capernaum.' [24] I tell you," he continued, "that no Prophet is acceptable in his own country. [25] There were, doubtless, many widows in Israel in Elijah's days, when the heavens were closed for three years and six months, and a severe famine prevailed throughout the country; [26] And yet it was not to one of them that Elijah was sent, but to a widow at Zarephath in Sidonia. [27] And there were many lepers in Israel in the time of the Prophet Elisha, yet it was not one of them who was made clean, but Naaman the Syrian." [28] All the people in the Synagogue, as they listened to this, became enraged. [29] Starting up, they drove Jesus out of the town, and led him to the brow of the hill on which their town stood, intending to hurl him down. [30] But he passed through the middle of the crowd and went on his way.

[31] Then Jesus went down to Capernaum, a city in Galilee. On the Sabbath he taught the people. [32] They were amazed at his teaching, because his words were spoken with authority. [33] In the Synagogue there was a man with the spirit of a foul demon in him, who called out loudly: [34] "Stop! What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are—the Holy One of God!" [35] But Jesus rebuked the demon. "Be silent! Come out from him," he said. The demon flung the man down in the middle of the people, and then came out from him, without causing him further harm. [36] And they were all lost in amazement, and kept saying to one another: "What words are these? For he gives his commands to the foul spirits with a marvellous authority,

and they come out." [37] And rumours about Jesus travelled through every place in the neighbourhood. [38] On leaving the Synagogue, Jesus went into Simon's house. Now Simon's mother-in-law was suffering from a severe attack of fever, and they asked Jesus to cure her. [39] Bending over her, he rebuked the fever; the fever left her, and she immediately got up and began to wait upon them. [40] At sunset, all who had friends suffering from various diseases took them to Jesus; and he placed his hands upon every one of them and cured them. [41] And even demons came out from many people, screaming 'You are the Son of God.' Jesus rebuked them, and would not allow them to speak, because they knew that he was the Christ. [42] At daybreak, Jesus went out and walked to a lonely spot. But crowds of people began to look for him; and they came to where he was and tried to detain him and prevent his leaving them. [43] Jesus, however, said to them: "I must take the Good News of the Kingdom of God to the other town also, for that was why I was sent." [44] And he continued to make his proclamation in the Synagogues of Judea.

Chapter 5

[1] Once, when the people were pressing round Jesus as the listened to God's Message, he happened to be standing by the shore of the Lake of Gennesaret, and saw two boats close to the shore. [2] The fishermen had gone away from them and were washing the nets. [3] So, getting into one of the boats, which belonged to Simon, Jesus asked him to push off a little way from the shore, and then sat down and taught the people from the boat. [4] When he had finished speaking, he said to Simon: "Push off into deep water, and throw out your nets for a haul." [5] "We have been hard at work all night, Sir," answered Simon, "and have not caught anything, but, at your bidding, I will throw out the nets." [6] They did so, and enclosed such a great shoal of fish that their nets began to break. [7] So they signalled to their partners in the other boat to come and help them; and they came and filled both the boats so full of fish that they were almost sinking. [8] When Simon Peter saw this, he threw himself down at Jesus' knees, exclaiming: "Master, leave me, for I am a sinful man!" [9] For he and all who were with him were lost in amazement at the haul of fish which they had made; [10] And so, too, were James and John, Zebediah's sons, who were Simon's partners. "Do not be afraid," Jesus said to Simon; "from to-day you shall catch

men." [11] And, when they had brought their boats to shore, they left everything, and followed him.

[12] On one occasion Jesus was staying in a town, when he saw a man who was covered with leprosy. When the leper saw Jesus, he threw himself on his face and implored his help: "Master, if only you are willing, you are able to make me clean." [13] Stretching out his hand, Jesus touched him, saying as he did so: "I am willing; become clean." Instantly the leprosy left the man; [14] And then Jesus impressed upon him that he was not to say a word to any one, "but," he added, "set out and show yourself to the priest, and make the offerings for your cleansing, in the manner directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure." [15] However, the story about Jesus spread all the more, and great crowds came together to listen to him, and to be cured of their illnesses; [16] But Jesus used to withdraw to lonely places and pray.

[17] On one of those days, when Jesus was teaching, some Pharisees and Doctors of the Law were sitting near by. (They had come from all the villages in Galilee and Judea, and from Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was upon Jesus, so that he could work cures.) [18] And there some men brought on a bed a man who was paralyzed. They tried to get him in and lay him before Jesus; [19] But, finding no way of getting him in owing to the crowd, they went up on the roof and lowered him through the tiles, with his pallet, into the middle of the people and in front of Jesus. [20] When he saw their faith, Jesus said: "Friend, your sins have been forgiven you." [21] The Teachers of the Law and the Pharisees began debating about this. "Who is this man who speaks so blasphemously?" they asked. "Who can forgive sins except God?" [22] When Jesus became aware of the way in which they were debating, he turned to them and exclaimed: "What are you debating with yourselves? [23] Which is the easier?—to say 'Your sins have been forgiven you'? or to say 'Get up, and walk about'? [24] But that you may know that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins"—here he spoke to the paralyzed man—"To you I say, Get up, and take up your pallet, and go to your home." [25] Instantly the man stood up before their eyes, took up what he had been lying on, and went to his home, praising God. [26] The people, one and all, were lost in amazement, and praised God; and in great awe they said: "We have seen marvellous things to-day!"

[27] After this, Jesus went out; and he noticed a tax-gatherer,

named Levi, sitting in the tax-office, and said to him: “Follow me.”
28 Levi left everything and got up and followed him. 29 And Levi
gave a great entertainment at his house, in honour of Jesus; and a
large number of tax-gatherers and others were at table with them.
30 The Pharisees and the teachers of the Law belonging to their
party complained of this to the disciples of Jesus. 31 In answer Jesus
said: “It is not those who are well that need a doctor, but those who
are ill. 32 I have not come to call the religious, but the outcast, to
repent.” 33 “John’s disciples,” they said to Jesus, “Often fast and say
prayers, and so do the disciples of the Pharisees, while yours are
eating and drinking!” 34 But Jesus answered them: “Can you make
the bridegroom’s friends fast while the bridegroom is with them? 35
But the days will come—a time when the bridegroom will be parted
from them; and they will fast then, when those days come.” 36 Then,
as an illustration, Jesus said to them: “No man ever tears a piece
from a new garment and puts it upon an old one; for, if he does, he
will not only tear the new garment, but the piece from the new one
will not match the old. 37 And no man puts new wine into old wine-
skins; for, if he does, the new wine will burst the skins, and the wine
itself will run out, and the skins be lost. 38 But new wine must be put
into fresh skins. 39 No man after drinking old wine wishes for new.
‘No,’ he says, ‘the old is excellent.’”

Chapter 6

1 One Sabbath Jesus was walking through cornfields, and
hi disciples were picking the ears of wheat, and rubbing them in
their hands, and eating them. 2 “Why are you doing what it is not
allowable to do on the Sabbath?” asked some of the Pharisees. 3
Jesus’ answer was: “Have not you read even of what David did,
when he was hungry, he and his companions— 4 That he went into
the House of God, and took the consecrated bread and ate it, and
gave some to his companions, though only the priests are allowed
to eat it?” 5 Then Jesus added: “The Son of Man is lord even of the
Sabbath.” 6 On another Sabbath Jesus went into the Synagogue and
taught; and there was a man there whose right hand was withered.
7 The Teachers of the Law and the Pharisees watched Jesus closely,
to see if he would work cures on the Sabbath, so that they might
find a charge to bring against him. 8 Jesus, however, knew what was
in the their minds, and said to the man whose hand was withered:

“Stand up and come out into the middle.” The man stood up; 9 And
Jesus said to them: “I ask you, is it allowable to do good on the
Sabbath—or harm? to save a life, or let it perish?” 10 Then, looking
round at them all, he said to the man: “Stretch out your hand.” The
man did so; and his hand had become sound. 11 But the Teachers of
the Law and the Pharisees were goaded to madness, and consulted
together what they could do to Jesus.

12 Now about that time, Jesus went out, up the hill, to pray,
and spent the whole night in prayer to God. 13 When day came, he
summoned his disciples, and chose twelve of them, whom he also
named ‘Apostles.’ 14 They were Simon (whom Jesus also named
Peter), and his brother Andrew, James, John, Philip, Bartholomew,
15 Matthew, Thomas, James son of Alphaeus, Simon known as the
Zealot, 16 Judas son of James, and Judas Iscariot, who proved a
traitor. 17 Afterwards Jesus came down the hill with them and
took his stand on a level place. With him were a large crowd of his
disciples, and great numbers of people from the whole of Judea,
Jerusalem, and the coast district of Tyre and Sidon, 18 Who had
come to hear him and to be restored to health. Those, too, who were
troubled with foul spirits were cured; 19 And every one in the crowd
was trying to touch him, because a power went out from him which
restored them all.

20 Then, raising his eyes and looking at his disciples, Jesus
spoke as follows: “Blessed are you who are poor, for yours is the
Kingdom of God. 21 Blessed are you who hunger now, for you shall
be satisfied. Blessed are you who weep now, for you shall laugh.
22 Blessed are you when men hate you, and when they expel you
from among them, and taunt you, and reject your Name as an evil
thing—on account of the Son of Man. 23 Then indeed you may be
glad and dance for joy, for be sure that your reward in Heaven will
be great; for that is what their ancestors did to the Prophets. 24 But
‘alas for you who are rich,’ for you have had your comforts in full.
25 Alas for you who are sated now, for you will hunger. Alas for you
who laugh now, for you will mourn and weep. 26 Alas for you when
all men speak well of you; for this is what their ancestors did to the
false Prophets.

27 But to you who hear I say—Love your enemies, show
kindness to those who hate you, 28 Bless those who curse you, pray
for those who insult you. 29 When a man gives one of you a blow on

the cheek, offer the other cheek as well; and, when any one takes away your cloak, do not keep back your coat either. 30 Give to every one who asks of you; and, when any one takes away what is yours, do not demand its return. 31 Do to others as you wish them to do to you. 32 If you love only those who love you, what thanks will be due to you? Why, even the outcast love those who love them! 33 For, if you show kindness only to those who show kindness to you, what thanks will be due to you? Even the outcast do that! 34 If you lend only to those from whom you expect to get something, what thanks will be due to you? Even the outcast lend to the outcast in the hope of getting as much in return! 35 But love your enemies, and show them kindness, and lend to them, never despairing. Then your reward shall be great, and you shall be Sons of the Most High, for he is kind to the thankless and the bad. 36 Learn to be merciful—even as your Father is merciful.

37 Do not judge, and you will not be judged; do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive, and you will be forgiven. 38 Give, and others will give to you. A generous measure, pressed and shaken down, and running over, will they pour into your lap; For the measure that you mete will be meted out to you in return." 39 Then, speaking in parables, Jesus said: "Can one blind man guide another? Will they not both fall into a ditch? 40 A scholar is not above his teacher; yet every finished scholar shall be like his teacher. 41 And why do you look at the straw in your brother's eye, while you pay no attention at all to the beam in your own? 42 How can you say to your brother 'Brother, let me take out the straw in your eye,' while you yourself do not see the beam in your own? Hypocrite! Take out the beam from your own eye first, and then you will see clearly how to take out the straw in your brother's. 43 There is no such thing as a good tree bearing worthless fruit, or, on the other hand, a worthless tree bearing good fruit. 44 For every tree is known by its own fruit. People do not gather figs off thorn bushes, nor pick a bunch of grapes off a bramble. 45 A good man, from the good stores of his heart, brings out what is good; while a bad man, from his bad stores, brings out what is bad. For what fills a man's heart will rise to his lips. 46 Why do you call me 'Master! Master!' and yet fail to do what I tell you? 47 Every one who comes to me and listens to my teaching and acts upon it—I will show you to whom he may be compared. 48 He may be compared to a man

building a house, who dug, and went deep, and laid the foundation upon the rock. Then, when a flood came, the river swept down upon that house, but had no power to shake it, because it had been built well. 49 But those who have listened and not acted upon what they have heard may be compared to a man who built a house on the ground without any foundation. The river swept down upon it, and the house immediately collapsed; and great was the crash that followed."

Chapter 7

1 When Jesus had brought to a conclusion all that he had then had to say to the people, he entered Capernaum. 2 A Captain in the Roman army had a slave whom he valued, and who was seriously ill—almost at the point of death. 3 And, hearing about Jesus, he sent some Jewish Councillors to him, with the request that he would come and save his slave's life. 4 When they found Jesus, they earnestly implored him to do so. "He is a man who deserves that you should show him this favour," they said, 5 "For he is devoted to our nation, and himself built our Synagogue for us." 6 So Jesus went with them. But, when he was no great distance from the house, the Captain sent some friends with the message—"Do not trouble yourself, Sir; for I am unworthy to receive you under my roof. 7 That was why I did not even venture to come to you myself; but speak, and let my manservant be cured. 8 For I myself am a man under the orders of others, with soldiers under me; and if I say to one of them 'Go,' he goes, and to another 'Come,' he comes, and to my slave 'Do this,' he does it." 9 Jesus was surprised to hear these words from him; and, turning to the crowd which was following him, he said: "I tell you, nowhere in Israel have I met with such faith as this!" 10 And, when the messengers returned to the house, they found the slave recovered.

11 Shortly after, Jesus went to a town called Nain, his disciples and a great crowd going with him. 12 Just as he approached the gate of the town, there was a dead man being carried out for burial—an only son, and his mother was a widow. A large number of the people of the town were with her. 13 When he saw her, the Master was moved with compassion for her, and he said to her: "Do not weep." 14 Then he went up and touched the bier, and the bearers stopped; and Jesus said: "Young man, I am speaking to you—Rise!"

15 The dead man sat up and began to talk, and Jesus restored him to
his mother. 16 Every one was awe-struck and began praising God. "A
great Prophet has arisen among us," they said; "and God has visited
his people." 17 And this story about Jesus spread all through Judea,
and in the neighbouring countries as well. 18 All these events were
reported to John by his disciples.

19 So he summoned two of them, and sent them to the Master
to ask—"Are you 'The Coming One,' or are we to look for some one
else?" 20 When these men found Jesus, they said: "John the Baptist
has sent us to you to ask—'Are you 'The Coming One,' or are we to
look for somebody else?'" 21 At that very time Jesus had cured many
people of diseases, afflictions, and wicked spirits, and had given
many blind people their sight. 22 So his answer to the question was:
"Go and report to John what you have witnessed and heard—the
blind recover their sight, the lame walk, the lepers are made clean,
and the deaf hear, the dead are raised to life, the Good News is told
to the poor. 23 And blessed is the man who finds no hindrance in
me." 24 When John's messengers had left, Jesus, speaking to the
crowds, began to say with reference to John: 25 "What did you go
out into the Wilderness to look at? A reed waving in the wind? If
not, what did you go out to see? A man dressed in rich clothing?
Why, those who are accustomed to fine clothes and luxury live in
royal palaces. 26 What then did you go to see? A Prophet? Yes, I tell
you, and far more than a Prophet. 27 This is the very man of whom
Scripture says—'Behold, I am sending my Messenger before thy
face, And he shall prepare thy way before thee.' 28 There is, I tell
you, no one born of a woman who is greater than John; and yet
the lowliest in the Kingdom of God is greater than he." 29 (All the
people, when they heard this, and even the tax-gatherers, having
accepted John's baptism, acknowledged the justice of God. 30 But
the Pharisees and the Students of the Law, having rejected John's
baptism, frustrated God's purpose in regard to them.) 31 "To what
then," Jesus continued, "shall I compare the people of the present
generation? What are they like? 32 They are like some little children
who are sitting in the market-place and calling out to one another—
'We have played the flute for you, but you have not danced; We have
wailed, but you have not wept!' 33 For now that John the Baptist
has come, not eating bread or drinking wine, you are saying 'He
has a demon in him'; 34 And now that the Son of Man has come,

eating and drinking, you are saying 'Here is a glutton and a wine-
drinker, a friend of tax-gatherers and outcasts.' 35 And yet Wisdom
is vindicated by all her children."

36 One of the Pharisees asked Jesus to dine with him, so
Jesus went to his house and took his place at table. 37 Just then a
woman, who was an outcast in the town, having ascertained that
Jesus was at table in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster
jar of perfume, 38 And placed herself behind Jesus, near his feet,
weeping. Then she began to make his feet wet with her tears, and
she dried them with the hair of her head, repeatedly kissing his
feet and anointing them with the perfume. 39 When the Pharisee
who had invited Jesus saw this, he said to himself: "Had this man
been 'The Prophet,' he would have known who, and what sort of
woman, this is who is touching him, and that she is an outcast." 40
But, addressing him, Jesus said: "Simon, I have something to say
to you." "Pray do so, Teacher," Simon answered; and Jesus began:
41 "There were two people who were in debt to a money-lender; one
owed fifty pounds, and the other five. 42 As they were unable to pay,
he forgave them both. Which of them, do you think, will love him
the more?" 43 "I suppose," answered Simon, "it will be the man to
whom he forgave the greater debt." "You are right," said Jesus, 44
And then, turning to the woman, he said to Simon: "Do you see this
woman? I came into your house—you gave me no water for my feet,
but she has made my feet wet with her tears and dried them with
her hair. 45 You did not give me one kiss, but she, from the moment
I came in, has not ceased to kiss my feet. 46 You did not anoint even
my head with oil, but she has anointed my feet with perfume. 47 And
for this, I tell you, her sins, many as they are, have been pardoned,
because she has loved greatly; but one who has little pardoned him,
loves but little." 48 Then he said to the woman: "Your sins have been
pardoned." 49 On this, those at table began to say to one another:
"Who is this man who even pardons sins?" 50 But Jesus said to the
woman: "Your faith has delivered you; go, and peace be with you."

Chapter 8

1 Shortly afterwards, Jesus went on a journey through the
towns and villages, proclaiming the Good News of the Kingdom of
God. With him went the Twelve, 2 As well as some women who had
been cured of wicked spirits and of infirmities. They were Mary,

known as Mary of Magdala (from whom seven demons had been expelled), 3 And Joanna (the wife of Herod's steward, Chuza), and Susannah, and many others—all of whom ministered to Jesus and his Apostles out of their means.

4 Once, when a great crowd was collecting, and, when the people of town after town were flocking to Jesus, he spoke to them in the form of a parable: 5 "The sower went out to sow his seed; and, as he was sowing, some of the seed fell along the path and was trodden upon; and the wild birds ate it up. 6 Other seed fell upon rock, and, as soon as it began to grow, having no moisture, withered away. 7 Other seed fell in the middle of brambles, but the brambles grew up with it and choked it entirely. 8 Other seed fell into rich soil, and grew, and gave a hundred-fold return." After saying this, Jesus cried aloud: "Let him who has ears to hear with hear." 9 His disciples asked Jesus the meaning of this parable. 10 "To you," he said, "the knowledge of the hidden truths of the Kingdom of God has been imparted, but to others in parables only, that 'though they have eyes they may not see, and though they have ears, they may not understand.' 11 This is the parable—The seed is God's Message. 12 By the seed which fell along the path are meant those who hear the Message; but then comes the Devil and carries away the Message from their minds, to prevent their believing it and being saved. 13 By the seed which fell upon the rock are meant those who, as soon as they hear the Message, welcome it joyfully; but they have no root, and believe it only for a time, and, when the time of temptation comes, they draw back. 14 By that which fell among the brambles are meant those who hear the Message, but who, as they go on their way, are completely choked by this world's cares and wealth and pleasures, and bring nothing to perfection. 15 But by that in the good ground are meant those who, having heard the Message, keep it in the good, rich soil of their hearts, and patiently yield a return. 16 No man sets light to a lamp and then covers it with a bowl or puts it underneath a couch, but he puts it on a lamp-stand, so that anyone who comes in may see the light. 17 Nothing is hidden which will not be brought into the light of day, not ever kept hidden which will not some day become known and come into the light of day. 18 Take care, then, how you listen. For, to all those who have, more will be given; while, from all those who have nothing, even what they seem to have will be taken away." 19 Presently Jesus' mother and brothers

came where he was, but they were not able to join him on account of the crowd. 20 So word was brought to him—'Your mother and your brothers are standing outside, wanting to see you.' 21 His reply, spoken to them all, was: "My mother and my brothers are those who listen to God's teaching and do what it bids."

22 One day about that time, Jesus got into a boat with his disciples and said to them: "Let us go across the lake." 23 So they put off. While they were sailing, Jesus fell asleep. A squall swept down upon the lake, and their boat was filling and they were in danger. 24 So the disciples came and roused him. "Sir, Sir," they cried, "we are lost!" Jesus rose and rebuked the wind and the rushing waves, and they fell, and a calm followed. 25 "Where is your faith?" he exclaimed. But in great awe and amazement they said to one another: "Who can this be, that he commands even the winds and the waves, and they obey him?" 26 And they reached the country of the Gerasenes, which is on the opposite side to Galilee; 27 And, on getting ashore, Jesus met a man, who had demons in him, coming out of the town. For a long time this man had worn no clothing, and he had not lived in a house, but in the tombs. 28 Catching sight of Jesus, he shrieked out and threw himself down before him, and in a loud voice exclaimed: "What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I beseech you not to torment me." 29 For Jesus was commanding the foul spirit to come out from the man. On many occasions it had seized him, and, even when secured with chains and fetters, and watched, he would break through anything that bound him, and be driven by the demon into the Wilds. 30 "What is your name?" Jesus asked. "Legion," he answered (for many demons had taken possession of him); 31 And the demons begged Jesus not to order them away into the bottomless pit. 32 There was a drove of many pigs close by feeding upon the hill-side; and the demons begged Jesus to give them leave to enter into them. Jesus gave them leave. 33 They came out from the man and took possession of the pigs; and the drove rushed down the steep slope into the lake and were drowned. 34 When the men who tended them saw what had happened, they ran away, and carried the news to the town, and to the country round. 35 The people went out to see what had happened, and, when they came to Jesus, they found the man from whom the demons had gone out, sitting, clothed and in his right mind, at Jesus' feet; and they were awe-struck. 36 Those who had

seen it told them how the possessed man had been delivered; 37 Upon which all the people in the neighbourhood of the Gerasenes asked Jesus to leave them, for they were terrified. Jesus got into a boat and returned. 38 The man from whom the demons had gone out begged Jesus to let him be with him; but Jesus sent him away. 39 "Go back to your home," he said, "and relate the story of all that God has done for you." So the man went through the whole town and proclaimed, as he went, all that Jesus had done for him.

40 On his return, Jesus was welcomed by the people; for everyone was looking out for him. 41 And a man named Jaeirus, who was a President of the Synagogue, came to Jesus, and threw himself at Jesus' feet, with entreaties that he would come to his house, 42 Because his only daughter, who was about twelve years old, was dying. As Jesus was going, the people were pressing closely round him. 43 And a woman, who had suffered from haemorrhage for twelve years, and whom no one could cure, 44 Came up behind and touched the tassel of his cloak. Instantly the haemorrhage ceased. 45 "Who was it that touched me?" Jesus asked; and, while everyone was denying having done so, Peter exclaimed: "Why, Sir, the people are crowding round you and pressing upon you!" 46 "Somebody touched me," said Jesus; "for I felt that power had gone out from me." 47 Then the woman, when she saw that she was discovered, came forward trembling, and threw herself down before him; and, in the presence of all the people, she told him her reason for touching him, and that she had been cured instantly. 48 "Daughter," he said, "your faith has delivered you. Go, and peace be with you." 49 Before he had finished speaking, some one came from the house of the President of the Synagogue and said: "Your daughter is dead! Do not trouble the Teacher further." 50 But Jesus, hearing this, spoke to the President: "Do not be afraid; only have faith, and she shall yet be delivered." 51 When he reached the house, he did not allow any one to go in with him, except Peter, John, and James, and the child's father and mother. 52 And every one was weeping and mourning for her. "Do not weep," Jesus said, "she is not dead; she is asleep." 53 They began to laugh at him, for they knew that she was dead. 54 But, taking her by the hand, Jesus said in a loud voice: "Child, rise!" 55 The child's spirit returned to her, and she instantly stood up; and Jesus ordered them to give her something to eat. 56 Her parents were amazed, but Jesus impressed on them that they

were not to tell any one what had happened.

Chapter 9

1 Jesus called the Twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all demons, as well as to cure diseases. 2 He sent them out as his Messengers, to proclaim the Kingdom of God, and to work cures. 3 "Do not," he said to them, "take anything for your journey; not even a staff, or a bag, or bread, or any silver, or a change of clothes with you. 4 Whatever house you go to stay in, remain there, and leave from that place. 5 If people do not welcome you, as you leave that town, shake even the dust off your feet, as a protest against them." 6 Then they set out and went from village to village, telling the Good News and curing people everywhere. 7 Prince Herod heard of all that was happening, and was perplexed, because it was said by some that John must be risen from the dead. 8 Some again said that Elijah had appeared, and others that one of the old Prophets had risen again. 9 But Herod himself said: "John I beheaded; but who is this of whom I hear such things?" And he endeavoured to see him.

10 When the Apostles returned, they related to Jesus all that they had done. Then Jesus retired privately to a town called Bethsaida, taking the Apostles with him. 11 But the people recognized him and followed him in crowds; and Jesus welcomed them and spoke to them about the Kingdom of God, while he cured those who were in need of help. 12 The day was drawing to a close, when the twelve came up to him, and said: "Send the crowd away, so that they may make their way to the villages and farms round about, and find themselves lodgings and provisions, for we are in a lonely spot here." 13 But Jesus said: "It is for you to give them something to eat." "We have not more than five loaves and two fishes," they answered; "unless indeed we are to go and buy food for all these people." 14 (For the men among them were about five thousand.) "Get them seated in companies," was his reply, "about fifty in each." 15 This they did, and got all the people seated. 16 Taking the five loaves and the two fishes, Jesus looked up to Heaven and said the blessing over them. Then he broke them in pieces, and gave them to his disciples to set before the people. 17 Every one had sufficient to eat, and what was left of the broken pieces was picked up—twelve baskets.

18 Afterwards, when Jesus was alone, praying, his disciples

joined him, and he asked them this question—"Who do the people
say that I am?" 19 "John the Baptist," was their answer; "others,
however, say that you are Elijah, while others say that one of the
old Prophets has risen again." 20 "But you," he went on, "who do you
say that I am?" And to this Peter answered: "The Christ of God." 21
Jesus, however, strictly charged them not to say this to any one; 22
He told them that the Son of Man must undergo much suffering,
and be rejected by the Councillors, and Chief Priests, and Teachers
of the Law, and be put to death, and rise on the third day. 23 And
to all present he said: "If any man wishes to walk in my steps, let
him renounce self, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. 24
For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, and whoever, for my
sake, loses his life—that man shall save it. 25 What good does it do a
man if, when he has gained the whole world, he has lost or forfeited
himself? 26 Whoever is ashamed of me and of my teaching, the Son
of Man will be ashamed of him, when he comes in his Glory and the
Glory of the father and of the holy angels. 27 Indeed, I tell you, some
who are standing before me will not know death, till they have seen
the Kingdom of God."

28 About eight days after speaking these words, Jesus went up
the mountain to pray, taking with him Peter, John, and James. 29 As
he was praying, the aspect of his face was changed, and his clothing
became of a glittering whiteness. 30 And all at once two men were
talking with Jesus; they were Moses and Elijah, 31 Who appeared
in a glorified state, and spoke of his departure, which was destined
to take place at Jerusalem. 32 Peter and his companions had been
overpowered by sleep but, suddenly becoming wide awake, they
saw Jesus glorified and the two men who were standing beside him.
33 And, as Moses and Elijah were passing away from Jesus, Peter
exclaimed: "Sir, it is good to be here; let us make three tents, one
for you, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah." He did not know
what he was saying; 34 And, while he was speaking, a cloud came
down and enveloped them; and they were afraid, as they passed
into the cloud; 35 And from the cloud came a voice which said—"This
is my Son, the Chosen One; him you must hear." 36 And, as the voice
ceased, Jesus was found alone. The Apostles kept silence, and told
no one about any of the things that they had seen.

37 The next day, when they had come down from the
mountain, a great crowd met Jesus. 38 And just then a man in the

crowd shouted out: "Teacher, I entreat you to look at my son, for
he is my only child; 39 All at once a spirit will seize him, suddenly
shriek out, and throw him into convulsions till he foams, and will
leave him only when he is utterly exhausted. 40 I entreated your
disciples to drive the spirit out, but they could not." 41 "O faithless
and perverse generation!" Jesus exclaimed; "how long must I be
with you and have patience with you? Lead your son here." 42 While
the boy was coming up to Jesus, the demon dashed him down and
threw him into convulsions. But Jesus rebuked the foul spirit, and
cured the boy, and gave him back to his father.

43 And all present were struck with awe at the majesty of God.
In the midst of the general astonishment at all that Jesus was doing,
he said to his disciples: 44 "Listen carefully to my words. For the Son
of Man is destined to be betrayed into the hands of his fellow men."
45 But the disciples did not understand the meaning of this; it had
been concealed from them so that they did not see it, and they were
afraid to question him as to what he meant. 46 A discussion arose
among the disciples as to which of them was the greatest; 47 And
Jesus, knowing of the discussion that was occupying their thoughts,
took hold of a little child, and placed it beside him, 48 And then said
to them: "Any one who, for the sake of my Name, welcomes even
this little child is welcoming me; and any one who welcomes me
is welcoming him who sent me as his Messenger. For whoever is
lowliest among you all—that man is great." 49 Thereupon John said:
"Sir, we saw a man driving out demons by using your name, and
we tried to prevent him, because he does not follow you with us." 50
"None of you must prevent him," Jesus said to John; "he who is not
against you is for you."

51 As the days before his being taken up to Heaven were
growing few, Jesus set his face resolutely in the direction of
Jerusalem; and he sent on messengers in advance. 52 On their way,
they went into a Samaritan village to make preparations for him, 53
But the people there did not welcome him, because his face was set
in the direction of Jerusalem. 54 When James and John saw this,
they said: "Master, do you wish us to call for fire to come down from
the heavens and consume them?" 55 But Jesus turned and rebuked
them. 56 And they made their way to another village.

57 And, while they were on their way, a man said to Jesus: "I
will follow you wherever you go." 58 "Foxes have holes," he replied,

"and wild birds their roosting-places, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head." 59 To another man Jesus said: "Follow me." "Let me first go and bury my father," said the man. 60 But Jesus said: "Leave the dead to bury their dead; but go yourself and carry far and wide the news of the Kingdom of God." 61 "Master," said another, "I will follow you; but first let me say good-bye to my family." 62 But Jesus answered: "No one who looks back, after putting his hand to the plough, is fitted for the Kingdom of God."

Chapter 10

1 After this, the Master appointed seventy-two other disciples, and sent them on as his Messengers, two and two, in advance, to every town and place that he was himself intending to visit. 2 "The harvest," he said, "is abundant, but the labourers are few. Therefore pray to the Owner of the harvest to send labourers to gather in his harvest. 3 Now, go. Remember, I am sending you out as my Messengers like lambs among wolves. 4 Do not take a purse with you, or a bag, or sandals; and do not stop to greet any one on your journey. 5 Whatever house you go to stay at, begin by praying for a blessing on it. 6 Then, if any one there is deserving of a blessing, your blessing will rest upon him; but if not, it will come back upon yourselves. 7 Remain at that same house, and eat and drink whatever they offer you; for the worker is worth his wages. Do not keep changing from one house to another. 8 Whatever town you visit, if the people welcome you, eat what is set before you; 9 Cure the sick there, and tell people 'The Kingdom of God is close at hand. 10 But, whatever town you go to visit, if the people do not welcome you, go out into its streets and say 11 'We wipe off the very dust of your town which has clung to Our feet; still, be assured that the Kingdom of God is close at Hand.' 12 I tell you that the doom of Sodom will be more bearable on 'That Day' than the doom of that town. 13 Alas for you, Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida! For, if the Miracles which have been done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have sat in sackcloth and ashes and repented long ago. 14 Yet the doom of Tyre and Sidon will be more bearable at the Judgement than yours. 15 And you, Capernaum! Will you 'exalt yourself to heaven'? 'You shall go down to the Place of Death.' 16 He who listens to you is listening to me, and he who rejects you is rejecting me; while he who rejects me is rejecting him who sent me

as his Messenger."

17 When the seventy-two returned, they exclaimed joyfully: "Master, even the demons submit to us when we use your name." 18 And Jesus replied: "I have had visions of Satan, fallen, like lightning from the heavens. 19 Remember, I have given you the power to 'trample upon serpents and scorpions,' and to meet all the strength of the Enemy. Nothing shall ever harm you in any way. 20 Yet do not rejoice in the fact that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names have been enrolled in Heaven." 21 At that same time, moved to exultation by the Holy Spirit, Jesus said: "I thank thee, Father, Lord of Heaven and earth, that, though thou hast hidden these things from the wise and learned, thou hast revealed them to the childlike! Yes, Father, I thank thee that this has seemed good to thee. 22 Everything has been committed to me by my Father; nor does any one know who the Son is, except the Father, or who the Father is, except the Son and those to whom the Son may choose to reveal him." 23 Then, turning to his disciples, Jesus said to them alone: "Blessed are the eyes that see what you are seeing; 24 For, I tell you, many Prophets and Kings wished for the sight of the things which you are seeing, yet never heard them."

25 Just then a Student of the Law came forward to test Jesus further. "Teacher," he said, "what must I do if I am to 'gain Immortal Life'?" 26 "What is said in the Law?" answered Jesus. "What do you read there?" 27 His reply was—"'Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thou dost thyself.'" 28 "You have answered right," said Jesus; "do that, and you shall live." 29 But the man, wanting to justify himself, said to Jesus: "And who is my neighbour?" 30 To which Jesus replied: "A man was once going down from Jerusalem to Jericho when he fell into the hands of robbers, who stripped him of everything, and beat him, and went away leaving him half dead. 31 As it chanced, a priest was going down by that road. He saw the man, but passed by on the opposite side. 32 A Levite, too, did the same; he came up to the spot, but, when he saw the man, passed by on the opposite side. 33 But a Samaritan, travelling that way, came upon the man, and, when he saw him, he was moved with compassion. 34 He went to him and bound up his wounds, dressing them with oil and wine, and then put him on his own mule, and brought him to an inn, and took care

of him. 35 The next day he took out four shillings and gave them to the inn-keeper. 'Take care of him,' he said, 'and whatever more you may spend I will myself repay you on my way back.' 36 Now which, do you think, of these three men," asked Jesus, "proved himself a neighbour to the man who fell into the robbers' hands?" 37 "The one that took pity on him," was the answer; on which Jesus said: "Go and do the same yourself."

38 As they continued their journey, Jesus came to a village, where a woman named Martha welcomed him to her house. 39 She had a sister called Mary, who seated herself at the Master's feet, and listened to his teaching; 40 But Martha was distracted by the many preparations that she was making. So she went up to Jesus and said: "Master, do you approve of my sister's leaving me to make preparations alone? Tell her to help me." 41 "Martha, Martha," replied the Master, "you are anxious and trouble yourself about many things; 42 But only a few are necessary, or rather one. Mary has chosen the good part, and it shall not be taken away from her."

Chapter 11

1 One day Jesus was at a certain place praying, and, when he had finished, one of his disciples said to him: "Master, teach us to pray, as John taught his disciples." 2 "When you pray," Jesus answered, "say—'Father, May thy named be held holy, thy Kingdom come. 3 Give us each day the bread that we shall need; 4 And forgive us our sins, for we ourselves forgive every one who wrongs us; and take us not into temptation.'" 5 Jesus also said to them: "Suppose that one of you who has a friend were to go to him in the middle of the night and say 'Friend, lend me three loaves, 6 For a friend of mine has arrived at my house after a journey, and I have nothing to offer him;' 7 And suppose that the other should answer from inside 'Do not trouble me; the door is already fastened, and my children and I are in bed; I cannot get up and give you anything'; 8 I tell you that, even though he will not get up and give him anything because he is a friend, yet because of his persistence he will rouse himself and give him what he wants. 9 And so I say to you—Ask, and your prayer shall be granted: search, and you shall find; knock, and the door shall be opened to you. 10 For he that asks receives, he that searches finds, and to him that knocks the door shall be opened. 11 What father among you, if his son asks him for a fish, will give him

a snake instead, 12 Or, if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? 13 If you, then, naturally wicked though you are, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will the Father in Heaven give the Holy Spirit to those that ask him!"

14 Once Jesus was driving out a dumb demon, and, when the demon had gone out, the dumb man spoke. The people were amazed at this; 15 But some of them said: "He drives out demons by the help of Baal-zebub, the chief of the demons"; 16 While others, to test him, asked him for some sign from the heavens. 17 Jesus himself, however, was aware of what they were thinking, and said to them: "Any kingdom wholly divided against itself becomes a desolation; and a divided house falls. 18 So, too, if Satan is wholly divided against himself, how can his kingdom last? Yet you say that I drive out demons by the help of Baal-zebub. 19 But, if it is by Baal-zebub's help that I drive out demons, by whose help is it that your own sons drive them out? Therefore they shall themselves be your judges. 20 But, if it is by the hand of God that I drive out demons, then the Kingdom of God must already be upon you. 21 When a strong man is keeping guard, fully armed, over his own mansion, his property is in safety; 22 But, when one still stronger has attacked and overpowered him, he takes away all the weapons on which the other had relied, and divides his spoil. 23 He who is not with me is against me, and he who does not help me to gather is scattering. 24 No sooner does a foul spirit leave a man, than it passes through places where there is no water, in search of rest; and finding none, it says 'I will go back to the home which I left'; 25 But, on coming there, it finds it unoccupied, swept, and put in order. 26 Then it goes and brings with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in, and make their home there; and the last state of that man proves to be worse than the first."

27 As Jesus was saying this, a woman in the crowd, raising her voice, exclaimed: "Happy was the mother who bore you and nursed you!" 28 But Jesus replied: "Rather, happy are those who listen to God's Message and keep it."

29 As the crowds increased, Jesus began to speak: "This generation is a wicked generation. It is asking a sign, but no sign shall be given it except the sign of Jonah. 30 For, as Jonah became a sign to the people of Nineveh, so shall the Son of Man be to this generation. 31 At the Judgement the Queen of the South will rise up

with the men of this generation, and will condemn them, because she came from the very ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon; and here is more than a Solomon! 32 At the Judgement the men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation, and will condemn it, because they repented at Jonah's proclamation; and here is more than a Jonah! 33 No one sets light to a lamp, and then puts it in the cellar of under the corn-measure, but he puts it on the lamp-stand, so that any one who comes in may see the light. 34 The lamp of the body is your eye. When your eye is unclouded, your whole body, also, is lit up; but, as soon as your eye is diseased, your body, also, is darkened. 35 Take care, therefore, that the inner Light is not darkness. 36 If, then, your whole body is lit up, and no corner of it darkened, the whole will be lit up, just as when a lamp gives you light by its brilliance."

37 As Jesus finished speaking, a Pharisee asked him to breakfast with him, and Jesus went in and took his place at table. 38 The Pharisee noticed, to his astonishment, that Jesus omitted the ceremonial washing before breakfast. 39 But the Master said to him: "You Pharisees do, it is true, clean the outside of the cup and of the plate, but inside you yourselves are filled with greed and wickedness. 40 Fools! did not the maker of the outside make the inside too? 41 Only give away what is in them in charity, and at once you have the whole clean. 42 But alas for you Pharisees! You pay tithes on mint, rue, and herbs of all kinds, and pass over justice and love to God. These last you ought to have put into practice without neglecting the first. 43 Alas for you Pharisees! You delight to have the front seat in the Synagogues, and to be greeted in the markets with respect. 44 Alas for you! You are like unsuspected graves, over which men walk unawares." 45 Here one of the Students of the Law interrupted him by saying: "Teacher, when you say this, you are insulting us also." 46 But Jesus went on: "Alas for you, too, you Students of the Law! You load men with loads that are too heavy to carry, but do not, yourselves, touch them with one of your fingers. 47 Alas for you! You build the monuments of the Prophets whom your ancestors killed. 48 You are actually witnesses to your ancestors' acts and show your approval of them, because, while they killed the Prophets, you build tombs for them. 49 That is why the Wisdom of God said—"I will send to them Prophets and Apostles, 50 Some of whom they will persecute and kill, in order that the 'blood' of all the prophets 'that

has been spilt' since the creation of the world may be exacted from this generation— 51 From the blood of Abel down to the blood of Zechariah, who was slain between the altar and the House of God." Yes, I tell you, it will be exacted from this generation. 52 Alas for you Students of the Law! You have taken away the key of the door of Knowledge. You have not gone in yourselves and you have hindered those who try to go in." 53 When Jesus left the house, the Teachers of the Law and the Pharisees began to press him hard and question him closely upon many subjects, 54 Laying traps for him, so as to seize upon anything that he might say.

Chapter 12

1 Meanwhile the people had gathered in thousands, so that they trod upon one another, when Jesus, addressing himself to his disciples, began by saying to them: "Be on your guard against the leaven—that is, the hypocrisy—of the Pharisees. 2 There is nothing, however covered up, which will not be uncovered, nor anything kept secret which will not become known. 3 Hence all that you have said in the dark will be heard in the light, and what you have spoken in the ear, within closed doors, will be proclaimed upon the housetops. 4 To you who are my friends I say, Do not be afraid of those who kill the body, but after that can do no more. 5 I will show you of whom you should be afraid. Be afraid of him who, after killing you, has the power to fling you into the Pit. Yes, I say, be afraid of him. 6 Are not five sparrows sold for a penny? Yet not one of them has escaped God's notice. 7 No, the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Do not be afraid; you are of more value than many sparrows. 8 Every one, I tell you, who shall acknowledge me before his fellow men, the Son of Man, also, will acknowledge before God's angels; 9 But he, who disowns me before his fellow men, will be altogether disowned before God's angels. 10 Every one who shall say anything against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but for him who slanders the Holy Spirit there will be no forgiveness. 11 Whenever they take you before the Synagogue Courts or the magistrates or other authorities, do not be anxious as to how you will defend yourselves, or what your defence will be, or what you will say; 12 For the Holy Spirit will show you at the moment what you ought to say."

13 "Teacher," a man in the crowd said to Jesus, "tell my brother to share the property with me." 14 But Jesus said to him:

"Man, who made me a judge or an arbiter between you?" 15 And
then he added: "Take care to keep yourselves free from every form
of covetousness; for even in the height of his prosperity a man's true
Life does not depend on what he has." 16 Then Jesus told them this
parable—"There was once a rich man whose land was very fertile; 17
And he began to ask himself 'What shall I do, for I have nowhere to
store my crops? 18 This is what I will do,' he said; 'I will pull down
my barns and build larger ones, and store all my grain and my
goods in them; 19 And I will say to myself, Now you have plenty of
good things put by for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, and
enjoy yourself.' 20 But God said to the man 'Fool! This very night
your life is being demanded; and as for all you have prepared—who
will have it?' 21 So it is with those who lay by wealth for themselves
and are not rich to the glory of God."

22 And Jesus said to his disciples: "That is why I say to you,
Do not be anxious about the life here—what you can get to eat; nor
yet about your body—what you can get to wear. 23 For life is more
than food, and the body than its clothes. 24 Think of the ravens—
they neither sow nor reap; they have neither storehouse nor barn;
and yet God feeds them! And how much more precious are you than
birds! 25 But which of you, by being anxious, can prolong his life
a moment? 26 And, if you cannot do even the smallest thing, why
be anxious about other things? 27 Think of the lilies, and how they
grow. They neither toil nor spin; yet, I tell you, even Solomon in
all his splendour was not robed like one of these. 28 If, even in the
field, God so clothes the grass which is living to-day and to-morrow
will be thrown into the oven, how much more will he clothe you,
O men of little faith! 29 And you—do not be always seeking what
you can get to eat or what you can get to drink; and do not waver.
30 These are the things for which all the nations of the world are
seeking, and your Father knows that you need them. 31 No, seek
his Kingdom, and these things shall be added for you. 32 So do not
be afraid, my little flock, for your Father has been pleased to give
you the Kingdom. 33 Sell what belongs to you, and give in charity.
Make yourselves purses that will not wear out—an inexhaustible
treasure in Heaven, where no thief comes near, or moth works
ruin. 34 For where your treasure is, there also will your heart be. 35
Make yourselves ready, with your lamps alight; 36 And be like men
who are waiting for their Master's return from his wedding, so that,

when he comes and knocks, they may open the door for him at once.
37 Happy are those servants whom, on his return, the Master will
find watching. I tell you that he will make himself ready, and bid
them take their places at table, and will come and wait upon them.
38 Whether it is late at night, or in the early morning that he comes,
if he finds all as it should be, then happy are they. 39 This you do
know, that, had the owner of the house known at what time the thief
was coming, he would have been on the watch, and would not have
let his house be broken into. 40 Do you also prepare, for when you
are least expecting him the Son of Man will come."

41 "Master," said Peter, "are you telling this parable with
reference to us or to every one?" 42 "Who, then," replied the Master,
"is that trustworthy steward, the careful man, who will be placed by
his master over his establishment, to give them their rations at the
proper time? 43 Happy will that servant be whom his master, when
he comes home, shall find doing this. 44 His master, I tell you, will
put him in charge of the whole of his property. 45 But should that
servant say to himself 'My master is a long time coming,' and begin
to beat the menservants and the maidservants, and to eat and drink
and get drunk, 46 That servant's master will come on a day when
he does not expect him, and at an hour of which he is unaware,
and will flog him severely and assign him his place among the
untrustworthy. 47 The servant who knows his master's wishes and
yet does not prepare and act accordingly will receive many lashes;
48 while one who does not know his master's wishes, but acts so as
to deserve a flogging, will receive but few. From every one to whom
much has been given much will be expected, and from the man to
whom much has been entrusted the more will be demanded. 49 I
came to cast fire upon the earth; and what more can I wish, if it
is already kindled? 50 There is a baptism that I must undergo, and
how great is my distress until it is over! 51 Do you think that I am
here to give peace on earth? No, I tell you, but to cause division. 52
For from this time, if there are five people in a house, they will be
divided, three against two, and two against three. 53 'Father will be
opposed to son and son to father, mother to daughter and daughter
to mother, mother-in-law to her daughter-in-law and daughter-in-
law to her mother-in-law.'"

54 And to the people Jesus said: "When you see a cloud rising
in the west, you say at once 'There is a storm coming,' and come it

does. 55 And when you see that the wind is in the south, you say 'It will be burning hot,' and so it proves. 56 Hypocrites! You know how to judge of the earth and the sky; how is it, then, that you cannot judge of this time? 57 Why do not you yourselves decide what is right? 58 When, for instance, you are going with your opponent before a magistrate, on your way to the court do your best to be quit of him; for fear that he should drag you before the judge, when the judge will hand you over to the bailiff of the court, and the bailiff throw you into prison. 59 You will not, I tell you, come out until you have paid the very last farthing."

Chapter 13

1 Just at that time some people had come to tell Jesus about the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with the blood of their sacrifices. 2 "Do you suppose," replied Jesus, "that, because these Galileans have suffered in this way, they were worse sinners than any other Galileans? 3 No, I tell you; but, unless you repent, you will all perish as they did. 4 Or those eighteen men at Siloam on whom the tower fell, killing them all, do you suppose that they were worse offenders than any other inhabitants of Jerusalem? 5 No, I tell you; but, unless you repent, you will all perish in the same manner."

6 And Jesus told them this parable—"A man, who had a fig tree growing in his vineyard, came to look for fruit on it, but could not find any. 7 So he said to his gardener 'Three years now I have come to look for fruit on this fig tree, without finding any! Cut it down. Why should it rob the soil?' 8 'Leave it this one year more, Sir,' the man answered, 'till I have dug round it and manured it. 9 Then, if it bears in future, well and good; but if not, you can have it cut down.'"

10 Jesus was teaching on a Sabbath in one of the Synagogues, 11 And he saw before him a woman who for eighteen years had suffered from weakness owing to her having an evil spirit in her. She was bent double, and was wholly unable to raise herself. 12 When Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said: "Woman, you are released from your weakness." 13 He placed his hands on her, and she was instantly made straight, and began to praise God. 14 But the President of the Synagogue, indignant that Jesus had worked the cure on the Sabbath, interposed and said to the people: "There are

six days on which work ought to be done; come to be cured on one of those, and not on the Sabbath." 15 "You hypocrites!" the Master answered him. "Does not every one of you let his ox or his ass loose from its manger, and take it out to drink, on the Sabbath? 16 But this woman, a daughter of Abraham, who has been kept in bondage by Satan for now eighteen years, ought not she to have been released from her bondage on the Sabbath?" 17 As he said this, his opponents all felt ashamed; but all the people rejoiced to see all the wonderful things that he was doing.

18 So Jesus said: "What is the Kingdom of God like? and to what can I liken it? 19 It is like a mustard-seed which a man took and put in his garden. The seed grew and became a tree, and 'the wild birds roosted in its branches.'" 20 And again Jesus said: "To what can I liken the Kingdom of God? 21 It is like some yeast which a woman took and covered in three pecks of flour, until the whole had risen." 22 Jesus went through towns and villages, teaching as he went, and making his way towards Jerusalem.

23 "Master," some one asked, "are there but few in the path of Salvation?" And Jesus answered: 24 "Strive to go in by the small door. Many, I tell you, will seek to go in, but they will not be able, 25 When once the master of the house has got up and shut the door, while you begin to say, as you stand outside and knock, 'Sir, open the door for us.' His answer will be—'I do not know where you come from.' 26 Then you will begin to say 'We have eaten and drunk in your presence, and you have taught in our streets,' and his reply will be— 27 'I do not know where you come from. Leave my presence, all you who are living in wickedness.' 28 There, there will be weeping and grinding of teeth, when you see Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and all the Prophets, in the Kingdom of God, while you yourselves are being driven outside. 29 People will come from East and West, and from North and South, and take their places at the banquet in the Kingdom of God. 30 there are some who are last now who will then be first, and some who are first now who will then be last!"

31 Just then some Pharisees came up to Jesus and said: "Go away and leave this place, for Herod wants to kill you." 32 But Jesus answered: "Go and say to that fox 'Look you, I am driving out demons and shall be completing cures to-day and tomorrow, and on the third day I shall have done.' 33 But to-day and to-morrow and the day after I must go on my way, because it cannot be that

a Prophet should meet his end outside Jerusalem. 34 Jerusalem!
Jerusalem! she who slays the Prophets and stones the messengers
sent to her—Oh, how often have I wished to gather your children
round me, as a hen takes her brood under her wings, and you would
not come! 35 Verily your House is left to you desolate! and never, I
tell you, shall you see me, until you say—'Blessed is He who comes
in the name of the Lord.'"

Chapter 14

1 On one occasion, as Jesus was going, on a Sabbath into the
house of one of the leading Pharisees to dine, they were watching
him closely. 2 There he saw before him a man who was suffering
from dropsy. 3 "Is it allowable," said Jesus, addressing the Students
of the Law and the Pharisees, "to work a cure on the Sabbath, or
is it not?" 4 They remained silent. Jesus took hold of the man and
cured him, and sent him away. 5 And he said to them: "Which of
you, finding that his son or his ox has fallen into a well, will not
immediately pull him out on the Sabbath Day?" 6 And they could
not make any answer to that.

7 Observing that the guests were choosing the best places
for themselves, Jesus told them this parable— 8 "When you are
invited by any one to a wedding banquet, do not seat yourself in
the best place, for fear that some one of higher rank should have
been invited by your host; 9 And he who invited you both will come
and say to you 'Make room for this man,' and then you will begin
in confusion to take the lowest place. 10 No, when you are invited,
go and take the lowest place, so that, when he who has invited you
comes, he may say to you 'Friend, come higher up'; and then you
will be honoured in the eyes of all your fellow-guests. 11 For every
one who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles
himself will be exalted." 12 Then Jesus went on to say to the man
who had invited him: "When you give a breakfast or a dinner, do
not ask your friends, or your brothers, or your relations, or rich
neighbours, for fear that they should invite you in return, and so
you should be repaid. 13 No, when you entertain, invite the poor, the
crippled, the lame, the blind; 14 And then you will be happy indeed,
since they cannot recompense you; for you shall be recompensed at
the resurrection of the good."

15 One of the guests heard what he said and exclaimed:

"Happy will he be who shall eat bread in the Kingdom of God!"
16 But Jesus said to him: "A man was once giving a great dinner.
He invited many people, 17 And sent his servant, when it was time
for the dinner, to say to those who had been invited 'Come, for
everything is now ready.' 18 They all with one accord began to ask to
be excused. The first man said to the servant 'I have bought a field
and am obliged to go and look at it. I must ask you to consider me
excused.' 19 The next said 'I have bought five pairs of bullocks, and I
am on my way to try them. I must ask you to consider me excused';
20 While the next said 'I am just married, and for that reason I am
unable to come.' 21 On his return the servant told his master all these
answers. Then in anger the owner of the house said to his servant
'Go out at once into the streets and alleys of the town, and bring
in here the poor, and the crippled, and the blind, and the lame.'
22 Presently the servant said 'Sir, your order has been carried out,
and still there is room.' 23 'Go out,' the master said, 'into the roads
and hedgerows, and make people come in, so that my house may be
filled; 24 For I tell you all that not one of those men who were invited
will taste my dinner.'"

25 One day, when great crowds of people were walking with
Jesus, he turned and said to them: 26 "If any man comes to me and
does not hate his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and
brothers, and sisters, yes and his very life, he can be no disciple of
mine. 27 Whoever does not carry his own cross, and walk in my steps,
can be no disciple of mine. 28 Why, which of you, when he wants to
build a tower, does not first sit down and reckon the cost, to see if
he has enough to complete it?— 29 For fear that, if he has laid the
foundation and is not able to finish it, every one who sees it should
begin to laugh at him, 30 And say 'Here is a man who began to build
and was not able to finish!' 31 Or what king, when he is setting out
to fight another king, does not first sit down and consider if with
ten thousand men he is able to meet one who is coming against him
with twenty thousand? 32 And if he cannot, then, while the other
is still at a distance, he sends envoys and asks for terms of peace.
33 And so with every one of you who does not bid farewell to all he
has—he cannot be a disciple of mine. 34 Yes, salt is good; but, if the
salt itself should lose its strength, what shall be used to season it? 35
It is not fit either for the land or for the manure heap. Men throw it
away. Let him who has ears to hear with hear!"

Chapter 15

1 The tax-gatherers and the outcasts were all drawing near
to Jesus to listen to him; 2 But the Pharisees and the Teachers of
the Law found fault. "This man always welcomes outcasts, and
takes meals with them!" they complained. 3 So Jesus told them this
parable— 4 "What man among you who has a hundred sheep, and
has lost one of them, does not leave the ninety-nine out in the open
country, and go after the lost sheep till he finds it? 5 And, when he
has found it, he puts in on his shoulders rejoicing; 6 And, on reaching
home, he calls his friends and his neighbours together, and says
'Come and rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep which was
lost.' 7 So, I tell you, there will be more rejoicing in Heaven over one
outcast that repents, than over ninety-nine religious men, who have
no need to repent. 8 Or again, what woman who has ten silver coins,
if she loses one of them, does not light a lamp, and sweep the house,
and search carefully until she finds it? 9 And, when she has found
it, she calls her friends and neighbours together, and says 'Come
and rejoice with me, for I have found the coin which I lost.' 10 So, I
tell you, there is rejoicing in the presence of God's angels over one
outcast that repents."

11 Then Jesus continued: "A man had two sons; 12 And the
younger of them said to his father 'Father, give me my share of the
inheritance.' So the father divided the property between them. 13 A
few days later the younger son got together all that he had, and went
away into a distant land; and there he squandered his inheritance
by leading a dissolute life. 14 After he has spent all that he had, there
was a severe famine through all that country, and he began to be in
actual want. 15 So he went and engaged himself to one of the people
of that country, who sent him into his fields to tend pigs. 16 He even
longed to satisfy his hunger with the bean-pods on which the pigs
were feeding; and no one gave him anything. 17 But, when he came
to himself, he said 'How many of my father's hired servants have
more bread than they can eat, while here am I starving to death! 18
I will get up and go to my father, and say to him "Father, I sinned
against Heaven and against you; 19 I am no longer fit to be called
your son; make me one of your hired servants."' 20 And he got up
and went to his father. But, while he was still a long way off, his
father saw him and was deeply moved; he ran and threw his arms

round his neck and kissed him. 21 'Father,' the son said, 'I sinned
against Heaven and against you; I am no longer fit to be called your
son; make me one of your hired servants.' 22 But the father turned to
his servants and said 'Be quick and fetch a robe—the very best—and
put it on him; give him a ring for his finger and sandals for his feet;
23 And bring the fattened calf and kill it, and let us eat and make
merry; 24 For here is my son who was dead, and is alive again, was
lost, and is found.' So they began making merry. 25 Meanwhile the
elder son was out in the fields; but, on coming home, when he got
near the house, he heard music and dancing, 26 And he called one of
the servants and asked what it all meant. 27 'Your brother has come
back,' the servant told him, 'and your father has killed the fattened
calf, because he has him back safe and sound.' 28 This made him
angry, and he would not go in. But his father came out and begged
him to do so. 29 'No,' he said to his father, 'look at all the years I have
been serving you, without ever once disobeying you, and yet you
have never given me even a kid, so that I might have a merry-making
with my friends. 30 But, no sooner has this son of yours come, who
has eaten up your property in the company of prostitutes, than you
have killed the fattened calf for him.' 31 'Child,' the father answered,
'you are always with me, and everything that I have is yours. 32 We
could but make merry and rejoice, for here is your brother who was
dead, and is alive; who was lost, and is found.'"

Chapter 16

1 Jesus said to his disciples: "There was a rich man who
had a steward; and this steward was maliciously accused to him of
wasting his estate. 2 So the master called him and said 'What is this
that I hear about you? Give in your accounts, for you cannot act as
steward any longer.' 3 'What am I to do,' the steward asked himself,
'now that my master is taking the steward's place away from me? I
have not strength to dig, and I am ashamed to beg. 4 I know what
I will do, so that, as soon as I am turned out of my stewardship,
people may welcome me into their homes.' 5 One by one he called up
his master's debtors. 'How much do you owe my master?' he asked
of the first. 6 'Four hundred and forty gallons of oil,' answered the
man. 'Here is your agreement,' he said; 'sit down at once and make
it two hundred and twenty. 7 And you,' the steward said to the next,
'how much do you owe?' 'Seventy quarters of wheat,' he replied.

'Here is your agreement,' the steward said; 'make it fifty-six.' 8 His master complimented this dishonest steward on the shrewdness of his action. And indeed men of the world are shrewder in dealing with their fellow-men than those who have the Light. 9 And I say to you 'Win friends for yourselves with your dishonest money,' so that, when it comes to an end, there may be a welcome for you into the Eternal Home. 10 He who is trustworthy in the smallest matter is trustworthy in a great one also; and he who is dishonest in the smallest matter is dishonest in a great one also. 11 So, if you have proved untrustworthy with the 'dishonest money,' who will trust you with the true? 12 And, if you have proved untrustworthy with what does not belong to us, who will give you what is really our own? 13 No servant can serve two masters, for, either he will hate one and love the other, or else he will attach himself to one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money." 14 All this was said within hearing of the Pharisees, who were lovers of money, and they began to sneer at Jesus. 15 "You," said Jesus, "are the men who justify themselves before the world, but God can read your hearts; and what is highly esteemed among men may be an abomination in the sight of God. 16 The Law and the Prophets sufficed until the time of John. Since then the Good News of the Kingdom of God has been told, and everybody has been forcing his way into it. 17 It would be easier for the heavens and the earth to disappear than for one stroke of a letter in the Law to be lost. 18 Every one who divorces his wife and marries another woman is an adulterer, and the man who marries a divorced woman is an adulterer.

19 There was once a rich man, who dressed in purple robes and fine linen, and feasted every day in great splendour. 20 Near his gateway there had been laid a beggar named Lazarus, who was covered with sores, 21 And who longed to satisfy his hunger with what fell from the rich man's table. Even the very dogs came and licked his sores. 22 After a time the beggar died, and was taken by the angels to be with Abraham. The rich man also died and was buried. 23 In the Place of Death he looked up in his torment, and saw Abraham at a distance and Lazarus at his side. 24 So he called out 'Pity me, Father Abraham, and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, for I am suffering agony in this flame.' 25 'Child,' answered Abraham, 'remember that you in your lifetime received what you thought desirable, just as Lazarus received what

was not desirable; but now he has his consolation here, while you are suffering agony. 26 And not only that, but between you and us there lies a great chasm, so that those who wish to pass from here to you cannot, nor can they cross from there to us.' 27 'Then, Father,' he said, 'I beg you to send Lazarus to my father's house— 28 For I have five brothers to warn them, so that they may not come to this place of torture also.' 29 'They have the writings of Moses and the Prophets,' replied Abraham; 'let them listen to them.' 30 'But, Father Abraham,' he urged, 'if some one from the dead were to go to them, they would repent.' 31 'If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets,' answered Abraham, 'they will not be persuaded, even if some one were to rise from the dead.'"

Chapter 17

1 Jesus said to his disciples: "It is inevitable that there should be snares; yet alas for him who is answerable for them! 2 It would be good for him if he had been flung into the sea with a mill-stone round his neck, rather than that he should prove a snare to even one of these lowly ones. 3 Be on your guard! If your brother does wrong, reprove him; but if he repents, forgive him. 4 Even if he wrongs you seven times a day, but turns to you every time and says 'I am sorry,' you must forgive him." 5 "Give us more faith," said the Apostles to the Master; 6 But the Master said: "If your faith were only like a mustard-seed, you could say to this mulberry tree 'Be up-rooted and planted in the sea,' and it would obey you. 7 Which of you, if he had a servant ploughing, or tending the sheep, would say to him, when he came in from the fields, 'Come at once and take your place at table,' 8 Instead of saying 'Prepare my dinner, and then make yourself ready and wait on me while I am eating and drinking, and after that you shall eat and drink yourself'? 9 Does he feel grateful to his servant for doing what he is told? 10 And so with you—when you have done all that you have been told, still say 'We are but useless servants; we have done no more than we ought to have done.'"

11 On the way to Jerusalem Jesus passed between Samaria and Galilee. 12 As he was entering a village, ten lepers met him. 13 Standing still, some distance off, they called out loudly: "Jesus! Sir! pity us!" 14 When Jesus saw them, he said: "Go and show yourselves to the priest." And, as they were on their way, they were made clean. 15 One of them, finding he was cured, came back, praising

God loudly, 16 And threw himself on his face at Jesus' feet, thanking
him for what he had done; and this man was a Samaritan. 17 "Were
not all the ten made clean? exclaimed Jesus. But the nine—where
are they? 18 Were there none to come back and praise God except
this foreigner? 19 Get up," he said to him, "and go on your way. Your
faith has delivered you."

20 Being once asked by the Pharisees when the Kingdom of
God was to come, Jesus answered: "The Kingdom of God does not
come in a way that admits of observation, 21 Nor will people say
'Look, here it is!' or 'There it is!'; for the Kingdom of God is within
you! 22 The day will come," he said to his disciples, "when you will
long to see but one of the days of the Son of Man, and will not see it.
23 People will say to you 'There he is! or 'Here he is!' Do not go and
follow them. 24 For, just as lightning will lighten and flare from one
side of the heavens to the other, so will it be with the Son of Man. 25
But first he must undergo much suffering, and he must be rejected
by the present generation. 26 As it was in the days of Noah, so will
it be again in the days of the Son of Man. 27 They were eating and
drinking and marrying and being married, up to the very day on
which Noah entered the ark, and then the flood came and destroyed
them all. 28 So, too, in the days of Lot. People were eating, drinking,
buying, selling, planting, building; 29 But, on the very day on which
Lot came out of Sodom, it rained fire and sulphur from the skies and
destroyed them all. 30 It will be the same on the day on which the
Son of Man reveals himself. 31 On that day, if a man is on his house-
top and his goods in the house, he must not go down to get them;
nor again must one who is on the farm turn back. 32 Remember Lot's
wife. 33 Whoever is eager to get the most out of his life will lose it;
but whoever will lose it shall preserve it. 34 On that night, I tell you,
of two men upon the same bed, one will be taken and the other left;
35 Of two women grinding together, one will be taken and the other
left. 36 Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the
other left." 37 "Where will it be, Master?" interposed the disciples.
"Where there is a body," said Jesus, "'there will the vultures flock.'"

Chapter 18

1 Jesus told his disciples a parable to show them that they
should always pray and never despair. 2 "There was," he said, "in a
certain town a judge, who had no fear of God nor regard for man.

3 In the same town there was a widow who went to him again and
again, and said 'Grant me justice against my opponent.' 4 For a time
the judge refused, but afterwards he said to himself 'Although I
am without fear of God or regard for man, 5 Yet, as this widow is
so troublesome, I will grant her justice, to stop her from plaguing
me with her endless visits.'" 6 Then the Master added: "Listen to
what this iniquitous judge says! 7 And God—will not he see that
his own People, who cry to him night and day, have justice done
them—though he holds his hand? 8 He will, I tell you, have justice
done them, and that soon! Yet, when the Son of Man comes, will he
find faith on earth?"

9 Another time, speaking to people who were satisfied that
they were religious, and who regarded every one else with scorn,
Jesus told this parable— 10 "Two men went up into the Temple
Courts to pray. One was a Pharisee and the other a tax-gatherer.
11 The Pharisee stood forward and began praying to himself in this
way—'O God, I thank thee that I am not like other men—thieves,
rogues, adulterers—or even like this tax-gatherer. 12 I fast twice a
week, and give a tenth of everything I get to God.' 13 Meanwhile
the tax-gatherer stood at a distance, not venturing even 'to raise
his eyes to Heaven'; but he kept striking his breast and saying 'O
God, have mercy on me, a sinner.' 14 This man, I tell you, went home
pardoned, rather than the other; for every one who exalts himself
will be humbled, while every one who humbles himself shall be
exalted."

15 Some of the people were bringing even their babies to
Jesus, for him to touch them; but, when the disciples saw it, they
began to find fault with those who had brought them. 16 Jesus,
however, called the little children to him. "Let the little children
come to me," he said, "and do not hinder them; for it is to the
childlike that the Kingdom of God belongs. 17 I tell you, unless a man
receives the Kingdom of God like a child, he will not enter it at all."

18 And one of the Presidents asked Jesus this question—
"Good Teacher, what must I do if I am to gain Immortal Life?" 19
"Why do you call me good?" answered Jesus. "No one is good but
God. 20 You know the commandments—'Do not commit adultery,
Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not say what is false about others,
Honour thy father and thy mother.'" 21 "I have observed all these,"
he replied, "from childhood." 22 Hearing this, Jesus said to him:

"There is one thing still lacking in you; sell everything that you have, and distribute to the poor, and you shall have wealth in Heaven; then come and follow me." [23] But the man became greatly distressed on hearing this, for he was extremely rich. [24] Seeing this, Jesus said to his disciples: "How hard it is for men of wealth to enter the Kingdom of God! [25] It is easier, indeed, for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God!" [26] "Then who can be saved?" asked those who heard this. [27] But Jesus said: "What is impossible with men is possible with God." [28] "But we," said Peter, "we left what belonged to us and followed you." [29] "I tell you," he answered, "that there is no one who has left house, or wife, or brothers, or parents, or children, on account of the Kingdom of God, [30] Who will not receive many times as much in the present, and in the age that is coming Immortal Life."

[31] Gathering the Twelve round him, Jesus said to them: "Listen! We are going up to Jerusalem; and there everything that is written in the Prophets will be done to the Son of Man. [32] For he will be given up to the Gentiles, mocked, insulted and spat upon; [33] They will scourge him, and then put him to death; and on the third day he will rise again." [34] The Apostles did not comprehend any of this; his meaning was unintelligible to them, and they did not understand what he was saying.

[35] As Jesus was getting near Jericho, a blind man was sitting by the road-side, begging. [36] Hearing a crowd going by, the man asked what was the matter; [37] And, when people told him that Jesus of Nazareth was passing, [38] He shouted out: "Jesus, Son of David, take pity on me!" [39] Those who were in front kept telling him to be quiet, but he continued to call out the louder: "Son of David, take pity on me!" [40] Then Jesus stopped and ordered the man to be brought to him. And, when he had come close up to him, Jesus asked him: [41] "What do you want me to do for you?" "Master," he said, "I want to recover my sight." [42] And Jesus said: "Recover your sight, your faith has delivered you." [43] Instantly he recovered his sight, and began to follow Jesus, praising God. And all the people, on seeing it, gave glory to God.

Chapter 19

[1] Jesus entered Jericho and made his way through the town. [2] There was a man there, known by the name of Zacchaeus, who

was a commissioner of taxes and a rich man. [3] He tried to see what Jesus was like; but, being short, he was unable to do so because of the crowd. [4] So he ran on ahead and climbed into a mulberry tree, to see Jesus, for he knew that he must pass that way. [5] When Jesus came to the place, he looked up and said to him: "Zacchaeus, be quick and come down, for I must stop at your house to-day." [6] So Zacchaeus got down quickly, and joyfully welcomed him. [7] On seeing this, every one began to complain: "He has gone to stay with a man who is an outcast." [8] But Zacchaeus stood forward and said to the Master: "Listen, Master! I will give half my property to the poor, and, if I have defrauded any one of anything, I will give him back four times as much." [9] "Salvation has come to this house to-day," answered Jesus, "for even this man is a son of Abraham. [10] The Son of Man has come to 'search for those who are lost' and to save them."

[11] As the people were listening to this, Jesus went on to tell them a parable. He did so because he was near Jerusalem, and because they thought that the Kingdom of God was going to be proclaimed at once. [12] He said: "A nobleman once went to a distant country to receive his appointment to a Kingdom and then return. [13] He called ten of his servants and gave them ten pounds each, and told them to trade with them during his absence. [14] But his subjects hated him and sent envoys after him to say 'We will not have this man as our King.' [15] On his return, after having been appointed King, he directed that the servants to whom he had given his money should be summoned, so that he might learn what amount of trade they had done. [16] The first came up, and said 'Sir, your ten pounds have made a hundred.' [17] 'Well done, good servant!' exclaimed the master. 'As you have proved trustworthy in a very small matter, I appoint you governor over ten towns.' [18] When the second came, he said 'Your ten pounds, Sir, have produced fifty.' [19] So the master said to him 'And you I appoint over five towns.' [20] Another servant also came and said 'Sir, here are your ten pounds; I have kept them put away in a handkerchief. [21] For I was afraid of you, because you are a stern man. You take what you have not planted, and reap what you have not sown.' [22] The master answered 'Out of your own mouth I judge you, you worthless servant. You knew that I am a stern man, that I take what I have not planted, and reap what I have not sown? [23] Then why did not you put my money into a bank? And I, on my

return, could have claimed it with interest. 24 Take away from him
the ten pounds,' he said to those standing by, 'and give them to the
one who has the hundred.' 25 'But, Sir,' they interposed, 'he has a
hundred pounds already!' 26 'I tell you,' he answered, 'that, to him
who has, more will be given, but, from him who has nothing, even
what he has will be taken away. 27 But as for my enemies, these men
who would not have me as their King, bring them here and put
them to death in my presence.'"

28 After saying this, Jesus went on in front, going up to
Jerusalem. 29 It was when Jesus had almost reached Bethphage
and Bethany, near the Mount of Olives, that he sent on two of the
disciples. 30 "Go to the village facing us," he said, "and, when you
get there, you will find a foal tethered, which no one has yet ridden;
untie it and lead it here. 31 And, if anybody asks you 'Why are you
untying it?,' you are to say this—'The Master wants it.'" 32 So the two
who were sent went and found it as Jesus had told them. 33 While
they were untying the foal, the owners asked them—"Why are you
untying the foal?" 34 And the two disciples answered—"The Master
wants it." 35 Then they led it back to Jesus, and threw their cloaks on
the foal and put Jesus upon it. 36 As he went along, the people kept
spreading their cloaks in the road. 37 When he had almost reached
the place where the road led down the Mount of Olives, every one
of the many disciples began in their joy to praise God loudly for all
the miracles that they had seen: 38 "Blessed is He who comes—Our
King—in the name of the Lord! Peace in Heaven, And glory on
high." 39 Some of the Pharisees in the crowd said to him: "Teacher,
reprove your disciples." 40 But Jesus answered: "I tell you that if
these men are silent, the very stones will call out."

41 When he drew near, on seeing the city, he wept over it,
and said: 42 "Would that you had known, while yet there was time—
even you—the things that make for peace! But now they have been
hidden from your sight. 43 For a time is coming upon you when your
enemies will surround you with earthworks, and encircle you, and
hem you in on all sides; 44 They will trample you down and your
children within you, and they will not leave in you one stone upon
another, because you did not know 'the time of your visitation.'"
45 Jesus went into the Temple Courts and began to drive out those
who were selling, 46 Saying as he did so: "Scripture says—'My House
shall be a House of Prayer'; but you have made it 'a den of robbers.'"

47 Jesus continued to teach each day in the Temple Courts; but the
Chief Priests and Teachers of the Law were eager to take his life,
and so also were the leading men. 48 Yet they could not see what to
do, for the people all hung upon his words.

Chapter 20

1 On one of these days, when Jesus was teaching the people
in the Temple Courts and telling the Good News, the Chief Priests
and the Teachers of the Law, joined by the Councillors, confronted
him, 2 And addressing him, said: "Tell us what authority you have
to do these things. Who is it that has given you this authority?" 3
"I, too," said Jesus in reply, "will ask you one question. Give me
an answer to it. 4 It is about John's baptism—was it of divine or
of human origin?" 5 But they began arguing together: "If we say
'divine,' he will say 'Why did not you believe him?' 6 But, if we say
'human,' the people will all stone us, for they are persuaded that
John was a Prophet." 7 So they answered that they did not know
its origin. 8 "Then I," said Jesus, "refuse to tell you what authority I
have to do these things."

9 But Jesus began to tell the people this parable—"A man
once planted a vineyard, and then let it out to tenants, and went
abroad for a long while. 10 At the proper time he sent a servant to
the tenants, that they should give him a share of the produce of
the vineyard. The tenants, however, beat him and sent him away
empty-handed. 11 The owner afterwards sent another servant; but
the tenants beat and insulted this man too, and sent him away
empty-handed. 12 He sent a third; but they wounded this man also,
and threw him outside. 13 'What shall I do?' said the owner of the
vineyard. 'I will send my son, who is very dear to me. Perhaps they
will respect him.' 14 But, on seeing him, the tenants consulted with
one another. 'Here is the heir!' they said. 'Let us kill him, and then
the inheritance will become ours.' 15 So they threw him outside the
vineyard and killed him. Now what will the owner of the vineyard
do to them? 16 He will come and put those tenants to death, and will
let the vineyard to others." "Heaven forbid!" they exclaimed when
they heard it. 17 But Jesus looked at them and said: "What then is
the meaning of this passage?—'The very stone which the builders
despised has now itself become the corner-stone.' 18 Every one who
falls on that stone will be dashed to pieces, while any one on whom

it falls—it will scatter him as dust." [19] After this the Teachers of the Law and the Chief Priest were eager to lay hands on Jesus then and there, but they were afraid of the people; for they saw that it was at them that he had aimed this parable.

[20] Having watched their opportunity, they afterwards sent some spies, who pretended to be good men, to catch Jesus in the course of conversation, and so enable them to give him up to the Governor's jurisdiction and authority. [21] These men asked Jesus a question. They said: "Teacher, we know that you are right in what you say and teach, and that you do not take any account of a man's position, but teach the Way of God honestly; [22] Are we right in paying tribute to the Emperor or not?" [23] Seeing through their deceitfulness, Jesus said to them: [24] "Show me a florin. Whose head and title are on it?" [25] "The Emperor's," they said; and Jesus replied: "Well then, pay to the Emperor what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what belongs to God." [26] They could not lay hold of this answer before the people; and, in their wonder at his reply, they held their tongues.

[27] Presently there came up some Sadducees, who maintain that there is no resurrection. Their question was this— [28] "Teacher, Moses laid down for us in his writings that—'Should a man's married brother die, and should he be childless, the man should take the widow as his wife, and raise up a family for his brother.' [29] Well, there were once seven brothers; of whom the eldest, after taking a wife, died childless. [30] The second and third brothers both took her as their wife; [31] And so, too, did all seven—dying without children. [32] The woman herself was the last to die. [33] About the woman, then—at the resurrection, whose wife is she to be, all seven brothers having had her as their wife?" [34] "The men and women of this world," said Jesus, "marry and are given in marriage; [35] But, for those who are thought worthy to attain to that other world and the resurrection from the dead, there is no marrying or being married, [36] Nor indeed can they die again, for they are like angels and, having shared in the resurrection, they are God's Sons. [37] As to the fact that the dead rise, even Moses indicated that, in the passage about the Bush, when he calls the Lord—'The God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.' [38] Now he is not God of dead men, but of living. For in his sight all are alive."

[39] "Well said, Teacher!" exclaimed some of the Teachers of

the Law, [40] For they did not venture to question him any further. [41] But Jesus said to them: "How is it that people say that the Christ is to be David's son? [42] For David, in the Book of Psalms, says himself—'The Lord said to my lord: "Sit at my right hand, [43] Until I put they enemies as a stool for thy feet."' [44] David, then, calls him 'lord,' so how is he David's son?" [45] While all the people were listening, Jesus said to the disciples: [46] "Be on your guard against the Teachers of the Law, who delight to walk about in long robes, and like to be greeted in the streets with respect, and to have the best seats in the Synagogues, and places of honour at dinner. [47] These are the men who rob widows of their houses, and make a pretence of saying long prayers. Their sentence will be all the heavier."

Chapter 21

[1] Looking up, Jesus saw the rich people putting their gifts into the chests for the Temple offerings. [2] He saw, too, a widow in poor circumstances putting two farthings into them. [3] On this he said: "I tell you that this poor widow has put in more than all the others; [4] For every one else here put in something from what he had to spare, while she, in her need, has put in all she had to live upon."

[5] When some of them spoke about the Temple being decorated with beautiful stones and offerings, Jesus said: [6] "As for these things that you are looking at, a time is coming when not one stone will be left upon another here, which will not be thrown down." [7] So the disciples questioned Jesus: "But, Teacher, when will this be? and what sign will there be when this is near?" [8] And Jesus said: "See that you are not led astray; for many will take my name, and come saying 'I am He,' and 'The time is close at hand.' Do not follow them. [9] And, when you hear of wars and disturbances, do not be terrified, for these things must occur first; but the end will not be at once." [10] Then he said to them: "'Nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom,' [11] And there will be great earthquakes, and plagues and famines in various places, and there will be terrible appearances and signs in the heavens. [12] Before all this, they will lay hands on you and persecute you, and they will betray you to Synagogues and put you in prison, when you will be brought before kings and governors for the sake of my Name. [13] Then will be your opportunity of witnessing for me. [14] Make up your

minds, therefore, not to prepare your defence; [15] For I will myself
give you words, and a wisdom which all your opponents together
will be unable to resist or defy. [16] You will be betrayed even by your
parents and brothers and relations and friends, and they will cause
some of you to be put to death, [17] And you will be hated by every one
on account of my Name. [18] Yet not a single hair of your heads shall
be lost! [19] By your endurance you shall win yourselves Life.

[20] As soon, however, as you see Jerusalem surrounded by
armed camps, then you may know that the hour of her desecration
is at hand. [21] Then those of you who are in Judea must take refuge
in the mountains, those who are in Jerusalem must leave at once,
and those who are in the country places must not go into it. [22] For
these are to be the Days of Vengeance, when all that Scripture says
will be fulfilled. [23] Alas for the women that are with child, and for
those that are nursing infants in those days! For there will be great
suffering in the land, and anger against this people. [24] They will fall
by the edge of the sword, and will be taken prisoners to every land,
and 'Jerusalem will be under the heel of the Gentiles,' until their
day is over—as it shall be. [25] There will be signs, too, in the sun and
moon and stars, and on the earth despair among the nations, in
their dismay at the roar of the sea and the surge. [26] Men's hearts will
fail them through dread of what is coming upon the world; for 'the
forces of the heavens will be convulsed.' [27] Then will be seen the 'Son
of Man coming in a cloud' with power and great glory. [28] And, when
these things begin to occur, look upwards and lift your heads, for
your deliverance will be at hand."

[29] Then he taught them a lesson thus—"Look at the fig tree
and all the other trees. [30] As soon as they shoot, you know, as you
look at them, without being told, that summer is near. [31] And so
may you, as soon as you see these things happening, know that the
Kingdom of God is near. [32] I tell you that even the present generation
will not pass away till all has taken place. [33] The heavens and the
earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away. [34] Be on
your guard lest your minds should ever be dulled by debauches
or drunkenness or the anxieties of life, and lest 'That Day' should
come suddenly upon you, like a snare. [35] For come it will upon all
who are living upon the face of the whole earth. [36] Be on the watch
at all times, and pray that you may have strength to escape all that
is destined to happen, and to stand in the presence of the Son of

Man." [37] During the days, Jesus continued to teach in the Temple
Courts, but he went out and spent the nights on the hill called the
'Mount of Olives.' [38] And all the people would get up early in the
morning and come to listen to him in the Temple Courts.

Chapter 22

[1] The Feast of the Unleavened Bread, known as the Passover,
was near. [2] The Chief Priest and the Teachers of the Law were
looking for an opportunity of destroying Jesus, for they were afraid
of the people. [3] Now Satan took possession of Judas, who was
known as Iscariot, and who belonged to the Twelve; [4] And he went
and discussed with the Chief Priests and Officers in charge at the
Temple the best way of betraying Jesus to them. [5] They were glad of
this, and agreed to pay him. [6] So Judas assented, and looked for an
opportunity to betray Jesus to them, in the absence of a crowd.

[7] When the day of the Festival of the Unleavened Bread
came, on which the Passover lambs had to be killed, [8] Jesus sent
forward Peter and John, saying to them: "Go and make preparations
for our eating the Passover." [9] "Where do you wish us to make
preparations?" they asked. [10] "Listen," he answered, "when you have
got into the city, a man carrying a pitcher of water will meet you;
follow him into whatever house he enters; [11] And you shall say to the
owner of the house 'The Teacher says to you—Where is the room
where I am to eat the Passover with my disciples?' [12] The man will
show you a large upstairs room, set out; there make preparations."
[13] So Peter and John went on, and found everything just as Jesus
had told them, and they prepared the Passover. [14] When the time
came, Jesus took his place at table, and the Apostles with him. [15] "I
have most earnestly wished," he said, "to eat this Passover with you
before I suffer. [16] For I tell you that I shall not eat it again, until it
has had its fulfilment in the Kingdom of God." [17] Then, on receiving
a cup, after saying the thanksgiving, he said: [18] "Take this and share
it among you. For I tell you that I shall not, after to-day, drink of
the juice of the grape, till the Kingdom of God has come." [19] Then
Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke it
and gave to them, with the words: "This is my body, which is now
to be given on your behalf. Do this in memory of me." [20] And in the
same way with the cup, after supper, saying: "This cup is the New
Covenant made by my blood which is being poured out on your

behalf.

21 Yet see! the hand of the man that is betraying me is
beside me upon the table! 22 True, the Son of Man is passing, by the
way ordained for him, yet alas for that man by whom he is being
betrayed!" 23 Then they began questioning one another which of
them it could be that was going to do this. 24 And a dispute arose
among them as to which of them was to be regarded as the greatest.
25 Jesus, however, said: "The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them,
and their oppressors are styled 'Benefactors.' 26 But with you it must
not be so. No, let the greatest among you become like the youngest,
and him who leads like him who serves. 27 Which is the greater—the
master at the table or his servant? Is not it the master at the table?
Yet I myself am among you as one who serves. 28 You are the men
who have stood by me in my trials; 29 And, just as my Father has
assigned me a Kingdom, I assign you places, 30 So that you may eat
and drink at my table in my Kingdom, and be seated upon twelve
thrones as judges of the twelve tribes of Israel. 31 Simon! Simon!
listen. Satan demanded leave to sift you all like wheat, 32 But I prayed
for you, Simon, that your faith should not fail. And you, when you
have returned to me, are to strengthen your Brothers." 33 "Master,"
said Peter, "with you I am ready to go both to prison and to death."
34 "I tell you, Peter," replied Jesus, "the cock will not crow to-day
till you have disowned all knowledge of me three times." 35 Then he
said to them all: "When I sent you out as my Messengers, without
either purse, or bag, or sandals, were you in need of anything?" "No;
nothing," they answered. 36 "Now, however," he said, "he who has a
purse must take it and his bag as well; and he who has not must sell
his cloak and buy a sword. 37 For, I tell you, that passage of Scripture
must be fulfilled in me, which says—'He was counted among the
godless'; indeed all that refers to me is finding its fulfilment." 38
"Master," they exclaimed, "look, here are two swords!" "Enough!"
said Jesus.

39 Jesus then went out, and made his way as usual to
the Mount of Olives, followed by his disciples. 40 And, when he
reached the spot, he said to them: "Pray that you may not fall into
temptation." 41 Then he withdrew about a stone's throw, and knelt
down and began to pray. 42 "Father," he said, "if it is thy pleasure,
spare me this cup; only, not my will but thine be done." 43 Presently
there appeared to him an angel from Heaven, who strengthened

him. 44 And, as his anguish became intense, he prayed still more
earnestly, while his sweat was like great drops of blood falling on
the ground. 45 Then he rose from praying, and came to the disciples
and found them sleeping for sorrow. 46 "Why are you asleep?" he
asked them. "Rise and pray, that you may not fall into temptation."

47 While he was still speaking, a crowd appeared in sight,
led by the man called Judas, who was one of the Twelve. Judas
approached Jesus, to kiss him; 48 On which Jesus said to him:
"Judas, is it by a kiss that you betray the Son of Man?" 49 But when
those who were round Jesus saw what was going to happen, they
exclaimed: "Master, shall we use our swords?" 50 And one of them
struck the High Priest's servant and cut off his right ear; 51 On
which Jesus said: "Let me at least do this"; and, touching his ear, he
healed the wound. 52 Then, turning to the Chief Priests and Officers
in charge at the Temple and Councillors, who had come for him,
he said: "Have you come out, as if after a robber, with swords and
clubs? 53 When I was with you day after day in the Temple Courts,
you did not lay hands on me; but now your time has come, and the
power of Darkness."

54 Those who had taken Jesus prisoner took him away into
the house of the High Priest. Peter followed at a distance. 55 But,
when they had lit a fire in the centre of the court-yard and had
all sat down there, Peter seated himself in the middle of them.
56 Presently a maidservant saw him sitting near the blaze of the
fire. Fixing her eyes on him, she said: "Why, this man was one of
his companions!" 57 But Peter denied it. "I do not know him," he
replied. 58 A little while afterwards some one else—a man—saw him
and said: "Why, you are one of them!" "No," Peter said, "I am not."
59 About an hour later another man declared positively: "This man
also was certainly with him. Why, he is a Galilean!" 60 But Peter
said: "I do not know what you are speaking about." Instantly, while
he was still speaking, a cock crowed. 61 And the Master turned and
looked at Peter; and Peter remembered the words that the Master
had said to him—"Before a cock has crowed to-day, you will disown
me three times"; 62 And he went outside and wept bitterly.

63 The men that held Jesus kept making sport of him and
beating him. 64 They blindfolded him and then questioned him.
"Now play the Prophet," they said; "who was it that struck you?"
65 And they heaped many other insults on him. 66 At daybreak the

National Council met—both the Chief Priests and the Teachers of the Law—and took Jesus before their High Council. 67 "If you are the Christ," they said, "tell us so." "If I tell you," replied Jesus, "you will not believe me; 68 And, if I question you, you will not answer. 69 But from this hour 'the Son of Man will be seated on the right hand of God Almighty.'" 70 "Are you, then, the Son of God?" they all asked. "It is true," answered Jesus, "I am." 71 At this they exclaimed: "Why do we want any more evidence? We have heard it ourselves from his own lips!"

Chapter 23

1 Then they all rose in a body and led Jesus before Pilate. 2 And they began to accuse him: "This is a man whom we found misleading our people, preventing them from paying taxes to the Emperor, and giving out that he himself is 'Christ, a King.'" 3 "Are you the King of the Jews?" Pilate asked him. "It is true," replied Jesus. 4 But Pilate, turning to the Chief Priests and the people, said: "I do not see anything to find fault with in this man." 5 But they insisted: "He is stirring up the people by his teaching all through Judea; he began with Galilee and has now come here." 6 Hearing this, Pilate asked if the man was a Galilean; 7 And, having satisfied himself that Jesus came under Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who also was at Jerusalem at the time. 8 When Herod saw Jesus, he was exceedingly pleased, for he had been wanting to see him for a long time, having heard a great deal about him; and he was hoping to see some sign given by him. 9 So he questioned him at some length, but Jesus made no reply. 10 Meanwhile the Chief Priests and the Teachers of the Law stood by and vehemently accused him. 11 And Herod, with his soldiers, treated Jesus with scorn; he mocked him by throwing a gorgeous robe round him, and then sent him back to Pilate. 12 And Herod and Pilate became friends that very day, for before that there had been ill-will between them.

13 So Pilate summoned the Chief Priests, and the leading men, and the people, 14 And said to them: "You brought this man before me charged with misleading the people; and yet, for my part, though I examined him before you, I did not find this man to blame for any of the things of which you accuse him; 15 Nor did Herod either; for he has sent him back to us. And, as a fact, he has not done anything deserving death; 16 So I shall have him scourged,

and then release him." 17 (For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.) 18 But they began to shout as one man: "Kill this fellow, but release Barabbas for us." 19 (Barabbas was a man who had been put in prison for a riot that had broken out in the city and for murder.) 20 Pilate, however, wanting to release Jesus, called to them again; 21 But they kept calling out: "Crucify, crucify him!" 22 "Why, what harm has this man done?" Pilate said to them for the third time. "I have found nothing in him for which he could be condemned to death. So I will have him scourged, and then release him." 23 But they persisted in loudly demanding his crucifixion; and their clamour gained the day. 24 Pilate decided that their demand should be granted. 25 He released the man who had been put in prison for riot and murder, as they demanded, and gave Jesus up to be dealt with as they pleased.

26 And, as they were leading Jesus away, they laid hold of Simon from Cyrene, who was on his way in from the country, and they put the cross on his shoulders, for him to carry it behind Jesus. 27 There was a great crowd of people following him, many being women who were beating their breasts and wailing for him. 28 So Jesus turned and said to them: "Women of Jerusalem, do not weep for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. 29 A time, I tell you, is coming, when it will be said—'Happy are the women who are barren, and those who have never borne children or nursed them!' 30 At that time people will begin to say to the mountains 'Fall on us,' and to the hills 'Cover us.' 31 If what you see is done while the tree is green, what will happen when it is dry?"

32 There were two others also, criminals, led out to be executed with Jesus. 33 When they had reached the place called 'The Skull,' there they crucified Jesus and the criminals, one on the right, and one on the left. 34 Then Jesus said: "Father, forgive them; they do not know what they are doing." His clothes they divided among them by casting lots. 35 Meanwhile the people stood looking on. Even the leading men said with a sneer: "He saved others, let him save himself, if he is God's Christ, his Chosen One." 36 The soldiers, too, came up in mockery, bringing him common wine, 37 And saying as they did so: "If you are the King of the Jews, save yourself." 38 Above him were the words—'THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.' 39 One of the criminals who were hanging beside Jesus railed at him. "Are not you the Christ? Save yourself and us," he said. 40 But the

other rebuked him. “Have not you,” he said, “any fear of God, now that you are under the same sentence? 41 And we justly so, for we are only reaping our deserts, but this man has not done anything wrong. 42 Jesus,” he went on, “do not forget me when you have come to your Kingdom.” 43 And Jesus answered: “I tell you, this very day you shall be with me in Paradise.”

44 It was nearly mid-day, when a darkness came over the whole country, lasting till three in the afternoon, 45 The sun being eclipsed; and the Temple curtain was torn down the middle. 46 Then Jesus, with a loud cry, said: “Father, into thy hands I commit my spirit.” And with these words he expired. 47 The Roman Captain, on seeing what had happened, praised God, exclaiming: “This must have been a good man!” 48 All the people who had collected to see the sight watched what occurred, and then went home beating their breasts. 49 All the friends of Jesus had been standing at a distance, with the women who accompanied him from Galilee, watching all this.

50 Now there was a man of the name of Joseph, who was a member of the Council, and who bore a good and upright character. 51 (This man had not assented to the decision and action of the Council.) He belonged to Ramah, a town in Judea, and lived in expectation of the Kingdom of God. 52 He now went to see Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus; 53 And, when he had taken it down, he wrapped it in a linen sheet, and laid him in a tomb cut out of stone, in which no one had yet been buried. 54 It was the Preparation Day, and just before the Sabbath began. 55 The women who had accompanied Jesus from Galilee followed, and saw the tomb and how the body of Jesus was laid, 56 And then went home, and prepared spices and perfumes. During the Sabbath they rested, as directed by the commandment

Chapter 24

1 But very early on the first day of the week they went to the tomb, taking with them the spices that they had prepared. 2 They found that the stone had been rolled away from the tomb; 3 And, on going into it, they could not find the body of the Lord Jesus. 4 While they were at a loss to account for this, all at once two men stood beside them, in dazzling clothing. 5 But, when in their fear the women bowed their faces to the ground, the men said to them:

“Why are you looking among the dead for him who is living? 6 He is not here; but he has risen. Remember how he spoke to you before he left Galilee— 7 How he said that the Son of Man must be betrayed into the hands of wicked men, and be crucified, and rise again on the third day.” 8 Then they remembered the words of Jesus, 9 And, on returning from the tomb, they told all this to the Eleven and to all the rest. 10 There were Mary of Magdala, and Joanna, and Mary, the mother of James. The other women, too, spoke about this to the Apostles. 11 What they said seemed to the Apostles mere nonsense, and they did not believe them. 12 But Peter got up and ran to the tomb. Stooping down he saw nothing but the linen wrappings, and he went away, wondering to himself at what had taken place.

13 It happened that very day that two of the disciples were going to a village called Emmaus, which was about seven miles from Jerusalem, 14 Talking together, as they went, about all that had just taken place. 15 While they were talking about these things and discussing them, Jesus himself came up and went on their way with them; 16 But their eyes were blinded so that they could not recognize him. 17 “What is this that you are saying to each other as you walk along?” Jesus asked. They stopped, with sad looks on their faces, 18 And then one of them, whose name was Cleopas, said to Jesus: “Are you staying by yourself at Jerusalem, that you have not heard of the things that have happened there within the last few days?” 19 “What things do you mean?” asked Jesus. “Why, about Jesus of Nazareth,” they answered, “who, in the eyes of God and all the people, was a Prophet, whose power was felt in both his words and actions; 20 And how the Chief Priests and our leading men gave him up to be sentenced to death, and afterwards crucified him. 21 But we were hoping that he was the Destined Deliverer of Israel; yes, and besides all this, it is now three days since these things occurred. 22 And what is more, some of the women among us have greatly astonished us. They went to the tomb at daybreak 23 And, not finding the body of Jesus there, came and told us that they had seen a vision of angels who told them that he was alive. 24 So some of our number went to the tomb and found everything just as the women had said; but they did not see Jesus.” 25 Then Jesus said to them: “O foolish men, slow to accept all that the Prophets have said! 26 Was not the Christ bound to undergo this suffering before entering upon his Glory?” 27 Then, beginning with Moses and all the Prophets,

he explained to them all through the Scriptures the passages that referred to himself. 28 When they got near the village to which they were walking, Jesus appeared to be going further; 29 But they pressed him not to do so. “Stay with us,” they said, “for it is getting towards evening, and the sun in already low.” So Jesus went in to stay with them. 30 After he had taken his place at table with them, he took the bread and said the blessing, and broke it, and gave it to them. 31 Then their eyes were opened and they recognized him; but he disappeared from their sight. 32 “How our hearts glowed,” the disciples said to each other, “while he was talking to us on the road, and when he explained the Scriptures to us!” 33 Then they immediately got up and returned to Jerusalem, where they found the Eleven and their companions all together, 34 Who told them that the Master had really risen, and had appeared to Simon. 35 So they also related what had happened during their walk, and how they had recognized Jesus at the Breaking of the Bread.

36 While they were still talking about these things, Jesus himself stood among them, and said “Peace be with you.” 37 In their terror and alarm they thought they saw a spirit, 38 But Jesus said to them: “Why are you so startled? and why do doubts arise in you minds? 39 Look at my hands and my feet, and you will know that it is I. Feel me, and look at me, for a spirit has not flesh and bones, as you see that I have.” 40 After saying this he showed them his hands and his feet. 41 While they were still unable to believe it all for very joy, and were wondering if it were true, Jesus said to them: “Have you anything here to eat?” 42 They handed him a piece of broiled fish, 43 And he took it and ate it before their eyes. 44 “This is what I told you,” he said, “when I was still with you—that everything that had been written about me in the Law of Moses, the Prophets, and the Psalms, must be fulfilled.” 45 Then he enabled them to understand the meaning of the Scriptures, saying to them: 46 “Scripture says that the Christ should suffer, and that he should rise again from the dead on the third day, 47 And that repentance for forgiveness of sins should be proclaimed on his authority to all the nations—beginning at Jerusalem. 48 You yourselves are to be witnesses to all this. 49 And now I am myself about to send upon you that which my Father has promised. But you must remain in the city until you have been invested with power from above.”

50 After this, Jesus led them out as far as Bethany, and there

raised his hands and blessed them. 51 As he was in the act of blessing them, he left them and was carried up into Heaven. 52 They bowed to the ground before him and returned to Jerusalem full of joy; 53 And they were constantly in the Temple Courts, blessing God.

The Gospel According to John

Chapter 1

1 In the Beginning the Word was; and the Word was with
God; and the Word was God.[4] 2 He was in the Beginning with God;
3 Through him all things came into being, and nothing came into
being apart from him. 4 That which came into being in him was Life;
and the Life was the Light of Man; 5 And the Light shines in the
darkness, and the darkness never overpowered it.

6 There appeared a man sent from God, whose name was
John; 7 He came as a witness—to bear witness to the Light that
through him all men might believe. 8 He was not the Light, but he
came to bear witness to the Light. 9 That was the True Light which
enlightens every man coming into the world. 10 He was in the world;
and through him the world came into being—yet the world did not
know him. 11 He came to his own—yet his own did not receive him.
12 But to all who did receive him he gave power to become Children
of God—to those who believe in his Name. 13 For not to natural
conception, nor to human instincts, nor to will of man did they owe
the new Life, but to God. 14 And the Word became Man, and dwelt
among us, (We saw his glory—the glory of the Only Son sent from
the Father), full of love and truth.

15 (John bears witness to him; he cried aloud—for it was he
who spoke—"'He who is Coming' after me is now before me, for
he was ever first"); 16 Out of his fullness we have all received some
gift, gift after gift of love; 17 For the Law was given through Moses,
love and truth came through Jesus Christ. 18 No man has ever yet
seen God; God the Only Son, who is ever with the Father—He has
revealed him.

19 When the Jews sent some Priests and Levites to John
from Jerusalem, to ask—"Who are you?", his statement was this:
20 He confessed and did not deny it, he confessed—"I am not the
Christ." 21 "What then?" they asked. "Are you Elijah?" "No," he said,
"I am not." "Are you 'the Prophet'?" He answered, "No." 22 "Who
then are you?" they continued; "tell us, that we may have some

[4] *Literally* In beginning was the Word, and the Word was toward the God, and God was the Word.

answer to give to those who have sent us. What do you say about yourself?" 23 "I," he answered, "am—'The voice of one crying aloud in the Wilderness—"straighten the way of the Lord"', as the Prophet Isaiah said." 24 These men had been sent from the Pharisees; 25 And their next question was: "Why then do you baptize, if you are not the Christ, nor Elijah, nor yet 'the Prophet'?" 26 John's answer was—"I baptize with water, but among you stands one whom you do not know; 27 He is coming after me, yet I am not worthy even to unfasten his sandal." 28 All this took place at Bethany, across the Jordan, where John was then baptizing.

29 The next day John saw Jesus coming towards him, and exclaimed: "Here is the Lamb of God, who is to take away the sin of the world! 30 It was of him that I spoke when I said 'After me there is coming a man who is now before me, for he was ever First.' 31 I myself did not know him, but, that he may be made known to Israel, I have come, baptizing with water." 32 John also made this statement—"I have seen the Spirit descending as a dove out of the heavens, and it remained upon him. 33 I myself did not know him, but he who sent me to baptize with water, he said to me 'He upon whom you see the Spirit descending, and remaining upon him—he it is who baptizes with the Holy Spirit.' 34 This I have seen myself, and I have declared my belief that he is the Son of God." 35 The next day, when John was standing with two of his disciples, 36 He looked at Jesus as he passed and exclaimed: "There is the Lamb of God!"

37 The two disciples heard him say this, and followed Jesus. 38 But Jesus turned round, and saw them following. "What are you looking for?" he asked. "Rabbi," they answered (or, as we should say, "Teacher"), "where are you staying?" 39 "Come, and you shall see," he replied. So they went, and saw where he was staying, and spent that day with him. It was then about four in the afternoon. 40 One of the two, who heard what John said and followed Jesus, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. 41 He first found his own brother Simon, and said to him: "We have found the Messiah!" (a word which means 'Christ,' or 'Consecrated'.) 42 Then he brought him to Jesus. Fixing his eyes on him, Jesus said: "You are Simon, the son of John; you shall be called Kephas" (which means 'Peter,' or 'Rock').

43 The following day Jesus decided to leave for Galilee. He found Philip, and said to him: "Follow me." 44 Philip was from Bethsaida, and a fellow-townsman of Andrew and Peter. 45 He

found Nathanael and said to him: "We have found him of whom Moses wrote in the Law, and of whom the Prophets also wrote—Jesus of Nazareth, Joseph's son!" 46 "Can anything good come out of Nazareth?" asked Nathanael. "Come and see," replied Philip. 47 When Jesus saw Nathanael coming towards him, he said: "Here is a true Israelite, in whom there is no deceit!" 48 "How do you know me?" asked Nathanael. "Even before Philip called you," replied Jesus, "when you were under the fig tree, I saw you." 49 "Rabbi," Nathanael exclaimed, "you are the Son of God, you are King of Israel!" 50 "Do you believe in me," asked Jesus, "because I told you that I saw you under the fig tree? You shall see greater things than those! 51 In truth I tell you," he added, "you shall all see Heaven open, and 'the angels of God ascending and descending' upon the Son of Man."

Chapter 2

1 Two days after this there was a wedding at Cana in Galilee, and Jesus' mother was there. 2 Jesus himself, too, with his disciples, was invited to the wedding. 3 And, when the wine ran short, his mother said to him: "They have no wine left." 4 "What do you want with me?" answered Jesus. "My time has not come yet." 5 His mother said to the servants: "Do whatever he tells you." 6 There were standing there six stone water-jars, in accordance with the Jewish rule of 'purification,' each holding twenty or thirty gallons. 7 Jesus said to the servants: "Fill the water-jars with water;" 8 And, when they had filled them to the brim, he added: "Now take some out, and carry it to the Master of the Feast." The servants did so. 9 And, when the Master of the Feast had tasted the water which had now become wine, not knowing where it had come from—although the servants who had taken out the water knew— 10 He called the bridegroom and said to him: "Every one puts good wine on the table first, and inferior wine afterwards, when his guests have drunk freely; but you have kept back the good wine till now!" 11 This, the first sign of his mission, Jesus gave at Cana in Galilee, and by it revealed his glory; and his disciples believed in him.

12 After this, Jesus went down to Capernaum—he, his mother, his brothers, and his disciples; but they stayed there only a few days. 13 Then, as the Jewish Passover was near, Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 14 In the Temple Courts he found people who were

selling bullocks, sheep, and pigeons, and the money-changers at their counters. 15 So he made a whip of cords, and drove them all out of the Temple Courts, and the sheep and bullocks as well; he scattered the money of the money-changers, and overturned their tables, 16 And said to the pigeon-dealers: "Take these things away. Do not turn my Father's House into a market-house." 17 His disciples remembered that Scripture said—'Zeal for thy House will consume me.' 18 Upon this the Jews asked Jesus: "What sign are you going to show us, since you act in this way?" 19 "Destroy this temple," was his answer, "and I will raise it in three days." 20 "This Temple," replied the Jews, "has been forty-six years in building, and are you going to 'raise it in three days'?" 21 But Jesus was speaking of his body as a temple. 22 Afterwards, when he had risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this; and they believed the passage of Scripture, and the words which Jesus had spoken.

23 While Jesus was in Jerusalem, during the Passover Festival, many came to trust in him, when they saw the signs of his mission that he was giving. 24 But Jesus did not trust himself to them, since he could read every heart, 25 And because he did not need that others should tell him what men were; for he could of himself read what was in men.

Chapter 3

1 Now there was a Pharisee named Nicodemus, who was a leading man among the Jews. 2 This man came to Jesus by night, and said to him: "Rabbi, we know that you are a Teacher come from God; for no one could give such signs as you are giving, unless God were with him." 3 "In truth I tell you," exclaimed Jesus, "unless a man is reborn, he cannot see the Kingdom of God." 4 "How can a man," asked Nicodemus, "be born when he is old? Can he be born a second time?" 5 "In truth I tell you," answered Jesus, "unless a man owes his birth to Water and Spirit, he cannot enter the Kingdom of God. 6 All that owes its birth to human nature is human, and all that owes its birth to the Spirit is spiritual. 7 Do not wonder at my telling you that you all need to be reborn. 8 The wind blows where it wills, and you can hear the sound of it, but you do not know whence it comes, or where it goes; it is the same with every one that owes his birth to the Spirit." 9 "How can that be?" asked Nicodemus. 10 "What! You a teacher of Israel," exclaimed Jesus, "and yet do not understand this!

11 In truth I tell you that we speak of what we know, and state what we have seen; and yet you do not accept our statements. 12 If, when I tell you earthly things, you do not believe me, how will you believe me when I tell you of heavenly things? 13 No one has ascended to Heaven, except him who descended from Heaven—the Son of Man himself. 14 And, as Moses lifted up the serpent in the desert, so must the Son of Man be lifted up; 15 That every one who believes in him may have Immortal Life." 16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only Son, that every one who believes in him may not be lost, but have Immortal Life. 17 For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world might be saved through him. 18 He who believes in him escapes condemnation, while he who does not believe in him is already condemned, because he has not believed in the only Son of God. 19 The ground of his condemnation is this, that though the Light has come into the world, men preferred the darkness to the Light, because their actions were wicked. 20 For he who lives an evil life hates the light, and will not come to it, for fear that his actions should be exposed; 21 But he who acts up to the truth comes to the light, that his actions may be shown to have been done in dependence upon God.

22 After this, Jesus went with his disciples into the country parts of Judea; and there he stayed with them, and baptized. 23 John, also, was baptizing at Aenon near Salim, because there were many streams there; and people were constantly coming and being baptized. 24 (For John had not yet been imprisoned). 25 Now a discussion arose between some of John's disciples and a Jew on the subject of 'purification;' 26 And the disciples came to John and said: "Rabbi, the man who was with you on the other side of the Jordan, and to whom you have yourself borne testimony—he, also, is baptizing, and everybody is going to him." 27 John's answer was—"A man can gain nothing but what is given him from Heaven. 28 You are yourselves witnesses that I said 'I am not the Christ,' but 'I have been sent before him as a Messenger.' 29 It is the bridegroom who has the bride; but the bridegroom's friend, who stands by and listens to him, is filled with joy when he hears the bridegroom's voice. This joy I have felt to the full. 30 He must become greater, and I less." 31 He who comes from above is above all others; but a child of earth is earthly, and his teaching is earthly, too. He who comes from Heaven is above all others. 32 He states what he has seen and

what he heard, and yet no one accepts his statement. 33 They who
did accept his statement attested the fact that God is true. 34 For he
whom God sent as his Messenger gives us God's own teaching, for
God does not limit the gift of the Spirit. 35 The Father loves his Son,
and has put everything in his hands. 36 He who believes in the Son
has Immortal Life, while he who rejects the Son will not even see
that Life, but remains under 'God's displeasure.'

Chapter 4

1 Now, when the Master heard that the Pharisees had been
told that he was making and baptizing more disciples than John 2
(Though it was not Jesus himself, but his disciples, who baptized), 3
He left Judea, and set out again for Galilee.

4 He had to pass through Samaria, 5 And, on his way, he
came to a Samaritan town called Shechem, near the plot of land
that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. 6 Jacob's Spring was there, and
Jesus, being tired after his journey, sat down beside the spring, just
as he was. It was then about mid-day. 7 A woman of Samaria came
to draw water; and Jesus said to her—"Give me some to drink," 8
For his disciples had gone into the town to buy food. 9 "How is it,"
replied the Samaritan woman, "that you who are a Jew ask for water
from a Samaritan woman like me?" (For Jews do not associate with
Samaritans). 10 "If you knew of the gift of God," replied Jesus, "and
who it is that is saying to you 'Give me some water,' you would have
asked him, and he would have given you 'living water'." 11 "You have
no bucket, Sir, and the well is deep," she said; "where did you get
that 'living water?' 12 Surely you are not greater than our ancestor
Jacob who gave us the well, and used to drink from it himself, and
his sons, and his cattle!" 13 "All who drink of this water," replied
Jesus, "will be thirsty again; 14 But whoever once drinks of the water
that I will give him shall never thirst any more; but the water that I
will give him shall become a spring welling up within him—a source
of Immortal Life." 15 "Give me this water, Sir," said the woman,
"so that I may not be thirsty, nor have to come all the way here to
draw water." 16 "Go and call your husband," said Jesus, "and then
come back." 17 "I have no husband," answered the woman. "You are
right in saying 'I have no husband,'" replied Jesus, 18 "For you have
had five husbands, and the man with whom you are now living is
not your husband; in saying that, you have spoken the truth." 19 "I

see, Sir, that you are a Prophet!" exclaimed the woman. 20 "It was
on this mountain that our ancestors worshiped; and yet you Jews
say that the proper place for worship is in Jerusalem." 21 "Believe
me," replied Jesus, "a time is coming when it will be neither on
this mountain nor in Jerusalem that you will worship the Father. 22
You Samaritans do not know what you worship; we know what we
worship, for Salvation comes from the Jews. 23 But a time is coming,
indeed it is already here, when the true worshipers will worship the
Father spiritually and truly; for such are the worshipers that the
Father desires. 24 God is Spirit; and those who worship him must
worship spiritually and truly." 25 "I know," answered the woman,
"that the Messiah, who is called the Christ, is coming; when once he
has come, he will tell us everything." 26 "I am he," Jesus said to her,
"I who am speaking to you."

27 At this moment his disciples came up, and were surprised
to find him talking with a woman; but none of them asked 'What
do you want?' or 'Why are you talking with her?' 28 So the woman,
leaving her pitcher, went back to the town, and said to the people:
29 "Come and see someone who has told me everything that I have
done. Can he be the Christ?" 30 And the people left the town and
went to see Jesus. 31 Meanwhile the disciples kept saying to him:
"Take something to eat, Rabbi." 32 "I have food to eat," he answered,
"of which you know nothing." 33 "Can any one have brought him
anything to eat?" the disciples said to one another. 34 "My food,"
replied Jesus, "is to do the will of him who sent me, and to complete
his work. 35 Do not you say that it still wants four months to harvest?
Why, look up, and see how white the fields are for harvest! 36
Already the reaper is receiving wages and gathering in sheaves for
Immortal Life, so that sower and reaper rejoice together. 37 For here
the proverb holds good—'One sows, another reaps.' 38 I have sent
you to reap that on which you have spent no labour; others have
laboured, and you have entered upon the results of their labour." 39
Many from that town came to believe in Jesus—Samaritans though
they were—on account of the woman's statement—'He has told me
everything that I have done.' 40 And, when these Samaritans had
come to Jesus, they begged him to stay with them, and he stayed
there two days. 41 But far more came to believe in him on account of
what he said himself, 42 And they said to the woman: "It is no longer
because of what you say that we believe in him, for we have heard

him ourselves and know that he really is the Saviour of the world."

43 After these two days Jesus went on to Galilee; 44 For
he himself declared that 'a Prophet is not honoured in his own
country.' 45 When he entered Galilee, the Galileans welcomed him,
for they had seen all that he did at Jerusalem during the Festival, at
which they also had been present. 46 So Jesus came again to Cana
in Galilee, where he had turned the water into wine. Now there was
one of the King's officers whose son was lying ill at Capernaum.
47 When this man heard that Jesus had returned from Judea to
Galilee, he went to him, and begged him to come down and cure
his son; for he was at the point of death. 48 Jesus answered: "Unless
you all see signs and wonders, you will not believe." 49 "Sir," said
the officer, "come down before my child dies." And Jesus answered:
"Go, your son is living." 50 The man believed what Jesus said to him,
and went; 51 And, while he was on his way down, his servants met
him, and told him that his child was living. 52 So he asked them at
what time the boy began to get better. "It was yesterday, about one
o'clock," they said, "that the fever left him." 53 By this the father
knew that it was at the very time when Jesus had said to him 'Your
son is living'; and he himself, with all his household, believed in
Jesus. 54 This was the second occasion on which Jesus gave a sign of
his mission on coming from Judea to Galilee.

Chapter 5

1 Sometime after this there was a Jewish Festival; and Jesus
went up to Jerusalem. 2 There is in Jerusalem, near the Sheep-
gate, a Bath with five colonnades round it. It is called in Hebrew
'Bethesda.' 3 In these colonnades a large number of afflicted people
were lying—blind, lame, and crippled. 4 For an angel went down at
a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever
then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made
whole of whatsoever disease he had. 5 One man who was there had
been afflicted for thirty-eight years. 6 Jesus saw the man lying there,
and, finding that he had been in this state a long time, said to him:
"Do you wish to be cured?" 7 "I have no one, Sir," the afflicted man
answered, "to put me into the Bath when there is a troubling of the
water, and, while I am getting to it, some one else steps down before
me." 8 "Stand up," said Jesus, "take up your mat, and walk about." 9
The man was cured immediately, and took up his mat and began to

walk about. 10 Now it was the Sabbath. So the Jews said to the man
who had been cured: "This is the Sabbath; you must not carry your
mat." 11 "The man who cured me," he answered, "said to me 'Take
up your mat and walk about.'" 12 "Who was it," they asked, "that said
to you 'Take up your mat and walk about'?" 13 But the man who had
been restored did not know who it was; for Jesus had moved away,
because there was a crowd there. 14 Afterwards Jesus found the man
in the Temple Courts, and said to him: "You are cured now; do not
sin again, for fear that something worse may befall you." 15 The man
went away, and told the Jews that it was Jesus who had cured him.
16 And that was why the Jews began to persecute Jesus—because he
did things of this kind on the Sabbath.

17 But Jesus replied: "My Father works to this very hour,
and I work also." 18 This made the Jews all the more eager to kill
him, because not only was he doing away with the Sabbath, but he
actually called God his own Father—putting himself on an equality
with God. 19 So Jesus made this further reply: "In truth I tell you,
the Son can do nothing of himself; he does only what he sees the
Father doing; whatever the Father does, the Son does also. 20 For
the Father loves his Son, and shows him everything that he is doing;
and he will show him still greater things—so that you will be filled
with wonder. 21 For, just as the Father raises the dead and gives
them Life, so also the Son gives Life to whom he pleases. 22 The
Father himself does not judge any man, but has 'entrusted the work
of judging entirely to his Son,' 23 So that all men may honour the
Son, just as they honour the Father. He who does not honour the
Son fails to honour the Father who sent him. 24 In truth I tell you
that he who listens to my Message and believes him who sent me,
has Immortal Life, and does not come under condemnation, but
has already passed out of Death into Life. 25 In truth I tell you that a
time is coming, indeed it is already here, when the Dead will listen
to the voice of the Son of God, and when those who listen will live. 26
For, just as the Father has inherent Life within him, so also he has
granted to the Son to have inherent Life within him; 27 And, because
he is Son of Man, he has also given him authority to act as judge.
28 Do not wonder at this; for the time is coming when all who are
in their graves will hear his voice, 29 And will come out—those who
have done good rising to Life, and those who have lived evil lives
rising for condemnation. 30 I can do nothing of myself; I judge as I

am taught; and the judgement that I give is just, because my aim is not to do my own will, but the will of him who sent me.

31 If I bear testimony to myself, my testimony is not trustworthy; 32 It is another who bears testimony to me, and I know that the testimony which he bears to me is trustworthy. 33 You have yourselves sent to John, and he as testified to the Truth. 34 But the testimony which I receive is not from man; I am saying this for your Salvation. 35 He was the 'Lamp that was burning' and shining, and you were ready to rejoice, for a time, in his light. 36 But the testimony which I have is of greater weight than John's; for the work that the Father has given me to carry out—the work that I am doing—is in itself proof that the Father has sent me as his Messenger. 37 The Father who has sent me has himself borne testimony to me. You have neither listened to his voice, not seen his form; 38 And you have not taken his Message home to your hearts, because you do not believe him whom he sent as his Messenger. 39 You search the Scriptures, because you think that you find in them Immortal Life; 40 And, though it is those very Scriptures that bear testimony to me, you refuse to come to me to have life. 41 I do not receive honour from men, 42 But I know this of you, that you have not the love of God in your hearts. 43 I have come in my Father's name, and you do not receive me; if another comes in his own name, you will receive him. 44 How can you believe in me, when you receive honour from one another and do not desire the honour which comes from the only God? 45 Do not think that I shall accuse you to the Father; your accuser is Moses, on whom you have been resting your hopes. 46 For, had you believed Moses, you would have believed me, for it was of me that Moses wrote; 47 But, if you do not believe his writings, how will you believe my teaching?"

Chapter 6

1 After this, Jesus crossed the Sea of Galilee—otherwise called the Lake of Tiberias. 2 A great crowd of people, however, followed him, because they saw the signs of his mission in his work among those who were afflicted. 3 Jesus went up the hill, and sat down there with his disciples. 4 It was near the time of the Jewish Festival of the Passover. 5 Looking up, and noticing that a great crowd was coming towards him, Jesus said to Philip: "Where are we to buy bread for these people to eat?" 6 He said this to test him,

for he himself knew what he meant to do. 7 "Twenty pounds' worth of bread," answered Philip, "would not be enough for each of them to have a little." 8 "There is a boy here," said Andrew, another of his disciples, Simon Peter's brother, 9 "Who has five barley loaves and two fishes; but what is that for so many?" 10 "Make the people sit down," said Jesus. It was a grassy spot; so the men, who numbered about five thousand, sat down, 11 And then Jesus took the loaves, and, after saying the thanksgiving, distributed them to those who were sitting down; and the same with the fish, giving the people as much as they wanted. 12 When they were satisfied, Jesus said to his disciples: "Collect the broken pieces that are left, so that nothing may be wasted." 13 The disciples did so, and filled twelve baskets with the pieces of the five barley loaves, which were left after all had eaten. 14 When the people saw the signs which Jesus gave, they said: "This is certainly 'the Prophet who was to come' into the world."

15 But Jesus, having discovered that they were intending to come and carry him off to make him King, retired again up the hill, quite alone. 16 When evening fell, his disciples went down to the Sea, 17 And, getting into a boat, began to cross to Capernaum. By this time darkness had set in, and Jesus had not yet come back to them; 18 The Sea, too, was getting rough, for a strong wind was blowing. 19 When they had rowed three or four miles, they caught sight of him walking on the water and approaching the boat, and they were frightened. 20 But Jesus said to them: "It is I; do not be afraid!" 21 And after this they were glad to take him into the boat; and the boat at once arrived off the shore, for which they had been making.

22 The people who remained on the further side of the Sea had seen that only one boat had been there, and that Jesus had not gone into it with his disciples, but that they had left without him. 23 Some boats, however, had come from Tiberias, from near the spot where they had eaten the bread after the Master had said the thanksgiving. 24 So, on the next day, when the people saw that Jesus was not there, or his disciples either, they themselves got into the boats, and went to Capernaum to look for him. 25 And, when they found him on the other side of the Sea, they said: "When did you get here, Rabbi?" 26 "In truth I tell you," answered Jesus, "it is not on account of the signs which you saw that you are looking for me, but because you had the bread to eat and were satisfied. 27 Work, not for the food that perishes, but for the food that lasts for Immortal Life,

which the Son of Man will give you; for upon him the Father—God himself—has set the seal of his approval."

28 "How," they asked, "are we to do the work that God would have us do?" 29 "The work that God would have you do," answered Jesus, "is to believe in him whom God sent as his Messenger." 30 "What sign, then," they asked, "are you giving, which we may see, and so believe you? What is the work that you are doing? 31 Our ancestors had the manna to eat in the desert; as Scripture says—'He gave them bread from Heaven to eat.'" 32 "In truth I tell you," replied Jesus, "Moses did not give you the Bread from Heaven, but my Father does give you the true Bread from Heaven; 33 For the Bread that God gives is that which comes down from Heaven, and gives Life to the world." 34 "Master," they exclaimed, "give us that Bread always!" 35 "I am the Life-giving Bread," Jesus said to them; "he that comes to me shall never be hungry, and he that believes in me shall never thirst again. 36 But, as I have said already, you have seen me, and yet you do not believe in me. 37 All those whom the Father gives me will come to me; and no one who comes to me will I ever turn away. 38 For I have come down from Heaven, to do, not my own will, but the will of him who sent me; 39 And his will is this—that I should not lose one of all those whom he has given me, but should raise them up at the Last Day. 40 For it is the will of my Father that every one who sees the Son, and believes in him, should have Immortal Life; and I myself will raise him up at the Last Day." 41 Upon this the Jews began murmuring against Jesus for saying—'I am the Bread which came down from Heaven.' 42 "Is not this Jesus, Joseph's son," they asked, "whose father and mother we know? How is it that he now says that he has come down from Heaven?" 43 "Do not murmur among yourselves," said Jesus in reply. 44 "No one can come to me, unless the Father who sent me draws him to me; and I will raise him up at the Last Day. 45 It is said in the Prophets—'And they shall all be taught by God.' Every one who is taught by the Father and learns from him comes to me. 46 Not that any one has seen the Father, except him who is from God—he has seen the Father. 47 In truth I tell you, he who believes in me has Immortal Life. 48 I am the Life-giving Bread. 49 Your ancestors ate the manna in the desert, and yet died. 50 The Bread that comes down from Heaven is such that whoever eats of it will never die. 51 I am the Living Bread that has come down from Heaven. If any one eats of this Bread, he will

live for ever; and the Bread that I shall give is my flesh, which I will give for the Life of the world." 52 Upon this the Jews began disputing with one another: "How is it possible for this man to give us his flesh to eat?" 53 "In truth I tell you," answered Jesus, "unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man, and drink his blood, you have not Life within you. 54 He who takes my flesh for his food, and drinks my blood, has Immortal Life; and I will raise him up at the Last Day. 55 For my flesh is true food, and my blood true drink. 56 He who takes my flesh for his food, and drinks my blood, remains united to me, and I to him. 57 As the Living Father sent me as his Messenger, and as I live because the Father lives, so he who takes me for his food shall live because I live. 58 That is the Bread which has come down from Heaven—not such as your ancestors ate, and yet died; he who takes this Bread for his food shall live for ever." 59 All this Jesus said in a Synagogue, when he was teaching in Capernaum.

60 On hearing it, many of his disciples said: "This is harsh doctrine! Who can bear to listen to it?" 61 But Jesus, aware that his disciples were murmuring about it, said to them: 62 "Is this a hindrance to you? What, then, if you should see the Son of Man ascending where he was before? 63 It is the Spirit that gives Life; mere flesh is of no avail. In the teaching that I have been giving you there is Spirit and there is Life. 64 Yet there are some of you who do not believe in me." For Jesus knew from the first who they were that did not believe in him, and who it was that would betray him; 65 And he added: "This is why I told you that no one can come to me, unless enabled by the Father." 66 After this many of his disciples drew back, and did not go about with him any longer. 67 So Jesus said to the Twelve: "Do you also wish to leave me?" 68 But Simon Peter answered: "Master, to whom shall we go? Immortal Life is in your teaching; 69 And we have learned to believe and to know that you are the Holy One of God." 70 "Did not I myself choose you to be the Twelve?" replied Jesus; "and yet, even of you, one is playing the 'Devil's' part." 71 He meant Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot, who was about to betray him, though he was one of the Twelve.

Chapter 7

1 After this, Jesus went about in Galilee, for he would not do so in Judea, because the Jews were eager to put him to death. 2 When the Jewish Festival of Tabernacles was near, 3 His brothers said to

him: “Leave this part of the country, and go into Judea, so that your
disciples, as well as we, may see the work that you are doing. 4 For
no one does a thing privately, if he is seeking to be widely known.
Since you do these things, you should show yourself publicly to the
world.” 5 For even his brothers did not believe in him. 6 “My time,”
answered Jesus, “is not come yet, but your time is always here. 7
The world cannot hate you, but it does hate me, because I testify
that its ways are evil. 8 Go yourselves up to the Festival; I am not
going to this Festival yet, because my time has not yet come.” 9 After
telling them this, he stayed on in Galilee. 10 But, when his brothers
had gone up to the Festival, Jesus also went up—not publicly, but
privately. 11 The Jews were looking for him at the Festival and
asking ‘Where is he?’; 12 And there were many whispers about him
among the people, some saying ‘He is a good man;’ others: ‘No! he
is leading the people astray.’ 13 No one, however, spoke freely about
him, for fear of the Jews.

14 About the middle of the Festival week, Jesus went up
into the Temple Courts, and began teaching. 15 The Jews were
astonished. “How has this man got his learning,” they asked, “when
he has never studied?” 16 So, in reply, Jesus said: “My teaching is
not my own; it is his who sent me. 17 If any one has the will to do
God’s will, he will find out whether my teaching is from God, or
whether I speak on my own authority. 18 The man who speaks on his
own authority seeks honour for himself; but the man who seeks the
honour of him that sent him is sincere, and there is nothing false in
him. 19 Was not it Moses who gave you the Law? Yet not one of you
obeys it! Why are you seeking to put me to death?” 20 “You must
be possessed by a demon!” the people exclaimed. “Who is seeking
to put you to death?” 21 “There was one thing I did,” replied Jesus,
“at which you are all still wondering. 22 But that is why Moses has
instituted circumcision among you—not, indeed, that it began with
him, but with our ancestors—and that is why you circumcise even
on a Sabbath. 23 When a man receives circumcision on a Sabbath to
prevent the Law of Moses from being broken, how can you be angry
with me for making a man sound and well on a Sabbath? 24 Do not
judge by appearances; judge justly.” 25 At this some of the people
of Jerusalem exclaimed: “Is not this the man that they are seeking
to put to death? 26 Yet here he is, speaking out boldly, and they
say nothing to him! Is it possible that our leading men have really

discovered that he is the Christ? 27 Yet we know where this man is
from; but, when the Christ comes, no one will be able to tell where
he is from.” 28 Therefore, Jesus, as he was teaching in the Temple
Courts, raised his voice and said: “Yes; you know me and you
know where I am from. Yet I have not come on my own authority,
but he who sent me may be trusted; and him you do not know. 29
I do know him, for it is from him that I have come, and he sent
me as his Messenger.” 30 So they sought to arrest him; but no one
touched him, for his time was not come yet. 31 Many of the people,
however, believed in him. “When the Christ comes,” they said, “will
he give more signs of his mission than this man has given?” 32 The
Pharisees heard the people whispering about him in this way, and
so the Chief Priests and the Pharisees sent officers to arrest him;
33 On which Jesus said: “I shall be with you but a little longer, and
then I am going to him who sent me. 34 You will look for me, and you
will not find me; and you will not be able to come where I shall be.”
35 “Where is this man going,” the Jews asked one another, “that we
shall not find him? Will he go to our countrymen abroad, and teach
foreigners? 36 What does he mean by saying ‘You will look for me,
and you will not find me; and you will not be able to come where I
shall be’?”

37 On the last and greatest day of the Festival, Jesus, who
was standing by, exclaimed: “If any one thirsts, let him come to me,
and drink. 38 He who believes in me—As Scripture says, Out of his
heart shall flow rivers of ‘Living Water.’” 39 (By this he meant the
Spirit, which those who had believed in him were to receive; for the
Spirit had not yet come, because Jesus had not yet been exalted.) 40
Some of the people, when they heard these words, said: 41 “This is
certainly ‘the Prophet’!”; others said: “This is the Christ!”; but some
asked: “What! does the Christ come from Galilee? 42 Is not it said
in Scripture that it is of the race of David, and from Bethlehem, the
village to which David belonged, that the Christ is to come?” 43 So
there was a sharp division among the people on account of Jesus.
44 Some of them wanted to arrest him, and yet no one touched him.

45 When the officers returned to the Chief Priests and
Pharisees, they were asked: “Why have you not brought him?” 46
“No man ever spoke as he speaks!” they answered. 47 “What! Have
you been led astray too?” the Pharisees replied. 48 “Have any of our
leading men believed in him, or any of the Pharisees? 49 As for these

people who do not know the Law—they are cursed!" [50] But one of their number, Nicodemus, who before this had been to see Jesus, said to them: [51] "Does our Law pass judgement on a man without first giving him a hearing, and finding out what he has been doing?" [52] "Are you also from Galilee?" they retorted. "Search, and you will find that no Prophet is to arise in Galilee!" [53] So they went away to their several homes;

Chapter 8

[1] but Jesus went to the Mount of Olives. [2] At break of day however He returned to the Temple, and there the people came to Him in crowds. He seated Himself; [3] and was teaching them when the Scribes and the Pharisees brought to Him a woman who had been found committing adultery. They made her stand in the centre of the court, and they put the case to Him. [4] "Rabbi," they said, "this woman has been found in the very act of committing adultery. [5] Now, in the Law, Moses has ordered us to stone such women to death. But what do you say?" [6] They asked this in order to put Him to the test, so that they might have some charge to bring against Him. But Jesus leant forward and began to write with His finger on the ground. [7] When however they persisted with their question, He raised His head and said to them, "Let the sinless man among you be the first to throw a stone at her." [8] Then He leant forward again, and again began to write on the ground. [9] They listened to Him, and then, beginning with the eldest, took their departure, one by one, till all were gone. And Jesus was left behind alone--and the woman in the centre of the court. [10] Then, raising His head, Jesus said to her, "Where are they? Has no one condemned you?" [11] "No one, Sir," she replied. "And I do not condemn you either," said Jesus; "go, and from this time do not sin any more."

[12] Jesus again addressed the people. "I am the Light of the World," he said. "He who follows me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the Light of Life." [13] "You are bearing testimony to yourself!" exclaimed the Pharisees, "your testimony is not trustworthy." [14] "Even if I bear testimony to myself," answered Jesus, "my testimony is trustworthy; for I know where I came from, and where I am going; but you do not know where I come from, nor where I am going. [15] You judge by appearances; I judge no one. [16] Yet, even if I were to judge, my judgement would be trustworthy;

because I am not alone, but the Father who sent me is with me. [17] Why, in your own Law it is said that the testimony of two persons is trustworthy. [18] I, who bear testimony to myself, am one, and the Father who sent me also bears testimony to me." [19] "Where is your father, then?" they asked. "You know neither me nor my Father," replied Jesus. "If you had known me, you would have also known my Father." [20] These statements Jesus made in the Treasury, while teaching in the Temple Courts. Yet no one arrested him, for his time had not then come.

[21] Jesus again spoke to the people. "I am going away," he said, "and you will look for me, but you will die in your sin; you cannot come where I am going." [22] "Is he going to kill himself," the Jews exclaimed, "that he says—'You cannot go where I am going'?" [23] "You," added Jesus, "are from below, I am from above; you are of this present world, I am not; [24] And so I told you that you would die in your sins, for, unless you believe that I am what I am, you will die in your sins." [25] "Who are you?" they asked. "Why ask exactly what I have been telling you?" said Jesus. [26] "I have still much that concerns you to speak of and to pass judgement on; yet he who sent me may be trusted, and I speak to the world only of the things which I have heard from him." [27] They did not understand that he meant the Father. [28] So Jesus added: "When you have lifted up the Son of Man, then you will understand that I am what I am, and that I do nothing of myself, but that I say just what the Father has taught me. [29] Moreover, he who sent me is with me; he has not left me alone; for I always do what pleases him." [30] While he was speaking in this way, many came to believe in him.

[31] So Jesus went on to say to those Jews who had believed him: "If you remain constant to my Message, you are truly my disciples; [32] And you find out the Truth, and the Truth will set you free." [33] "We are descendants of Abraham," was their answer, "and have never yet been in slavery to any one. What do you mean by saying 'you will be set free'?" [34] "In truth I tell you," replied Jesus, "every one who sins is a slave to sin. [35] And a slave does not remain in the home always; but a son remains always. [36] If, then, the Son sets you free, you will be free indeed! [37] I know that you are descendants of Abraham; yet you are seeking to put me to death, because my Message finds no place in your hearts.

[38] I tell you what I have myself seen in the presence of my

Father; and you, in the same way, do what you have learned from your father." 39 "Our father is Abraham," was their answer. "If you are Abraham's children," replied Jesus, "do what Abraham did. 40 But, as it is, you are seeking to put me to death—a man who has told you the Truth as he heard it from God. Abraham did not act in that way. 41 You are doing what your own father does." "We are not bastards," they said, "we have one Father—God himself." 42 "If God were your Father," Jesus replied, "you would have loved me, for I came out from God, and now am here; and I have not come of myself, but he sent me as his Messenger. 43 How is it that you do not understand what I say? It is because you cannot bear to listen to my Message. 44 As for you, you are children of your Father the Devil, and you are determined to do what your father loves to do. He was a murderer from the first, and did not stand by the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he lies, he does what is natural to him; because he is a liar, and the father of lying. 45 But, as for me, it is because I speak the truth to you that you do not believe me. 46 Which of you can convict me of sin? Why then do not you believe me, if I am speaking truth? 47 He who comes from God listens to God's teaching; the reason why you do not listen is because you do not come from God."

48 "Are not we right, after all," replied the Jews, "in saying that you are a Samaritan, and are possessed by a demon?" 49 "I am not possessed by a demon," Jesus answered, "but I am showing reverence for my Father; and yet you have no reverence for me. 50 Not that I am seeking honour for myself; there is one who is seeking my honour, and he decides.

51 In truth I tell you, if any one lays my Message to heart, he will never really die." 52 "Now we are sure that you are possessed by a demon," the Jews replied. "Abraham died, and so did the Prophets; and yet you say 'If any one lays my Message to heart, he will never know death.' 53 Are you greater than our ancestor Abraham, who died? And the Prophets died too. Whom do you make yourself out to be?" 54 "If I do honour to myself," answered Jesus, "such honour counts for nothing. It is my Father who does me honour—and you say that he is your God; 55 And yet you have not learned to know him; but I know him; and, if I were to say that I do not know him, I should be a liar like you; but I do know him, and I lay his Message to heart. 56 Your ancestor Abraham rejoiced that he would see my day;

and he did see it, and was glad." 57 "You are not fifty years old yet," the Jews exclaimed, "and have you seen Abraham?" 58 "In truth I tell you," replied Jesus, "before Abraham existed I was."[5] 59 At this they took up stones to throw at him; but Jesus hid himself, and left the Temple Courts.

Chapter 9

1 As Jesus passed by, he saw a man who had been blind from his birth. 2 "Rabbi," asked his disciples, "who was it that sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?" 3 "Neither the man nor the parents," replied Jesus; "but he was born blind that the work of God should be made plain in him. 4 We must do the work of him who sent me, while it is day; night is coming, when no one can work. 5 As long as I am in the world, I am the Light of the world." 6 Saying this, Jesus spat on the ground, made clay with the saliva, and put it on the man's eyes. 7 "Go," he said, "and wash your eyes in the Bath of Siloam" (a word which means 'Messenger'). So the man went and washed his eyes, and returned able to see.

8 Upon this his neighbours, and those who had formerly known him by sight as a beggar, exclaimed: "Is not this the man who used to sit and beg?" 9 "Yes," some said, "it is"; while others said: "No, but he is like him." The man himself said: "I am he." 10 "How did you get your sight, then?" they asked. 11 "The man whom they call Jesus," he answered, "made clay, and anointed my eyes, and said to me 'Go to Siloam and wash your eyes.' So I went and washed my eyes, and gained my sight." 12 "Where is he?" they asked. "I do not know," he answered.

13 They took the man, who had been blind, to the Pharisees. 14 Now it was a Sabbath when Jesus made the clay and gave him his sight. 15 So the Pharisees also questioned the man as to how he had gained his sight. "He put clay on my eyes," he answered, "and I washed them, and I can see." 16 "The man cannot be from God," said some of the Pharisees, "for he does not keep the Sabbath." "How is

[5] *Verses 56 through 58 literally* "Abraham your father exulted in order that he might see my day, and he saw and rejoiced." The Jews therefore said toward him, "Fifty years not yet you are having and Abraham you have seen?" Said to them Jesus, "Amen amen I am saying to you, Before Abraham to become I am."

it possible," retorted others, "for a bad man to give signs like this?"
17 So there was a difference of opinion among them, and they again
questioned the man; "What do you yourself say about him, for it
is to you that he has given sight?" 18 The Jews, however, refused to
believe that he had been blind and had gained his sight, until they
had called his parents and questioned them. 19 "Is this your son,"
they asked, "who you say was born blind? If so, how is it that he can
see now?" 20 "We know that this is our son," answered the parents,
"and that he was born blind; 21 But how it is that he can see now we
do not know; nor do we know who it was that gave him his sight.
Ask him—he is old enough—he will tell you about himself." 22 His
parents spoke in this way because they were afraid of the Jews; for
the Jews had already agreed that, if any one should acknowledge
Jesus as the Christ, he should be expelled from their synagogues.
23 This was why his parents said 'He is old enough; ask him.' 24 So
the Jews again called the man who had been blind, and said to him:
"Give God the praise; we know that this is a bad man." 25 "I know
nothing about his being a bad man," he replied; "one thing I do
know, that although I was blind, now I can see." 26 "What did he do
to you?" they asked. "How did he give you your sight?" 27 "I told you
just now," he answered, "and you did not listen. Why do you want to
hear it again? Surely you also do not want to become his disciples?"
28 "You are his disciple," they retorted scornfully; "but we are
disciples of Moses. 29 We know that God spoke to Moses; but, as
for this man, we do not know where he comes from." 30 "Well," the
man replied, "this is very strange; you do not know where he comes
from, and yet he has given me my sight! 31 We know that God never
listens to bad men, but, when a man is god-fearing and does God's
will, God listens to him. 32 Since the world began, such a thing was
never heard of as any one's giving sight to a person born blind. 33 If
this man had not been from God, he could not have done anything
at all." 34 "You," they retorted, "were born totally depraved; and are
you trying to teach us?" So they expelled him.

35 Jesus heard of their having put him out; and, when he had
found the man, he asked: "Do you believe in the Son of Man?" 36
"Tell me who he is, Sir," he replied, "so that I may believe in him."
37 "Not only have you seen him," said Jesus; "but it is he who is now
speaking to you." 38 "Then, Sir, I do believe," said the man, bowing
to the ground before him;

39 And Jesus added: "It was to put men to the test that I
came into this world, in order that those that cannot see should see,
and that those that can see should become blind." 40 Hearing this,
some of the Pharisees who were with him said: "Then are we blind
too?" 41 "If you had been blind," replied Jesus, "you would have had
no sin to answer for; but, as it is, you say 'We can see,' and so your
sin remains.

Chapter 10

1 In truth I tell you, whoever does not go into the sheepfold
through the door, but climbs up at some other place, that man is a
thief and a robber; 2 But the man who goes in through the door is
shepherd to the sheep. 3 For him the watchman opens the door; and
the sheep listen to his voice; and he calls his own sheep by name,
and leads them out. 4 When he has brought them all out, he walks
in front of them, and his sheep follow him, because they know his
voice. 5 They will not follow a stranger, but will run away from him;
because they do not know a stranger's voice." 6 This was the allegory
that Jesus told them, but they did not understand of what he was
speaking. 7 So he continued: "In truth I tell you, I am the Door for
the sheep. 8 All who came before me were thieves and robbers; but
the sheep did not listen to them. 9 I am the Door; he who goes in
through me will be safe, and he will go in and out and find pasture.
10 The thief comes only to steal, to kill, and to destroy; I have come
that they may have Life, and may have it in greater fullness. 11 I am
the Good Shepherd. The Good Shepherd lays down his life for his
sheep. 12 The hired man who is not a shepherd, and who does not
own the sheep, when he sees a wolf coming, leaves them and runs
away; then the wolf seizes them, and scatters the flock. 13 He does
this because he is only a hired man and does not care about the
sheep. 14 I am the Good Shepherd; and I know my sheep, and my
sheep know me— 15 Just as the Father knows me and I know the
Father—and I lay down my life for the sheep. 16 I have other sheep
besides, which do not belong to this fold; I must lead them also,
and they will listen to my voice; and they shall become one flock
under 'one Shepherd.' 17 This is why the Father loves me, because I
lay down my life—to receive it again. 18 No one took it from me, but
I lay it down of myself. I have authority to lay it down, and I have
authority to receive it again. This is the command which I received

from my Father."

19 In consequence of these words a difference of opinion
again arose among the Jews. 20 Many of them said: "He is possessed
by a demon and is mad; why do you listen to him?" 21 Others said:
"This is not the teaching of one who is possessed by a demon. Can a
demon give sight to the blind?"

22 Soon after this the Festival of the Re-dedication was
held at Jerusalem. 23 It was winter; and Jesus was walking in the
Temple Courts, in the Colonnade of Solomon, 24 When the Jews
gathered round him, and said: "How long are you going to keep
us in suspense? If you are the Christ, tell us so frankly." 25 "I have
told you so," replied Jesus, "and you do not believe me. The work
that I am doing in my Father's name bears testimony to me. 26 But
you do not believe me, because you are not of my flock. 27 My sheep
listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me; 28 And I give
them Immortal Life, and they shall not be lost; nor shall any one
snatch them out of my hands. 29 What my Father has entrusted to
me is more than all else; and no one can snatch anything out of
the Father's hands. 30 The Father and I are one." 31 The Jews again
brought stones to throw at him; 32 And seeing this, Jesus said: "I
have done before your eyes many good actions, inspired by the
Father; for which of them would you stone me?" 33 "It is not for any
good action that we would stone you," answered the Jews, "but for
blasphemy; and because you, who are only a man, make yourself
out to be God."[6] 34 "Are there not," replied Jesus, "these words in
your Law—'I said "Ye are gods"'? 35 If those to whom God's word
were addressed were said to be 'gods'—and Scripture cannot be set
aside— 36 Do you say of one whom the Father has consecrated and
sent as his Messenger to the world 'You are blaspheming,' because
I said 'I am God's Son'? 37 If I am not doing the work that my Father
is doing, do not believe me; 38 If I am doing it, even though you
do not believe me, believe what that work shows; so that you may
understand, and understand more and more clearly, that the Father
is in union with me, and I with the Father."

39 Upon this the Jews again sought to arrest him; but he
escaped their hands. 40 Then Jesus again crossed the Jordan to the

[6] *Literally* The Jews answered him, "About fine work we are not stoning you but about blasphemy, and because you being man you are making yourself God."

place where John used to baptize at first, and stayed there some
time, during which many people came to see him. 41 "John gave no
sign of his mission," they said; "but everything that he said about
this man was true." 42 And many learned to believe in Jesus there.

Chapter 11

1 Now a man named Lazarus, of Bethany, was lying ill; he
belonged to the same village as Mary and her sister Martha. 2 This
Mary, whose brother Lazarus was ill, was the Mary who anointed
the Master with perfume, and wiped his feet with her hair. 3 The
sisters, therefore, sent this message to Jesus—'Master, your friend
is ill'; 4 And, when Jesus heard it, he said: "This illness is not to
end in death, but is to redound to the honour of God, in order that
the Son of God may be honoured through it." 5 Jesus loved Martha
and her sister, and Lazarus. 6 Yet, when he heard of the illness of
Lazarus, he still stayed two days in the place where he was. 7 Then,
after that, he said to his disciples: "Let us go to Judea again." 8
"Rabbi," they replied, "the Jews were but just now seeking to stone
you; and are you going there again?" 9 "Are not there twelve hours
in the day?" answered Jesus. "If a man walks about in the day-time,
he does not stumble, because he can see the light of the sun; 10 But,
if he walks about at night, he stumbles, because he has not the
light." 11 And, when he had said this, he added: "Our friend Lazarus
has fallen asleep; but I am going that I may wake him." 12 "If he
has fallen asleep, Master, he will get well," said the disciples. 13 But
Jesus meant that he was dead; they, however, supposed that he was
speaking of natural sleep. 14 Then he said to them plainly: "Lazarus
is dead; 15 And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, so that
you may learn to believe in me. But let us go to him." 16 At this,
Thomas, who was called 'The Twin,' said to his fellow-disciples:
"Let us go too, so that we may die with him."

17 When Jesus reached the place, he found that Lazarus had
been four days in the tomb already. 18 Bethany being only about two
miles from Jerusalem, 19 A number of the Jews had come there to
condole with Martha and Mary on their brother's death. 20 When
Martha heard that Jesus was coming, she went to meet him; but
Mary sat quietly at home. 21 "Master," Martha said to Jesus, "if you
had been here, my brother would not have died. 22 Even now, I know
that God will grant you whatever you ask him." 23 "Your brother

shall rise to life," said Jesus. 24 "I know that he will," replied Martha, "in the resurrection at the Last Day." 25 "I am the Resurrection and the Life," said Jesus. "He that believes in me shall live, though he die; 26 And he who lives and believes in me shall never die. Do you believe this?" 27 "Yes Master," she answered; "I have learned to believe that you are the Christ, the Son of God, 'who was to come' into the world." 28 After saying this, Martha went and called her sister Mary, and whispered: "The Teacher is here, and is asking for you." 29 As soon as Mary heard that, she got up quickly, and went to meet him. 30 Jesus had not then come into the village, but was still at the place where Martha had met him. 31 So the Jews, who were in the house with Mary, condoling with her, when they saw her get up quickly and go out, followed her, thinking that she was going to the tomb to weep there. 32 When Mary came where Jesus was and saw him, she threw herself at his feet. "Master," she exclaimed, "if you had been here, my brother would not have died!"

33 When Jesus saw her weeping, and the Jews who had come with her weeping also, he groaned deeply, and was greatly distressed. 34 "Where have you buried him?" he asked. "Come and see, Master," they answered. 35 Jesus burst into tears. 36 "How he must have loved him!" the Jews exclaimed; 37 But some of them said: "Could not this man, who gave sight to the blind man, have also prevented Lazarus from dying?" 38 Again groaning inwardly, Jesus came to the tomb. It was a cave, and a stone lay against the mouth of it. 39 "Move the stone away," said Jesus. "Master," said Martha, the sister of the dead man, "by this time the smell must be offensive, for this is the fourth day since his death." 40 "Did not I tell you," replied Jesus, "that, if you would believe in me, you should see the glory of God?" 41 So they moved the stone away; and Jesus, with uplifted eyes, said: "Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard my prayer; 42 I know that thou always headrest me; but I say this for the sake of the people standing near, so that they may believe that thou has sent me as thy Messenger." 43 Then, after saying this, Jesus called in a loud voice: "Lazarus! come out!" 44 The dead man came out, wrapped hand and foot in a winding-sheet; his face, too, had been wrapped in a cloth. "Set him free," said Jesus, "and let him go."

45 In consequence of this, many of the Jews, who had come to visit Mary and had seen what Jesus did, learned to believe in him. 46

Some of them, however, went to the Pharisees, and told them what he had done. 47 Upon this the Chief Priests and the Pharisees called a meeting of the High Council, and said: "What are we to do, now that this man is giving so many signs? 48 If we let him alone as we are doing, every one will believe in him; and the Romans will come and will take from us both our City and our Nationality." 49 One of them, however, Caiaphas, who was High Priest that year, said to them: 50 "You are utterly mistaken. You do not consider that it is better for you that one man should die for the people, rather than the whole nation should be destroyed." 51 Now he did not say this of his own accord; but, as High Priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus was to die for the nation— 52 And not for the nation only, but also that he might unite in one body the Children of God now scattered far and wide. 53 So from that day they plotted to put Jesus to death. 54 In consequence of this, Jesus did not go about publicly among the Jews any more, but left that neighbourhood, and went into the country bordering on the Wilderness, to a town called Ephraim, where he stayed with his disciples. 55 But the Jewish Festival of the Passover was near; and many people had gone up from the country to Jerusalem, for their 'purification,' before the Festival began. 56 So they looked for Jesus there, and said to one another, as they stood in the Temple Courts: "What do you think? Do you think he will come to the Festival?" 57 The Chief Priests and the Pharisees had already issued orders that, if any one learned where Jesus was, he should give information, so that they might arrest him.

Chapter 12

1 Six days before the Passover Jesus came to Bethany, where Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead, was living. 2 There a supper was given in honour at which Martha waited, while Lazarus was one of those present at the table. 3 So Mary took a pound of choice spikenard perfume of great value, and anointed the feet of Jesus with it, and then wiped them with her hair. The whole house was filled with the scent of the perfume. 4 One of the disciples, Judas Iscariot, who was about to betray Jesus, asked: 5 "Why was not this perfume sold for thirty pounds, and the money given to poor people?" 6 He said this, not because he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and, being in charge of the purse, used to take what was put in it. 7 "Let her alone," said Jesus, "that she may

keep it till the day when my body is being prepared for burial. 8
The poor you always have with you, but you will not always have
me." 9 Now great numbers of the Jews found out that Jesus was at
Bethany; and they came there, not solely on his account, but also
to see Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead. 10 The Chief
Priests, however, plotted to put Lazarus, as well as Jesus, to death,
11 Because it was owing to him that many of the Jews had left them,
and were becoming believers in Jesus.

12 On the following day great numbers of people who had
come to the Festival, hearing that Jesus was on his way to Jerusalem,
took palm-branches, 13 And went out to meet him, shouting as they
went: "'God save Him! Blessed is He who Comes in the name of the
Lord'—The King of Israel!" 14 Having found a young ass, Jesus seated
himself on it, in accordance with the passage of Scripture— 15 'Fear
not, Daughter of Zion; Behold, thy King is coming to thee, Sitting
on the foal of an ass.' 16 His disciples did not understand all this at
first; but, when Jesus had been exalted, then they remembered that
these things had been said of him in Scripture, and that they had
done these things for him. 17 Meanwhile the people who were with
him, when he called Lazarus out of the tomb and raised him from
the dead, were telling what they had seen. 18 This, indeed, was why
the crowd met him—because people had heard that he had given
this sign of his mission. 19 So the Pharisees said to one another: "You
see that you are gaining nothing! Why, all the world has run after
him!"

20 Among those who were going up to worship at the
Festival were some Greeks, 21 Who went to Philip of Bethsaida in
Galilee, and said: "Sir, we wish to see Jesus." 22 Philip went and told
Andrew, and then together they went and told Jesus. 23 This was
his reply—"The time has come for the Son of Man to be exalted. 24
In truth I tell you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the ground and
dies, it remains solitary; but, if it dies, it becomes fruitful. 25 He who
loves his life loses it; while he who hates his life in the present world
shall preserve it for Immortal Life. 26 If a man is ready to serve me,
let him follow me; and where I am, there my servant shall be also. If
a man is ready to serve me, my Father will honour him.

27 Now I am distressed at heart and what can I say? Father,
bring me safe through this hour—yet it was for this very reason
that I came to this hour— 28 Father, honour thine own name." At

this there came a voice from Heaven, which said: "I have already
honoured it, and I will honour it again." 29 The crowd of bystanders,
who heard the sound, said that it was thundering. Others said: "An
angel has been speaking to him." 30 "It was not for my sake that the
voice came," said Jesus, "but for yours. 31 Now this world is on its
trial. Now the Spirit that is ruling this world shall be driven out;
32 And I, when I am lifted up from the earth, shall draw all men to
myself." 33 By these words he indicated what death he was destined
to die. 34 "We," replied the people, "have learned from the Law that
the 'Christ is to remain for ever'; how is it, then, that you say that the
Son of Man must be 'lifted up' Who is this 'Son of Man'?" 35 "Only a
little while longer," answered Jesus, "will you have the Light among
you. Travel on while you have the Light, so that darkness may not
overtake you; he who travels in the darkness does not know where
he is going. 36 While you still have the Light, believe in the Light,
that you may be 'Sons of Light.'" After he had said this, Jesus went
away, and hid himself from them.

37 But, though Jesus had given so many signs of his mission
before their eyes, they still did not believe in him, 38 In fulfilment
of the words of the Prophet Isaiah, where he says—'Lord, who has
believed our teaching? And to whom has the might of the Lord been
revealed?' 39 The reason why they were unable to believe is given
by Isaiah elsewhere, in these words— 40 'He has blinded their eyes,
and blunted their mind, so that they should not see with their eyes,
and perceive with their mind, and turn—And I should heal them.'
41 Isaiah said this, because he saw Christ's glory; and it was of him
that he spoke.

42 Yet for all this, even among the leading men there
were many who came to believe in Jesus; but, on account of the
Pharisees, they did not acknowledge it, for fear that they should be
expelled from their Synagogues; 43 For they valued honour from
men more than honour from God.

44 But Jesus had proclaimed: "He who believes in me
believes, not in me, but in him who sent me; 45 And he who sees me
sees him who sent me. 46 I have come as a Light into the world, that
no one who believes in me should remain in the darkness. 47 When
any one hears my teaching and pays no heed to it, I am not his judge;
for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. 48 He who
rejects me, and disregards my teaching, has a judge already—the

very Message which I have delivered will itself be his judge at the Last Day. 49 For I have not delivered it on my own authority; but the Father, who sent me, has himself given me his command as to what I should say, and what message I should deliver. 50 And I know that Immortal Life lies in keeping his command. Therefore, whatever I say, I say only what the Father has taught me."

Chapter 13

1 Before the Passover Festival began, Jesus knew that the time had come for him to leave the world and go to the Father. He had loved those who were his own in the world, and he loved them to the last. 2 The Devil had already put the thought of betraying Jesus into the mind of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon; 3 And at supper, Jesus—although knowing that the Father had put everything into his hands, and that he had come from God, and was to return to God— 4 Rose from his place, and, taking off his upper garments, tied a towel round his waist. 5 He then poured some water into the basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel which was tied round him. 6 When he came to Simon Peter, Peter said: "You, Master! Are you going to wash my feet?" 7 "You do not understand now what I am doing," replied Jesus, "but you will learn by and by." 8 "You shall never wash my feet!" exclaimed Peter. "Unless I wash you," answered Jesus, "you have nothing in common with me." 9 "Then, Master, not my feet only," exclaimed Simon Peter, "but also my hands and my head." 10 "He who has bathed," replied Jesus, "has no need to wash, unless it be his feet, but is altogether clean; and you," he said to the disciples, "are clean, yet not all of you." 11 For he knew who was going to betray him, and that was why he said 'You are not all clean.' 12 When he had washed their feet, and had put on his upper garments and taken his place, he spoke to them again. "Do you understand what I have been doing to you?" he asked. 13 "You yourselves call me 'the Teacher' and 'the Master', and you are right, for I am both. 14 If I, then—'the Master' and 'the Teacher'—have washed your feet, you also ought to wash one another's feet; 15 For I have given you an example, so that you may do just as I have done to you. 16 In truth I tell you, a servant is not greater than his master, nor yet a messenger than the man who sends him. 17 Now that you know these things, happy are you if you do them.

18 I am not speaking about all of you. I know whom I have chosen; but this is in fulfilment of the words of Scripture—'He that is eating my bread has lifted his heel against me.' 19 For the future I shall tell you of things before they take place, so that, when they take place, you may believe that I am what I am. 20 In truth I tell you, he who receives any one that I send receives me; and he who receives me receives him who sent me." 21 After saying this, Jesus was much troubled, and said solemnly: "In truth I tell you that it is one of you who will betray me." 22 The disciples looked at one another, wondering whom he meant. 23 Next to Jesus, in the place on his right hand, was one of his disciples, whom he loved. 24 So Simon Peter made signs to that disciple, and whispered: "Tell me who it is that he means." 25 Being in this position, that disciple leant back on Jesus' shoulder, and asked him: "Who is it, Master?" 26 "It is the one," answered Jesus, "to whom I shall give a piece of bread after dipping it in the dish." And, when Jesus had dipped the bread, he took it and gave it to Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot; 27 And it was then, after he had received it, that Satan took possession of him. So Jesus said to him: "Do at once what you are going to do." 28 But no one at table understood why he said this to Judas. 29 Some thought that, as Judas kept the purse, Jesus meant that he was to buy some things needed for the Festival, or to give something to the poor. 30 After taking the piece of bread, Judas went out immediately; and it was night.

31 When Judas had gone out, Jesus said: "Now the Son of Man has been exalted, and God has been exalted through him; 32 And God will exalt him with himself—yes, he will exalt him forthwith. 33 My children, I am to be with you but a little while longer. You will look for me; and what I said to the Jews—'You cannot come where I am going'—I now say to you. 34 I give you a new commandment—Love one another; love one another as I have loved you. 35 It is by this that every one will recognize you as my disciples—by your loving one another."

36 "Where are you going, Master?" asked Peter. "I am going where you cannot now follow me," answered Jesus, "but you shall follow me later." 37 "Why cannot I follow you now, Master?" asked Peter. "I will lay down my life for you." 38 "Will you lay down your life for me?" replied Jesus. "In truth I tell you, the cock will not crow till you have disowned me three times.

Chapter 14

1 Do not let your hearts be troubled. Believe in God; believe
also in me. 2 In my Father's Home there are many dwellings. If it
had not been so, I should have told you, for I am going to prepare
a place for you. 3 And, since I go and prepare a place for you, I shall
return and take you to be with me, so that you may be where I am;
4 And you know the way to the place where I am going." 5 "We
do not know where you are going, Master," said Thomas; "so how
can we know the way?" 6 Jesus answered: "I am the Way, and the
Truth, and the Life; no one ever comes to the Father except through
me. 7 If you had recognized me, you would have known my Father
also; for the future you will recognize him, indeed you have already
seen him." 8 "Master, show us the Father," said Philip, "and we shall
be satisfied." 9 "Have I been all this time among you," said Jesus,
"and yet you, Philip, have not recognized me? He who has seen me
has seen the Father, how can you say, then, 'Show us the Father'?
10 Do not you believe that I am in union with the Father, and the
Father with me? In giving you my teaching I am not speaking on
my own authority; but the Father himself, always in union with me,
does his own work. 11 Believe me," he said to them all, "when I say
that I am in union with the Father and the Father with me, or else
believe me on account of the work itself.
12 In truth I tell you, he who believes in me will himself do
the work that I am doing; and he will do greater work still, because
I am going to the Father. 13 Whatever you ask, in my Name, I will do,
that the Father may be honoured in the Son. 14 If you ask anything,
in my Name, I will do it.
15 If you love me, you will lay my commands to heart, 16 And
I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Helper, to be
with you always—the Spirit of Truth. 17 The world cannot receive
this Spirit, because it does not see him or recognize him, but you
recognize him, because he is always with you, and is within you.
18 I will not leave you bereaved; I will come to you. 19 In a
little while the world will see me no more, but you will still see me;
because I am living, you will be living also. 20 At that time you will
recognize that I am in union with the Father, and you with me, and
I with you. 21 It is he who has my commands and lays them to heart
that loves me; and he who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I

will love him, and will reveal myself to him." 22 "What has happened,
Master," said Judas (not Judas Iscariot), "that you are going to
reveal yourself to us, and not to the world?" 23 "Whoever loves me,"
Jesus answered, "will lay my Message to heart; and my Father will
love him, and we will come to him and make our dwelling with him.
24 He who does not love me will not lay my Message to heart; and
the Message to which you are listening is not my own, but that of
the Father who sent me.
25 I have told you all this while still with you, 26 But the
Helper—the Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in my Name—he
will teach you all things, and will recall to your minds all that I have
said to you. 27 Peace be with you! My own peace I give you. I do not
give to you as the world gives. Do not let your hearts be troubled, or
dismayed.
28 You heard me say that I was going away and would return
to you. Had you loved me, you would have been glad that I was
going to the Father, because the Father is greater than I. 29 And this
I have told you now before it happens, that, when it does happen,
you may still believe in me. 30 I shall not talk with you much more,
for the Spirit that is ruling the world is coming. He has nothing in
common with me; 31 But he is coming that the world may see that I
love the Father, and that I do as the Father commanded me. Come,
let us be going.

Chapter 15

1 I am the True Vine, and my Father is the Vine-grower. 2
Any unfruitful branch in me he takes away, and he cleanses every
fruitful branch, that it may bear more fruit. 3 You are already clean
because of the Message that I have given you. 4 Remain united to
me, and I will remain united to you. As a branch cannot bear fruit by
itself, unless it remains united to the vine; no more can you, unless
you remain united to me. 5 I am the Vine, you are the branches. He
that remains united to me, while I remain united to him—he bears
fruit plentifully; for you can do nothing apart from me. 6 If any one
does not remain united to me, he is thrown away, as a branch would
be, and withers up. Such branches are collected and thrown into the
fire, and are burnt. 7 If you remain united to me, and my teaching
remains in your hearts, ask whatever you wish, and it shall be yours.
8 It is by your bearing fruit plentifully, and so showing yourselves

my disciples, that my Father is honoured.

9 As the Father has loved me, so have I loved you; remain in
my love. 10 If you lay my commands to heart, you will remain in my
love; just as I have laid the Father's commands to heart and remain
in his love. 11 I have told you all this so that my own joy may be
yours, and that your joy may be complete. 12 This is my command—
Love one another, as I have loved you. 13 No one can give greater
proof of love than by laying down his life for his friends. 14 And you
are my friends, if you do what I command you. 15 I no longer call
you 'servants,' because a servant does not know what his master is
doing; but I have given you the name of 'friends,' because I made
known to you everything that I learned from my Father. 16 It was not
you who chose me, but I who chose you, and I appointed you to go
and bear fruit—fruit that should remain, so that the Father might
grant you whatever you ask in my Name. 17 I am giving you these
commands that you may love one another.

18 If the world hates you, you know that it has first hated
me. 19 If you belonged to the world, the world would love its own.
Because you do not belong to the world, but I have chosen you out
of the world—that is why the world hates you. 20 Remember what I
said to you—'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they have
persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have laid my
Message to heart, they will lay yours to heart also. 21 But they will
do all this to you, because you believe in my Name, for they do not
know him who sent me. 22 If I had not come and spoken to them,
they would have had no sin to answer for; but as it is, they have no
excuse for their sin. 23 He who hates me hates my Father also. 24 If I
had not done among them such work as no one else ever did, they
would have had no sin to answer for; but, as it is, they have both
seen and hated both me and my Father. 25 And so is fulfilled what is
said in their Law—'They hated me without cause.'

26 But, when the Helper comes, whom I will send to you from
the Father—the Spirit of Truth, who comes from the Father—he will
bear testimony to me; 27 Yes, and you also are to bear testimony,
because you have been with me from the first.

Chapter 16

1 I have spoken to you in this way so that you may not falter.
2 They will expel you from their Synagogues; indeed the time is

coming when any one who kills you will think that he is making an
offering to God. 3 They will do this, because they have not learned
to know the Father, or even me. 4 But I have spoken to you of these
things that, when the time for them comes, you may remember that
I told you about them myself. 5 I did not tell you all this at first,
because I was with you. But now I am to return to him who sent me;
and yet not one of you asks me—'Where are you going?' 6 Although
your hearts are full of sorrow at all that I have been saying to you.

7 Yet I am only telling you the truth; it is for your good that
I should go away. For otherwise the Helper will never come to you,
but, if I leave you, I will send him to you. 8 And he, when he comes,
will bring conviction to the world as to Sin, and as to Righteousness,
and as to Judgement; 9 As to Sin, for men do not believe in me; 10
As to Righteousness, for I am going to the Father, and you will see
me no longer; 11 As to Judgment, for the Spirit that is ruling this
world has been condemned. 12 I have still much to say to you, but
you cannot bear it now. 13 Yet when he—The Spirit of Truth—comes,
he will guide you into all Truth; for he will not speak on his own
authority, but he will speak of all that he hears; and he will tell you
of the things that are to come. 14 He will honour me; because he will
take of what is mine, and will tell it to you. 15 Everything that the
Father has is mine; that is why I said that he takes of what is mine,
and will tell it to you.

16 In a little while you will no longer see me; and then in a
little while you will see me indeed." 17 At this some of his disciples
said to one another: "What does he mean by saying to us 'In a little
while you will not see me, and then in a little while you will see me
indeed'; and by saying 'Because I am going to the Father'? 18 What
does he mean by 'In a little while'?" they said; "we do not know
what he is speaking about." 19 Jesus saw that they were wanting to
ask him a question, and said: "Are you trying to find out from one
another what I meant by saying 'In a little while you will not see me;
and then in a little while you will see me indeed'? 20 In truth I tell
you that you will weep and mourn, but the world will rejoice; you
will suffer pain, but your pain shall turn to joy. 21 A woman in labour
is in pain because her time has come; but no sooner is the child
born, than she forgets her trouble in her joy that a man has been
born into the world. 22 You, in the same way, are sorry now; but I
shall see you again, and your hearts will rejoice, and no one will rob

you of your joy.

23 And at that time you will not ask me anything; in truth I
tell you, if you ask the Father for anything, he will grant it to you in
my Name. 24 So far you have not asked for anything, in my Name;
ask, and you will receive, so that your joy may be complete. 25 I
have spoken to you of all this in figures; a time is coming, however,
when I shall not speak any longer to you in figures, but shall tell you
about the Father plainly. 26 You will ask, at that time, in my Name;
and I do not say that I will intercede with the Father for you; 27 For
the Father himself loves you, because you have loved me, and have
believed that I came from the Father.

28 I came out from the Father, and have come into the
world; and now I am to leave the world, and go to the Father." 29
"At last," exclaimed the disciples, "you are using plain words and
not speaking in figures at all. 30 Now we are sure that you know
everything, and need not wait for any one to question you. This
makes us believe that you did come from God." 31 "Do you believe
that already?" Jesus answered. 32 "Listen! a time is coming—indeed
it has already come—when you are to be scattered, each going his
own way, and to leave me alone; and yet I am not alone, because
the Father is with me. 33 I have spoken to you in this way, so that in
me you may find peace. In the world you will find trouble; yet, take
courage! I have conquered the world."

Chapter 17

1 After saying this, Jesus raised his eyes heaven-wards, and
said: "Father, the hour has come; honour thy Son, that thy Son may
honour thee; 2 Even as thou gavest him power over all mankind,
that he should give Immortal Life to all those whom thou has given
him. 3 And the Immortal Life is this—to know thee the one true
God, and Jesus Christ whom thou has sent as thy Messenger. 4 I
have honoured thee on earth by completing the work which thou
has given me to do; 5 And now do thou honour me, Father, at thy
own side, with the honour which I had at thy side before the world
began.

6 I have revealed thee to those whom thou gavest me from
the world; they were thy own, and thou gavest them to me; and
they have laid thy Message to heart. 7 They recognize now that
everything that thou gavest me was from thee; 8 For I have given

them the teaching which thou gavest me, and they received it, and
clearly understood that I came from thee, and they believed that
thou has sent me as thy Messenger. 9 I intercede for them; I am not
interceding for the world, but for those whom thou has given me,
for they are thy own— 10 All that is mine is thine, and all that is thine
is mine—and I am honoured in them.

11 Now I am to be in this world no longer, but they are still
to be in the world, and I am to come to thee. Holy Father, keep
them by that revelation of thy Name which thou has given me, that
they may be one, as we are. 12 Whilst I was with them, I kept them
by that revelation, and I have guarded them; and not one of them
has been lost, except that lost soul—in fulfilment of Scripture. 13 But
now I am to come to thee; and I am speaking thus, while still in the
world, that they may have my own joy, in all its fullness, in their
hearts. 14 I have given them thy Message; and the world hated them,
because they do not belong to the world, even as I do not belong to
the world. 15 I do not ask thee to take them out of the world, but to
keep them from Evil. 16 They do not belong to the world, even as I
do not belong to the world.

17 Consecrate them by the Truth; thy Message is Truth. 18 Just
as thou has sent me as thy Messenger to the world, so I send them
as my Messengers to the world. 19 And it is for their sakes that I am
consecrating myself, so that they also may be truly consecrated.

20 But it is not only for them that I am interceding, but also
for those who believe in me through their Message, 21 That they all
may be one—that as thou, Father, art in union with us—and so the
world may believe that thou hast sent me as thy Messenger. 22 I have
given them the honour which thou has given me, that they may be
one as we are one— 23 I in union with them and thou with me—that
so they may be perfected in their union, and thus the world may
know that thou hast sent me as thy Messenger, and that thou has
loved them as thou hast loved me.

24 Father, my desire for all those whom thou has given me
is that they may be with me where I am, so that they may see the
honour which thou has given me; for thou didst love me before the
beginning of the world. 25 O righteous Father, though the world did
not know thee, I knew thee; and these men knew that thou has sent
me as thy Messenger. 26 I have made thee known to them, and will
do so still; that the love that thou has had for me may be in their

hearts, and that I may be in them also."

Chapter 18

1 When Jesus had said this, he went out with his disciples
and crossed the brook Kedron to a place where there was a garden,
into which he and his disciples went. 2 The place was well known to
Judas, the betrayer, for Jesus and his disciples had often met there. 3
So Judas, who had obtained the soldiers of the Roman garrison, and
some police-officers from the Chief Priests and the Pharisees, came
there with lanterns, torches, and weapons. 4 Jesus, aware of all that
was coming upon him, went to meet them, and said to them: "For
whom are you looking?" 5 "Jesus of Nazareth," was their answer.
"I am he," said Jesus. (Judas, the betrayer, was also standing with
them.) 6 When Jesus said 'I am he,' they drew back and fell to the
ground. 7 So he again asked for whom they were looking, and they
answered: "Jesus of Nazareth." 8 "I have already told you that I am
he," replied Jesus, "so, if it is for me that you are looking, let these
men go." 9 This was in fulfilment of his words—'Of those whom thou
hast given me I have not lost one.' 10 At this, Simon Peter, who had
a sword with him, drew it, and struck the High Priest's servant, and
cut off his right ear. The servant's name was Malchus. 11 But Jesus
said to Peter: "Sheathe your sword. Shall I not drink the cup which
the Father has given me?" 12 So the soldiers of the garrison, with
their Commanding Officer and the Jewish police, arrested Jesus
and bound him,

13 And took him first of all to Annas. Annas was the father-
in-law of Caiaphas, who was High Priest that year. 14 It was
Caiaphas who had counselled the Jews, that it was best that one
man should die for the people. 15 Meanwhile Simon Peter followed
Jesus, and so did another disciple. That disciple, being well-known
to the High Priest, went with Jesus into the High Priest's court-
yard, 16 While Peter stood outside by the door. Presently the other
disciple—the one well-known to the High Priest—went out and
spoke to the portress, and brought Peter in. 17 So the maidservant
said to Peter: "Are not you also one of this man's disciples?" "No, I
am not," he said. 18 The servants and police-officers were standing
round a charcoal fire (which they had made because it was cold),
and were warming themselves. Peter, too, was with them, standing
and warming himself. 19 The High Priest questioned Jesus about

his disciples and about his teaching. 20 "For my part," answered
Jesus, "I have spoken to all the world openly. I always taught in
some Synagogue, or in the Temple Courts, places where all the
Jews assemble, and I never spoke of anything in secret. 21 Why
question me? Question those who have listened to me as to what I
have spoken about to them. They must know what I said." 22 When
Jesus said this, one of the police-officers, who was standing near,
gave him a blow with his hand. "Do you answer the High Priest
like that?" he exclaimed. 23 "If I said anything wrong, give evidence
about it," replied Jesus; "but if not, why do you strike me?" 24 Annas
sent him bound to Caiaphas the High Priest. 25 Meanwhile Simon
Peter was standing there, warming himself; so they said to him:
"Are not you also one of his disciples?" Peter denied it. "No, I am
not," he said. 26 One of the High Priest's servants, a relation of the
man whose ear Peter had cut off, exclaimed: "Did not I myself see
you with him in the garden?" 27 Peter again denied it; and at that
moment a cock crowed.

28 From Caiaphas they took Jesus to the Government House.
It was early in the morning. But they did not enter the Government
House themselves, lest they should become 'defiled,' and so be
unable to eat the Passover. 29 Therefore Pilate came outside to
speak to them. "What charge do you bring against this man?" he
asked. 30 "If he had not been a criminal, we should not have given
him up to you," they answered. 31 "Take him yourselves," said Pilate,
"and try him by your own Law." "We have no power to put any one
to death," the Jews replied— 32 In fulfilment of what Jesus had said
when indicating the death that he was destined to die. 33 After that,
Pilate went into the Government House again, and calling Jesus up,
asked him: "Are you the King of the Jews?" 34 "Do you ask me that
yourself?" replied Jesus, "or did others say it to you about me?" 35
"Do you take me for a Jew?" was Pilate's answer. "It is your own
nation and the Chief Priests who have given you up to me. What have
you done?" 36 "My kingly power," replied Jesus, "is not due to this
world. If it had been so, my servants would be doing their utmost to
prevent my being given up to the Jews; but my kingly power is not
from the world." 37 "So you are a King after all!" exclaimed Pilate.
"Yes, it is true I am a King," answered Jesus. "I was born for this, I
have come into the world for this—to bear testimony to the Truth.
Every one who is on the side of Truth listens to my voice." 38 "What

is Truth?" exclaimed Pilate. After saying this, he went out to the Jews again, and said: "For my part, I find nothing with which he can be charged. 39 It is, however, the custom for me to grant you the release of one man at the Passover Festival. Do you wish for the release of the King of the Jews?" 40 "No, not this man," they shouted again, "but Barabbas!" This Barabbas was a robber.

Chapter 19

1 After that, Pilate had Jesus scourged. 2 The soldiers made a crown with some thorns and put it on his head and threw a purple robe round him. 3 They kept coming up to him and saying: "Long live the King of the Jews!" and they gave him blow after blow with their hands. 4 Pilate again came outside, and said to the people: "Look! I am bringing him out to you, so that you may know that I find nothing with which he can be charged." 5 Then Jesus came outside, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe; and Pilate said to them: "Here is the man!" 6 When the Chief Priests and the police-officers saw him, they shouted: "Crucify him! Crucify him!" "Take him yourselves and crucify him," said Pilate. "For my part, I find nothing with which he can be charged." 7 "But we," replied the Jews, "have a Law, under which he deserves death for making himself out to be the Son of God." 8 When Pilate heard what they said, he became still more alarmed; 9 And, going into the Government House again, he said to Jesus: "Where do you come from?" 10 But Jesus made no reply. So Pilate said to him: "Do you refuse to speak to me? Do not you know that I have power to release you, and have power to crucify you?" 11 "You would have no power over me at all," answered Jesus, "if it had not been given you from above; and, therefore, the man who betrayed me to you is guilty of the greater sin." 12 This made Pilate anxious to release him; but the Jews shouted: "If you release that man, you are no friend of the Emperor! Any one who makes himself out to be a King is setting himself against the Emperor!" 13 On hearing what they said, Pilate brought Jesus out, and took his seat upon the Bench at a place called 'The Stone Pavement'—in Hebrew 'Gabbatha.' 14 It was the Passover Preparation Day, and about noon. Then he said to the Jews: "Here is your King!" 15 At that the people shouted: "Kill him! Kill him! Crucify him!" "What! shall I crucify your King?" exclaimed Pilate. "We have no King but the Emperor," replied the Chief Priests;

16 Whereupon Pilate gave Jesus up to them to be crucified. So they took Jesus; 17 And he went out, carrying his cross himself, to the place which is named from a scull, or, in Hebrew, Golgotha. 18 There they crucified him, and two others with him—one on each side, and Jesus between them.

19 Pilate also had these words written and put up over the cross—'JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS.' 20 These words were read by many of the Jews, because the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city; and they were written in Hebrew, Latin and Greek. 21 The Jewish Chief Priests said to Pilate: "Do not write 'The King of the Jews', but write what the man said—'I am the King of the Jews.'" 22 But Pilate answered: "What I have written, I have written." 23 When the soldiers had crucified Jesus, they took his clothes and divided them into four shares—a share for each soldier—and they took the coat also. The coat had no seam, being woven in one piece from top to bottom. 24 So they said to one another: "Do not let us tear it, but let us cast lots for it, to see who shall have it." This was in fulfilment of the words of Scripture—'They shared my clothes among them, And over my clothing they cast lots.' That was what the soldiers did. 25 Meanwhile near the cross of Jesus were standing his mother and his mother's sister, as well as Mary the wife of Clopas and Mary of Magdala. 26 When Jesus saw his mother, and the disciple whom he loved, standing near, he said to his mother: "There is your son." 27 Then he said to that disciple: "There is your mother." And from that very hour the disciple took her to live in his house. 28 Afterwards, knowing that everything was now finished, Jesus said, in fulfilment of the words of Scripture: "I am thirsty." 29 There was a bowl standing there full of common wine; so they put a sponge soaked in the wine on the end of a hyssop-stalk, and held it up to his mouth. 30 When Jesus had received the wine, he exclaimed: "All is finished!" Then, bowing his head, he resigned his spirit to God.

31 It was the Preparation Day, and so, to prevent the bodies from remaining on the crosses during the Sabbath (for that Sabbath was a great day), the Jews asked Pilate to have the legs broken and the bodies removed. 32 Accordingly the soldiers came and broke the legs of the first man, and then those of the other who had been crucified with Jesus; 33 But, on coming to him, when they saw that he was already dead, they did not break his legs. 34 One of the

soldiers, however, pierced his side with a spear, and blood and water immediately flowed from it. 35 This is the statement of one who actually saw it—and his statement may be relied upon, and he knows that he is speaking the truth—and it is given in order that you also may be convinced. 36 For all this took place in fulfilment of the words of Scripture—'Not one of its bones shall be broken.' 37 And there is another passage which says—'They will look upon him whom they pierced.'

38 After this, Joseph of Ramah, a disciple of Jesus—but a secret one, owing to his fear of the Jews—begged Pilate's permission to remove the body of Jesus. Pilate gave him leave; so Joseph went and removed the body. 39 Nicodemus, too—the man who had formerly visited Jesus by night—came with a roll of myrrh and aloes, weighing nearly a hundred pounds. 40 They took the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen with the spices, according to the Jewish mode of burial. 41 At the place where Jesus had been crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a newly-made tomb in which no one had ever been laid. 42 And so, because of its being the Preparation Day, and as the tomb was close at hand, they laid Jesus there.

Chapter 20

1 On the first day of the week, early in the morning, while it was still dark, Mary of Magdala went to the tomb, and saw that the stone had been removed. 2 So she came running to Simon Peter, and to that other disciple who was Jesus' friend, and said to them: "They have taken away the Master out of the tomb, and we do not know where they have laid him!" 3 Upon this, Peter started off with that other disciple, and they went to the tomb. 4 The two began running together; but the other disciple ran faster than Peter, and reached the tomb first. 5 Stooping down, he saw the linen wrappings lying there, but did not go in. 6 Presently Simon Peter came following behind him, and went into the tomb; and he looked at the linen wrappings lying there, 7 And the cloth which had been upon Jesus' head, not lying with the wrappings, but rolled up on one side, separately. 8 Then the other disciple, who had reached the tomb first, went inside too, and he saw for himself and was convinced. 9 For they did not then understand the passage of Scripture which says that Jesus must rise again from the dead. 10 The disciples then returned to their companions.

11 Meanwhile Mary was standing close outside the tomb, weeping. Still weeping, she leant forward into the tomb, 12 And perceived two angels clothed in white sitting there, where the body of Jesus had been lying, one where the head and the other where the feet had been. 13 "Why are you weeping?" asked the angels. "They have taken my Master away," she answered, "and I do not know where they have laid him." 14 After saying this, she turned round, and looked at Jesus standing there, but she did not know that it was Jesus. 15 "Why are you weeping? Whom are you seeking?" he asked. Supposing him to be the gardener, Mary answered: "If it was you, Sir, who carried him away, tell me where you have laid him, and I will take him away myself." 16 "Mary!" said Jesus. She turned round, and exclaimed in Hebrew: "Rabboni!" (or, as we should say, 'Teacher'). 17 "Do not hold me," Jesus said; "for I have not yet ascended to the Father. But go to my Brothers, and tell them that I am ascending to him who is my Father and their Father, my God and their God." 18 Mary of Magdala went and told the disciples that she had seen the Master, and that he had said this to her.

19 In the evening of the same day—the first day of the week—after the doors of the room, in which the disciples were, had been shut for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood among them and said: "Peace be with you"; 20 After which he showed them his hands and his side. The disciples were filled with joy when they saw the Master. 21 Again Jesus said to them: "Peace be with you. As the Father has sent me as his Messenger, so I am sending you." 22 After saying this, he breathed on them, and said: "Receive the Holy Spirit; 23 If you remit any one's sins, they have been remitted; and, if you retain them, they have been retained." 24 But Thomas, one of the Twelve, called 'The Twin,' was not with them when Jesus came; 25 So the rest of the disciples said to him: "We have seen the Master!" "Unless I see the marks of the nails in his hands," he exclaimed, "and put my finger into the marks, and put my hand into his side, I will not believe it."

26 A week later the disciples were again in the house, and Thomas with them. After the doors had been shut, Jesus came and stood among them, and said: "Peace be with you." 27 Then he said to Thomas: "Place your finger here, and look at my hands; and place your hand here, and put it into my side; and do not refuse to believe, but believe." 28 And Thomas exclaimed: "My Master, and my God!"

29 "Is it because you have seen me that you have believed?" said
Jesus. "Blessed are they who have not seen, and yet have believed!"
30 There were many other signs of his mission that Jesus gave in
presence of the disciples, which are not recorded in this book; 31
But these have been recorded that you may believe that Jesus is the
Christ, the Son of God—and that, through your belief in his Name,
you may have Life.

Chapter 21

1 Later on, Jesus showed himself again to the disciples by
the Sea of Tiberias. 2 It was in this way:—Simon Peter, Thomas,
who was called 'The Twin,' Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, Zebediah's
sons, and two other disciples of Jesus, were together, when Simon
Peter said: 3 "I am going fishing." "We will come with you," said the
others. They went out and got into the boat, but caught nothing
that night. 4 Just as day was breaking, Jesus came and stood on the
beach; but the disciples did not know that it was he. 5 "My children,"
he said, "have you anything to eat?" "No," they answered. 6 "Cast
your net to the right of the boat," he said, "and you will find fish."
So they cast the net, and now they could not haul it in on account of
the quantity of fish. 7 Upon this the disciple whom Jesus loved said
to Peter: "It is the Master!" When Simon Peter heard that it was the
Master, he fastened his coat round him (for he had taken it off),
and threw himself into the Sea. 8 But the rest of the disciples came
in the boat (for they were only about a hundred yards from shore),
dragging the net full of fish. 9 When they had come ashore, they
found a charcoal fire ready, with some fish already on it, and some
bread as well. 10 "Bring some of the fish which you have just caught,"
said Jesus. 11 So Simon Peter got into the boat and hauled the net
ashore full of large fish, a hundred and fifty-three of them; and yet,
although there were so many, the net had not been torn. 12 And
Jesus said to them: "Come and breakfast." Not one of the disciples
ventured to ask him who he was, knowing that it was the Master. 13
Jesus went and took the bread and gave it to them, and the fish too.
14 This was the third time that Jesus showed himself to the disciples
after he had risen from the dead.

15 When breakfast was over, Jesus said to Simon Peter:
"Simon, son of John, do you love me more than the others?" "Yes,
Master," he answered, "you know that I am your friend." "Feed my

lambs," said Jesus. 16 Then, a second time, Jesus asked: "Simon, son
of John, do you love me?" "Yes, Master," he answered, "you know
that I am your friend." "Tend my sheep," said Jesus. 17 The third
time, Jesus said to him: "Simon, son of John, are you my friend?"
Peter was hurt at his third question being 'Are you my friend?'; and
exclaimed: "Master, you know everything! You can tell that I am
your friend." "Feed my sheep," said Jesus. 18 "In truth I tell you,"
he continued, "when you were young, you used to put on your own
girdle, and walk wherever you wished; but, when you have grown
old, you will have to stretch out your hands, while some one else
puts on your girdle, and takes you where you do not wish." 19 Jesus
said this to show the death by which Peter was to honour God, and
then he added: "Follow me."

20 Peter turned round, and saw the disciple whom Jesus
loved following—the one who at the supper leant back on the
Master's shoulder, and asked him who it was that would betray
him. 21 Seeing him, Peter said to Jesus: "Master, what about this
man?" 22 "If it is my will that he should wait till I come," answered
Jesus, "what has that to do with you? Follow me yourself." 23 So the
report spread among the Brethren that that disciple was not to die;
yet Jesus did not say that he was not to die, but said "If it is my will
that he should wait till I come, what has that to do with you?" 24 It is
this disciple who states these things, and who recorded them; and
we know that his statement is true. 25 There are many other things
which Jesus did; but, if every one of them were to be recorded in
detail, I suppose that even the world itself would not hold the books
that would be written.

The Acts of the Apostles

Chapter 1

[1] The first account which I drew up, Theophilus, dealt with all that Jesus did and taught from the very first, [2] Down to that day on which he was taken up to Heaven, after he had, by the help of the Holy Spirit, given instructions to the Apostles whom he had chosen. [3] With abundant proofs, he showed himself to them, still living, after his death; appearing to them from time to time during forty days, and speaking of all that related to the Kingdom of God. [4] And once, when he had gathered them together, he charged them not to leave Jerusalem, but to wait there for the fulfilment of the Father's promise—"that promise," he said, "of which you have heard me speak; [5] For, while John baptized with water, you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit before many days have passed."

[6] So, when the Apostles had met together, they asked Jesus this question—"Master, is this the time when you intend to re-establish the Kingdom for Israel?" [7] His answer was: "It is not for you to know times or hours, for the Father has reserved these for his own decision; [8] But you shall receive power, when the Holy Spirit shall have descended upon you, and shall be witnesses for me not only in Jerusalem, but throughout Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth." [9] No sooner had Jesus said this than he was caught up before their eyes, and a cloud received him from their sight. [10] While they were still gazing up into the heavens, as he went, suddenly two men, clothed in white, stood beside them, [11] And said: "Men of Galilee, why are you standing here looking up into the heavens? This very Jesus, who has been taken from you into the heavens, will come in the very way in which you have seen him go into the heavens."

[12] Then the Apostles returned to Jerusalem from the hill called Olivet, which is about three quarters of a mile from the city. [13] When they reached Jerusalem, they went to the upstairs room, where they were staying. There were there Peter, John, James, and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas the son of James. [14] They all united in devoting themselves to Prayer, and so did some

women, and Mary, the mother of Jesus, and his brothers.

15 About this time, at a meeting of the Brethren, when there were about a hundred and twenty present, Peter rose to speak. 16 "Brothers," he said, "it was necessary that the prediction of Scripture should be fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit made by the lips of David about Judas, who acted as guide to the men that arrested Jesus, 17 For he was one of our number and had his part allotted him in this work of ours." 18 (This man had bought a piece of land with the price of his treachery; and, falling heavily, his body had burst open, and all his bowels protruded. 19 This became known to every one living in Jerusalem, so that the field came to be called, in their language, 'Akeldama,' which means the 'Field of Blood.') 20 "For in the Book of Psalms," Peter continued, "it is said—'Let his dwelling become desolate, and let no one live in it'; and also—'His office let another take.' 21 Therefore, from among the men who have been with us all the time that Jesus, our Master, went in and out among us— 22 From his baptism by John down to that day on which he was taken from us—some one must be found to join us as a witness of his resurrection." 23 So they put forward two men, Joseph called Barsabas, whose other name was Justus, and Matthias; 24 And they offered this prayer—"O Lord, who reads all hearts, show which of these two men you has chosen 25 To take the place in this apostolic work, which Judas has abandoned, to go to his proper place." 26 Then they drew lots between them; and, the lot having fallen on Matthias, he was added to the number of the eleven Apostles.

Chapter 2

1 In the course of the Festival at the close of the Harvest the disciples had all met together, 2 When suddenly there came from the heavens a noise like that of a strong wind rushing by; it filled the whole house in which they were sitting. 3 Then there appeared tongues of what seemed to be flame, separating, so that one settled on each of them; 4 And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with strange 'tongues' as the Spirit prompted their utterances.

5 Now there were then staying in Jerusalem religious Jews from every country in the world; 6 And, when this sound was heard, numbers of people collected, in the greatest excitement, because each of them heard the disciples speaking in his own language. 7

They were utterly amazed, and kept asking in astonishment: "What! Are not all these men who are speaking Galileans? 8 Then how is it that we each of us hear them in our own native language? 9 Some of us are Parthians, some Medes, some Elamites; and some of us live in Mesopotamia, in Judea and Cappadocia, in Pontus and Roman Asia, 10 In Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt and the districts of Libya adjoining Cyrene; some of us are visitors from Rome, 11 Either Jews by birth or converts, and some are Cretans and Arabians—yet we all alike hear them speaking in our own tongues of the great things that God has done." 12 They were all utterly amazed and bewildered. "What does it mean?" they asked one another. 13 But there were some who said with a sneer: "They have had too much new wine."

14 Then Peter, surrounded by the eleven other Apostles, stood up, and, raising his voice, addressed the crowd. "Men of Judea," he began, "and all you who are staying in Jerusalem, let me tell you what this means. Mark well my words. 15 These men are not drunk, as you suppose; for it is only now nine in the morning! No! 16 This is what is spoken of in the prophet Joel— 17 'It shall come about in the last days,' God says, 'That I will pour out my Spirit on all mankind; your sons and your daughters shall become Prophets, your young men shall see visions, and your old men dream dreams; 18 Yes, even on the slaves—for they are mine—both men and women, I will in those days pour out my Spirit, 19 And I will show wonders in the heavens above, and signs on the earth below—Blood and fire and mist of smoke; 20 The sun shall become darkness, and the moon blood-red, Before the Day of the Lord comes—that great and awful day. 21 Then shall every one who invokes the Name of the Lord be saved.' 22 Men of Israel, listen to what I am saying. Jesus of Nazareth, a man whose mission from God to you was proved by miracles, wonders, and signs, which God showed among you through him, as you know full well— 23 He, I say, in accordance with God's definite plan and with his previous knowledge, was betrayed, and you, by the hands of lawless men, nailed him to a cross and put him to death. 24 But God released him from the pangs of death and raised him to life, it being impossible for death to retain its hold upon him. 25 Indeed it was to him that David was referring when he said—'I have had the Lord ever before my eyes, For he stands at my right hand, that I should not be disquieted. 26 Therefore my heart was cheered, and my tongue told its delight; Yes, even my

body, too, will rest in hope; 27 For you wilt not abandon my soul to
the Place of Death, nor surrender me, your holy one, to undergo
corruption. 28 Thou have shown me the path to life, you wilt fill me
with gladness in your presence.' 29 Brothers, I can speak to you the
more confidently about the Patriarch David, because he is dead and
buried, and his tomb is here among us to this very day. 30 David,
then, Prophet as he was, knowing that God 'had solemnly sworn
to him to set one of his descendants upon his throne,' looked into
the future, 31 And referred to the resurrection of the Christ when
he said that 'he had not been abandoned to the Place of Death, nor
had his body undergone corruption.' 32 It was this Jesus, whom God
raised to life; and of that we are ourselves all witnesses. 33 And now
that he has been exalted to the right hand of God, and has received
from the Father the promised gift of the Holy Spirit, he has begun
to pour out that gift, as you yourselves now see and hear. 34 It was
not David who went up into Heaven; for he himself says—'The Lord
said to my master: "Sit on my right hand, 35 Till I put your enemies
as a footstool under they feet."' 36 So let the whole nation of Israel
know beyond all doubt, that God has made him both Lord and
Christ—this very Jesus whom you crucified."

37 When the people heard this, they were conscience-smitten,
and said to Peter and the rest of the Apostles: "Brothers, what can
we do?" 38 "Repent," answered Peter, "and be baptized every one of
you in the Faith of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins; and
then you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. 39 For the promise
is for you and for your children, and also for all those now far away,
who may be called by the Lord our God." 40 With many other words
Peter enforced his teaching, while the burden of his exhortations
was—"Save yourselves from the perverse spirit of this age." 41 So
those who accepted his teaching were baptized, and about three
thousand people joined the disciples on that day alone.

42 They devoted themselves to the teaching of the Apostles
and to the Common Life of the Church, to the Breaking of the Bread
and to the Prayers. 43 A deep impression was made upon every
one, and many wonders and signs were done at the hands of the
Apostles. 44 All who became believers in Christ held everything for
the common use; 45 They sold their property and their goods, and
shared the proceeds among them all, according to their individual
needs. 46 Every day they devoted themselves to meeting together in

the Temple Courts, and to the Breaking of Bread at their homes,
while they partook of their food in simple-hearted gladness,
praising God, and winning the good-will of all the people. 47 And
the Lord daily added to their company those who were in the path
of Salvation.

Chapter 3

1 One day, as Peter and John were going up into the Temple
Courts for the three o'clock Prayers, a man, who had been lame
from his birth, was being carried by. 2 This man used to be set down
every day at the gate of the Temple called 'the Beautiful Gate,' to
beg of those who went in. 3 Seeing Peter and John on the point of
entering, he asked them to give him something. 4 Peter fixed his eyes
on him, and so did John, and then Peter said: "Look at us." 5 The
man was all attention, expecting to get something from them; 6 But
Peter added: "I have no gold or silver, but I give you what I have.
In the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth I bid you walk." 7 Grasping
the lame man by the right hand, Peter lifted him up. Instantly the
man's feet and ankles became strong, 8 And, leaping up, he stood
and began to walk about, and then went with them into the Temple
Courts, walking, and leaping, and praising God. 9 All the people saw
him walking about and praising God; 10 And, when they recognized
him as the man who used to sit begging at the Beautiful Gate of
the Temple, they were utterly astonished and amazed at what had
happened to him. 11 While the man still clung to Peter and John, the
people all quickly gathered round them in the Colonnade named
after Solomon, in the greatest astonishment.

12 On seeing this, Peter said to the people: "Men of Israel,
why are you surprised at this? and why do you stare at us, as though
we, by any power or piety of our own, had enabled this man to walk?
13 The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our ancestors,
has done honour to his Servant Jesus—him whom you gave up and
disowned before Pilate, when he had decided to set him free. 14 You, I
say, disowned the Holy and Righteous One, and asked for the release
of a murderer! 15 The very Guide to Life you put to death! But God
raised him from the dead—and of that we are ourselves witnesses.
16 And it is by faith in the Name of Jesus, that this man, whom you
all see and know, has—by his Name—been made strong. Yes, it is
the faith inspired by Jesus that has made this complete cure of the

man, before the eyes of you all. [17] And yet, my Brothers, I know that you acted as you did from ignorance, and your rulers also. [18] But it was in this way that God fulfilled all that he had long ago foretold, as to the sufferings of his Christ, by the lips of all the Prophets. [19] Therefore, repent and turn, that your sins may be wiped away; so that happier times may come from the Lord himself, [20] And that he may send you, in Jesus, your long-appointed Christ. [21] But Heaven must be his home, until the days of the Universal Restoration, of which God has spoken by the lips of his holy Prophets from the very first. [22] Moses himself said—'The Lord your God will raise up from among your brothers a Prophet, as he raised me. To him you will listen whenever he speaks to you. [23] And it shall be that should any one among the people not listen to that Prophet, he will be utterly destroyed.' [24] Yes, and all the Prophets from Samuel onwards, and all their successors who had a message to deliver, told of these days. [25] You yourselves are the heirs of the Prophets, and heirs, too, of the Covenant which God made with your ancestors, when he said to Abraham—'In your descendants will all the nations of the earth be blessed.' [26] For you, first, God raised up his Servant, and sent him to bless you, by turning each one of you from his wicked ways."

Chapter 4

[1] While Peter and John were still speaking to the people, the Chief Priest, with the Officer in charge at the Temple and the Sadducees, came up to them, [2] Much annoyed because they were teaching the people, and because, through Jesus, they were preaching the resurrection from the dead. [3] They arrested the Apostles and, as it was already evening, had them placed in custody till the next day. [4] Many, however, of those who had heard the Apostles' Message became believers in Christ, the number of the men alone amounting to about five thousand.

[5] The next day, a meeting of the leading men, the Councillors, and the Teachers of the Law was held in Jerusalem. [6] There were present Annas the High Priest, Caiaphas, John, Alexander, and all who were of High-Priestly rank. [7] They had Peter and John brought before them, and questioned them. "By what power," they asked, "Or in whose name have men like you done this thing?" [8] On this, Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, spoke as follows: "Leaders of the people and Councillors, [9] Since we are on our trial to-day for a kind

act done to a helpless man, and are asked in what way the man here before you has been cured, [10] Let me tell you all and all the people of Israel, that it is by the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified and whom God raised from the dead—it is, I say, by his Name that this man stands here before you lame no longer. [11] Jesus is 'the stone which, scorned by you the builders, has yet become the corner stone.' [12] And Salvation is in him alone; for there is no other Name in the whole world, given to men, to which we must look for our Salvation." [13] When the Council saw how boldly Peter and John spoke, and found that they were uneducated men of humble station, they were surprised, and realized that they had been companions of Jesus. [14] But, when they looked at the man who had been healed, standing there with them, they had nothing to say.

[15] So they ordered them out of court, and then began consulting together. [16] "What are we to do to these men?" they asked one another. "That a remarkable sign has been given through them is obvious to every one living in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it. [17] But, to prevent this thing from spreading further among the people, let us warn them not to speak in this Name any more to any one whatever." [18] So they called the Apostles in, and ordered them not to speak or teach in the Name of Jesus. [19] But Peter and John replied: "Whether it is right, in the sight of God, to listen to you rather than to him— [20] Judge for yourselves, for we cannot help speaking of what we have seen and heard." [21] However, after further warnings, the Council set them at liberty, not seeing any safe way of punishing them, because of the people, for they were all praising God for what had occurred; [22] For the man who was the subject of this miraculous cure was more than forty years old.

[23] After they had been set at liberty, the Apostles went to their friends and told them what the Chief Priests and the Councillors had said to them. [24] All who heard their story, moved by a common impulse, raised their voices to God in prayer: "O Sovereign Lord, it is you who has 'made the heavens, the earth, the sea, and everything that is in them,' [25] And who, by the lips of our ancestor, your servant David, who spoke under the influence of the Holy Spirit, have said—'Why did the nations rage, and the peoples form vain designs? [26] The kings of the earth set their array, and its rulers gathered together, against the Lord and against his Christ.' [27] There have indeed gathered together in this city against your holy

Servant Jesus, whom you has consecrated the Christ, not Herod and Pontius Pilate only, but the nations and the people of Israel besides— 28 Yet only to do what thou, by thy power and of thy own will, didst long ago destine to be done. 29 Now, therefore, O Lord, mark their threats, and enable thy servants, with all fearlessness, to tell thy Message, 30 While thou stretchest out thy hand to heal, and causest signs and wonders to take place through the Name of thy holy Servant Jesus." 31 When their prayer was ended, the place in which they were assembled was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to tell God's Message fearlessly.

32 The whole body of those who had become believers in Christ were of one heart and mind. Not one of them claimed any of his goods as his own, but everything was held for the common use. 33 The Apostles continued with great power to bear their testimony to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and God's blessing rested upon them all abundantly. 34 Nor was there any one in need among them, for all who were owners of land or houses sold them, and brought the proceeds of the sales 35 And laid them at the Apostles' feet; and then every one received a share in proportion to his wants. 36 A Levite of Cyprian birth, named Joseph, (who had received from the Apostles the additional name of 'Barnabas'—which means 'The Consoler,') 37 Sold a farm that belonged to him, and brought the money and laid it at the Apostles' feet.

Chapter 5

1 There was, however, a man named Ananias, who, with his wife Sapphira, sold some property, 2 And, with her connivance, kept back some of the proceeds. He brought only a part and laid it at the Apostles' feet. 3 "Ananias," Peter exclaimed, "how is it that Satan has so taken possession of your heart that you have lied to the Holy Spirit, and kept back a part of the money paid for the land? 4 While it was unsold, was not it your own? and after it was sold, was not the money at your own disposal? How did you come to think of such a thing? You have lied, not to men, but to God!" 5 As Ananias heard these words, he fell down and expired; and every one who heard of it was appalled. 6 The young men got up, and, winding the body in a sheet, carried it out and buried it. 7 After an interval of about three hours his wife came in, not knowing what had happened. 8 "Is it true," Peter asked, addressing her, "that you sold your land for such

a sum?" "Yes," she answered, "we did." 9 Then Peter said: "How did you come to agree to provoke the Spirit of the Lord? Listen! The foot-steps of those who have buried your husband are at the door; and they will carry you out too." 10 Instantly Sapphira fell down at Peter's feet and expired. On coming in, the young men found her dead; so they carried her out and buried her by her husband's side. 11 The whole Church and all who heard of these events were appalled.

12 Many signs and wonders continued to occur among the people, through the instrumentality of the Apostles, whose custom it was to meet all together in the Colonnade of Solomon; 13 But of the rest no one ventured to join them. On the other hand, the people were full of their praise, 14 And still larger numbers, both of men and women, as they became believers in the Lord, were added to their number. 15 The consequence was that people would bring out their sick even into the streets, and lay them on mattresses and mats, in the hope that, as Peter came by, at least his shadow might fall on some one of them. 16 Besides this, the inhabitants of the towns round Jerusalem flocked into the city, bringing with them their sick and those who were troubled by foul spirits; and they were cured every one.

17 At this the High Priest was roused to action, and he and all his supporters (who formed the party of the Sadducees), moved by jealousy, 18 Arrested the Apostles, and had them placed in custody. 19 An angel of the Lord, however, opened the prison doors at night and led them out. 20 "Go," he said, "and stand in the Temple Courts, and tell the people the whole Message of this new Life." 21 When they heard this, they went at daybreak into the Temple Courts, and began to teach. The High Priest and his party, on their arrival, summoned the High Council, including all the leading men among the Israelites, and sent to the jail to fetch the Apostles. 22 But, when the officers got there, they did not find them in the prison; so they returned and reported that, 23 While they had found the goal barred securely and the guards posted at the doors, yet, on opening them, they had not found any one inside. 24 When the Officer in charge at the Temple and the Chief Priests heard their story, they were perplexed about the Apostles and as to what all this would lead to. 25 Presently, however, some one came and told them, that the men whom they had put in prison were actually standing in the Temple

Courts, teaching the people.

[26] On this, the Officer went with his men and fetched the Apostles—without using violence, for they were afraid of being stoned by the people— [27] And then brought them before the Council. The High Priest demanded an explanation from them. [28] "We gave you strict orders," he said, "not to teach in this Name. Yet you have actually flooded Jerusalem with your teaching, and you want to make us responsible for the death of this man." [29] To this Peter and the Apostles replied: "We must obey God rather than men. [30] The God of our ancestors raised Jesus, whom you put to death by hanging him on a cross. [31] It is this Jesus whom God has exalted to his right hand, to be a Guide and a Saviour, to give Israel repentance and forgiveness of sins. [32] And we are witness to the truth of this, and so is the Holy Spirit—the gift of God to those who obey him." [33] The members of the Council became frantic with rage on hearing this, and were for putting the Apostles to death. [34] But Gamaliel, a Pharisee, who was a Doctor of the Law and who was held in universal respect, rose in the Council, and directed that the men should be taken out of court for a little while. [35] He then said: "Men of Israel, take care as to what you intend to do with these men. [36] For not long ago Theudas appeared, professing to be somebody, and was joined by a body of some four hundred men. But he was killed; and all his followers scattered and dwindled away. [37] After him, Judas the Galilean appeared at the time of the census, and induced people to follow him; Yet he, too, perished and all his followers were dispersed. [38] And, in this present case, my advice to you is not to interfere with these men, but to let them alone, for, if their designs and their work are merely of human origin, they will come to an end; [39] But, if they are of divine origin, you will be powerless to put an end to them—or else you may find yourselves fighting against God!" [40] The Council followed his advice, and, calling the Apostles in, had them flogged, and then, after cautioning them not to speak in the Name of Jesus, set them free. [41] But the Apostles left the Council, rejoicing that they had been thought worthy to suffer disgrace for that Name; [42] And never for a single day, either in the Temple Courts or in private houses, did they cease to teach, or to tell the Good News of Jesus, the Christ.

Chapter 6

[1] About this time, when the number of the disciples was constantly increasing, complaints were made by the Jews of foreign birth against the native Jews, that their widows were being overlooked in the daily distribution. [2] The Twelve, therefore, called together the general body of the disciples and said to them: "It is not well for us to see to the distribution at the tables and neglect God's Message. [3] Therefore, Brothers, look for seven men of reputation among yourselves, wise and spiritually-minded men, and we will appoint them to attend to this matter; [4] While we, for our part, will devote ourselves to Prayer, and to the delivery of the Message." [5] This proposal was unanimously agreed to; and the disciples chose Stephen—a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit—and Philip, Prochorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and Nicholas of Antioch, a former convert to Judaism; [6] And they brought these men to the Apostles, who, after praying, placed their hands on them. [7] So God's Message spread, and the number of the disciples continued to increase rapidly in Jerusalem, and a large body of the priests accepted the Faith.

[8] Meanwhile Stephen, divinely helped and strengthened, was showing great wonders and signs among the people. [9] But some members of the Synagogue known as that of Libertines, Cyrenians, Alexandrians, and Visitors from Cilicia and Roman Asia, were roused to action and began disputing with Stephen; [10] Yet they were quite unable to withstand the wisdom and the inspiration with which he spoke. [11] Then they induced some men to assert that they had heard Stephen saying blasphemous things against Moses, and against God; [12] And they stirred up the people, as well as the Councillors and the Teachers of the Law, and set upon Stephen, and arrested him, and brought him before the High Council. [13] There they produced witnesses who gave false evidence. "This man," they said, "is incessantly saying things against this Holy Place and the Law; [14] Indeed, we have heard him declare that this Jesus of Nazareth will destroy this Place, and change the customs handed down to us by Moses." [15] The eyes of all the members of the Council were riveted upon Stephen, and they saw his face looking like the face of an angel.

Chapter 7

1 Then the High Priest asked: “Is this true?” 2 And, upon
that, Stephen spoke as follows: “Brothers and Fathers, hear what I
have to say. God, who manifests himself in the Glory, appeared to
our ancestor Abraham when he was in Mesopotamia, and before he
settled in Haran, and said to him— 3 ‘Leave your country and your
kindred, and come into the country that I will show you.’ 4 On this,
Abraham left the country of the Chaldaeans and settled in Haran;
and from there, after his father’s death, God caused him to migrate
into this very country, in which you are now living. 5 God did not
at that time give him any part of it, not even a foot of ground. But
he promised to ‘give him possession of it and his descendants
after him, though at that time he had no child. 6 God’s words were
these—‘Abraham’s descendants shall live in a foreign country,
where they will be enslaved and ill-treated for four hundred years.
7 But I myself will judge the nation, to which they will be enslaved,’
God said, ‘and after that they shall leave the country and worship
me in this place.’ 8 Then God made with Abraham the Covenant
of Circumcision; and under it Abraham became the father of
Isaac, and circumcised him when he was eight days old; and Isaac
became the father of Jacob; and Jacob of the Twelve Patriarchs. 9
The Patriarchs, out of jealousy, sold Joseph into slavery in Egypt;
but God was with him, 10 And delivered him out of all his troubles,
and enabled him to win favour and show wisdom before Pharaoh,
King of Egypt, who appointed him Governor of Egypt and of his
whole household. 11 Then a famine spread over the whole of Egypt
and Canaan, causing great distress, and our ancestors could find
no food. 12 Hearing, however, that there was corn in Egypt, Jacob
sent our ancestors there on their first visit. 13 In the course of their
second visit, Joseph revealed himself to his brothers, and his family
became known to Pharaoh. 14 Then Joseph sent an urgent invitation
to his father Jacob and to his relations, seventy-five persons in
all; 15 And so Jacob went down into Egypt. There he died, and our
ancestors also, 16 And their bodies were removed to Shechem, and
laid in the tomb which Abraham had bought for a sum of money
from the sons of Hamor in Shechem.

17 As the time drew near for the fulfilment of the promise
which God had made to Abraham, the people increased largely

in numbers in Egypt, 18 Until a new king, who knew nothing of
Joseph, came to the throne. 19 This king acted deceitfully towards
our race and ill-treated our ancestors, making them abandon their
own infants, so that they should not be reared. 20 It was just at this
time that Moses was born. He was an exceedingly beautiful child,
and for three months was brought up in his own father’s house; 21
And, when he was abandoned, the daughter of Pharaoh found him
and brought him up as her own son. 22 So Moses was educated in
all the learning of the Egyptians, and proved his ability both by his
words and actions. 23 When he was in his fortieth year, he resolved
to visit his brother Israelites; 24 And, seeing an Israelite ill-treated,
he defended him, and avenged the man, who was being wronged,
by striking down the Egyptian. 25 He thought his brothers would
understand that God was using him to save them; but they failed to
do so. 26 The next day he again appeared upon the scene, when some
of them were fighting, and tried to make peace between them. ‘Men,’
he said, ‘you are brothers; how is it that you are ill-treating one
another?’ 27 But the man who was ill-treating his fellow workman
pushed Moses aside saying—‘Who made you a ruler and judge over
us? 28 Do you mean to make away with me as you did yesterday with
that Egyptian?’ 29 At these words Moses took to flight, and became
an exile in Midian; and there he had two sons born to him.

30 Forty years had passed when there appeared to him, in the
Desert of Mount Sinai, an angel in a flame of fire in a bush. 31 When
Moses saw it, he was astonished at the vision; but on his going
nearer to look at it more closely, the voice of the Lord was heard
to say— 32 ‘I am the God of your ancestors, the God of Abraham,
Isaac, and Jacob.’ Moses trembled, and did not dare to look. 33
Then the Lord said to him—‘Take your sandals off your feet, for
the spot where you are standing is holy ground. 34 I have seen the
oppression of my people who are in Egypt, and heard their groans,
and I have come down to deliver them. Come now and I will send
you into Egypt.’ 35 This same Moses, whom they had disowned
with the words—‘Who made you a ruler and a judge?’ was the very
man whom God sent to be both a ruler and a deliverer, under the
guidance of the angel that had appeared to him in the bush. 36 He
it was who led them out, after he had shown wonders and signs in
Egypt, in the Red Sea, and in the Desert during forty years. 37 This
was the Moses who said to the people of Israel—‘God will raise up

for you, from among your brothers, a Prophet, as he raised up me.'
38 He, too, it was who was present at the assembly in the Desert,
with the angel who talked to him on Mount Sinai, and with our
ancestors, and who received living truths to impart to you. 39 Yet
our ancestors refused him obedience; more than that, they rejected
him, and in their hearts turned back to Egypt, 40 While they said to
Aaron—'Make us Gods who will lead the way for us, since, as for this
Moses who has brought us out of Egypt, we do not know what has
become of him.' 41 That was the time when they made the Calf and
offered sacrifice to their idol, and held festivities in honour of their
own handiwork!

42 So God turned from them and left them to the worship
of the Starry Host, as is written in the Book of the Prophets—'Did
you offer victims and sacrifices to me, O House of Israel, all those
forty years in the Desert? 43 You took with you the tabernacle of
Moloch and the Star of the god Rephan—the images which you
had made to worship. Therefore I will exile you beyond Babylon.'
44 Our ancestors had the Tabernacle of Revelation in the Desert,
constructed, just as he who spoke to Moses had directed him to
make it, after the model which he had seen. 45 This Tabernacle,
which was handed down to them, was brought into this country
by our ancestors who accompanied Joshua (at the conquest of the
nations that God drove out before their advance), and remained
here until the time of David. 46 David found favour with God, and
prayed that he might find a dwelling for the God of Jacob. 47 But it
was Solomon who built a House for God. 48 Yet it is not in buildings
made by hands that the Most High dwells. As the Prophet says— 49
'The heavens are a throne for me, and the earth a stool for my feet.
What manner of House will you build me, says the Lord, or what
place is there where I may rest? 50 Was it not my hand that made all
these things?'

51 O! stubborn race, heathen in heart and ears, you are for
ever resisting the Holy Spirit; your ancestors did it, and you are
doing it still. 52 Which of the Prophets escaped persecution at their
hands? They killed those who foretold the coming of the Righteous
One; of whom you, in your turn, have now become the betrayers
and murderers— 53 You who received the Law as transmitted by
angels and yet failed to keep it."

54 As they listened to this, the Council grew frantic with

rage, and gnashed their teeth at Stephen. 55 He, filled as he was
with the Holy Spirit, fixed his eyes intently on the heavens, and saw
the Glory of God and Jesus standing at God's right hand. 56 "Look,"
he exclaimed, "I see Heaven open and the Son of Man standing at
God's right hand!" 57 At this, with a loud shout, they stopped their
ears and all rushed upon him, forced him outside the city, 58 And
began to stone him, the witnesses laying their clothes at the feet of a
young man named Saul. 59 And they stoned Stephen, while he cried
to the Lord: "Lord Jesus! receive my spirit!" 60 Falling on his knees,
he called out loudly: "Lord! do not charge them with this sin;" and
with these words he fell asleep.

Chapter 8

1 Saul approved of his being put to death. On that very day
a great persecution broke out against the Church which was in
Jerusalem; and its members, with the exception of the Apostles,
were all scattered over the districts of Judea and Samaria. 2 Some
religious men buried Stephen, with loud lamentations for him. 3 But
Saul began to devastate the Church; he entered house after house,
dragged out men and women alike, and threw them into prison.

4 Now those who were scattered in different directions went
from place to place proclaiming the Good News. 5 Philip went down
to the city of Samaria, and there began to preach the Christ. 6 The
people, one and all, listened attentively to what Philip told them,
when they heard of, and saw, the miracles which he was working.
7 For there were many instances of people with foul spirits, where
the spirits, with loud screams, came out of them; 8 And many who
were paralyzed or lame were cured, so that there was great rejoicing
throughout that city. 9 There was staying in the city a man named
Simon, who had been practicing magic there and mystifying the
Samaritan people, giving himself out to be some great Being. 10
Every one, high and low, paid attention to him. 'This man,' they
used to say, 'must be that Power of God which men call "The Great
Power."' 11 And they paid attention to him because they had for a
long time been mystified by his magic arts. 12 However, when they
came to believe Philip, as he told them the Good News about the
Kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized,
both men and women. 13 Even Simon believed, and after his baptism
attached himself to Philip, and was in his turn mystified at seeing

signs and great miracles constantly occurring.

14 When the Apostles at Jerusalem heard that the Samaritans
had welcomed God's Message, they sent Peter and John to them; 15
And they, on their arrival, prayed that the Samaritans might receive
the Holy Spirit. 16 (As yet the Spirit had not descended upon any
of them; they had only been baptized into the Faith of the Lord
Jesus). 17 Then Peter and John placed their hands on them, and they
received the Holy Spirit. 18 When Simon saw that it was through the
placing of the Apostles' hands on them that the Spirit was given, he
brought them a sum of money and said: 19 "Give me also this power
of yours, so that, if I place my hands upon any one, he may receive
the Holy Spirit." 20 "A curse upon you and upon your money," Peter
exclaimed, "for thinking that God's free gift can be bought with
gold! 21 You have no share or part in our Message, for your 'heart is
not right with God.' 22 Therefore repent of this wickedness of yours,
and pray to the Lord, that, if possible, you may be forgiven for such
a thought; 23 For I see that you have fallen into the 'bitterness of
envy' and the 'fetters of sin.'" 24 "Pray to the Lord for me, all of you,"
Simon answered, "so that none of the things you have spoken of
may befall me." 25 Peter and John, having borne their testimony
and delivered the Lord's Message, returned to Jerusalem, telling
the Good News, as they went, in many Samaritan villages.

26 Meanwhile an angel of the Lord had said to Philip: "Set
out on a journey southwards, along the road that runs down from
Jerusalem to Gaza." (It is now deserted). 27 So Philip set out on a
journey; and on his way he came upon an official of high rank, in the
service of Candace, Queen of the Abyssinians. He was her treasurer,
and had been to Jerusalem to worship, 28 And was now on his way
home, sitting in his carriage and reading the Prophet Isaiah. 29 The
Spirit said to Philip: "Go up to the carriage yonder and keep close
to it." 30 So Philip ran up, and he heard the Abyssinian reading the
Prophet Isaiah. "Do you understand what you are reading?" he
asked. 31 "How can I," the other answered, "unless some one will
explain it to me?" and he invited Philip to get up and sit by his side.
32 The passage of Scripture which he was reading was this—'Like
a sheep, he was led away to slaughter, and as a lamb is dumb in
the hands of its shearer, so he refrains from opening his lips. 33 In
his lowly condition justice was denied him. Who will tell the story
of his generation? For his life is cut off from earth.' 34 "Now," said

the Treasurer, addressing Philip, "tell me, of whom is the Prophet
speaking? Of himself, or of some one else?" 35 Then Philip began,
and, taking this passage as his text, told him the Good News about
Jesus. 36 Presently, as they were going along the road, they came
to some water, and the Treasurer exclaimed: "Look! here is water;
what is to prevent my being baptized?" 37 And Philip said, "If thou
believest with all thine heart, thou mayest." And he answered and
said, "I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God." 38 So he ordered
the carriage to stop, and they went down into the water—both Philip
and the Treasurer—and Philip baptized him. 39 But, when they came
up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught Philip away, and
the Treasurer saw no more of him; for he continued his journey
with a joyful heart. 40 But Philip was found at Ashdod, and, as he
went on his way, he told the Good News in all the towns through
which he passed, till he came to Caesarea.

Chapter 9

1 Meanwhile Saul, still breathing murderous threats against
the disciples of the Lord, went to the High Priest, 2 And asked
him to give him letters to the Jewish congregations at Damascus,
authorizing him, if he found there any supporters of the Cause,
whether men or women, to have them put in chains and brought
to Jerusalem. 3 While on his journey, as he was nearing Damascus,
suddenly a light from the heavens flashed around him. 4 He fell to
the ground and heard a voice saying to him—"Saul, Saul, why are
you persecuting me?" 5 "Who are you, Lord?" he asked. "I am Jesus,
whom you are persecuting," the voice answered; 6 "Yet stand up
and go into the city, and you will be told what you must do." 7 The
men travelling with Saul were meanwhile standing speechless; they
heard the sound of the voice, but saw no one. 8 When Saul got up
from the ground, though his eyes were open, he could see nothing.
So his men led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus; 9
And for three days he was unable to see, and took nothing either to
eat or to drink.

10 Now there was at Damascus a disciple named Ananias,
to whom, in a vision, the Lord said: "Ananias." "Yes, Lord," he
answered. 11 "Go at once," said the Lord, "to the 'Straight Street',
and ask at Judas's house for a man named Saul, from Tarsus. He
is at this moment praying, 12 And he has seen, in a vision, a man

named Ananias coming in and placing his hands on him, so that he may recover his sight." 13 "Lord," exclaimed Ananias, "I have heard from many people about this man—how much harm he has done at Jerusalem to your People there. 14 And, here, too, he holds authority from the Chief Priests to put in chains all those who invoke your Name." 15 But the Lord said to him: "Go, for this man is my chosen instrument to uphold my Name before the Gentiles and their kings, and the people of Israel. 16 I will myself show him all that he has to suffer for my Name." 17 So Ananias went, entered the house, and, placing his hands on Saul, said: "Saul, my Brother, I have been sent by the Lord—by Jesus, who appeared to you on your way here—so that you may recover your sight and be filled with the Holy Spirit." 18 Instantly it seemed as if a film fell from Saul's eyes, and his sight was restored. Then he got up and was baptized, 19 And, after he had taken food, he felt his strength return. Saul stayed for some days with the disciples who were at Damascus, 20 And at once began in the Synagogues to proclaim Jesus as the Son of God. 21 All who heard him were amazed. "Is not this," they asked, "the man who worked havoc in Jerusalem among those that invoke this Name, and who had also come here for the express purpose of having such persons put in chains and taken before the Chief Priests?" 22 Saul's influence, however, kept steadily increasing, and he confounded the Jews who lived in Damascus by the proofs that he gave that Jesus was the Christ.

23 After some time the Jews laid a plot to kill Saul, 24 But it became known to him. They even watched the gates day and night, to kill him; 25 But his disciples let him down by night through an opening in the wall, lowering him in a basket. 26 On his arrival in Jerusalem, Saul attempted to join the disciples, but they were all afraid of him, as they did not believe that he was really a disciple. 27 Barnabas, however, taking him by the hand, brought him to the Apostles, and told them the whole story of how Saul on his journey had seen the Lord, and how the Lord had talked to him, and how in Damascus he had spoken out fearlessly in the Name of Jesus. 28 After that, Saul remained in Jerusalem, in close intercourse with the Apostles; and he spoke fearlessly in the Name of the Lord, 29 Talking and arguing with the Jews of foreign birth, who, however, made attempts to kill him. 30 But, when the Brethren found this out, they took him down to Caesarea, and sent him on his way to Tarsus.

31 And so it came about that the Church, throughout Judea, Galilee, and Samaria, enjoyed peace and became firmly established; and, ordering its life by reverence for the Lord and the help of the Holy Spirit, it increased in numbers.

32 Peter, while travelling from place to place throughout the country, went down to visit the People of Christ living at Lydda. 33 There he found a man named Aeneas, who had been bed-ridden for eight years with paralysis. 34 "Aeneas," Peter said to him, "Jesus Christ cures you. Get up, and make your bed." Aeneas got up at once; 35 And all the inhabitants of Lydda and of the Plain of Sharon saw him, and came over to the Lord's side.

36 At Jaffa there lived a disciple whose name was Tabitha, which is in Greek 'Dorcas'—a Gazelle. Her life was spent in doing kind and charitable actions. 37 Just at that time she was taken ill, and died; and they had washed her body and laid it out in an upstairs room. 38 Jaffa was near Lydda, and the disciples, having heard that Peter was at Lydda, sent two men with the request that he would come on to them without delay. 39 Peter returned with them at once. On his arrival, he was taken upstairs, and all the widows came round him in tears, showing the coats and other clothing which Dorcas had made while she was among them. 40 But Peter sent everybody out of the room, and knelt down and prayed. Then, turning to the body, he said: "Tabitha! stand up." She opened her eyes, and, seeing Peter, sat up. 41 Giving her his hand, Peter raised her up, and, calling in the widows and others of Christ's People, presented her to them alive. 42 This became known all through Jaffa, and numbers of People came to believe in the Lord. 43 And Peter stayed some days at Jaffa with a tanner named Simon.

Chapter 10

1 There was then in Caesarea a man named Cornelius, a Captain in the regiment known as the 'Italian Regiment,' 2 A religious man and one who reverenced God, with all his household. He was liberal in his charities to the people, and prayed to God constantly. 3 One afternoon, about three o'clock, he distinctly saw in a vision an angel from God come to him, and call him by name. 4 Cornelius fixed his eyes on him and, in great alarm, said: "What is it, Lord?" "Your prayers and your charities," the angel answered, "have been an acceptable offering to God. 5 And now, send messengers to

Jaffa and fetch a man called Simon, who is also known as Peter. [6] He is lodging with a tanner named Simon, who has a house near the sea." [7] When the angel, who had spoken to him, had gone, Cornelius called two menservants and a religious soldier, who was one of his constant attendants, [8] And, after telling them the whole story, sent them to Jaffa.

[9] On the next day, while these men were on their way, just as they were nearing the town, Peter went up on the housetop about mid-day to pray. [10] He became hungry and wanted something to eat; but while it was being prepared, he fell into a trance, [11] And saw that the heavens were open, and that something like a great sail was descending, let down by its four corners towards the earth. [12] In it were all kinds of quadrupeds, reptiles, and birds. [13] Then he was aware of a voice which said—"Stand up, Peter, kill something, and eat." [14] "No, Lord, I cannot," answered Peter, "for I have never eaten anything 'defiled' and 'unclean'." [15] Again he was aware of a voice which said—"What God has pronounced 'clean', do not regard as 'defiled'." [16] This happened three times, and then suddenly it was all taken up into the heavens. [17] While Peter was still perplexed as to the meaning of the vision that he had seen, the men sent by Cornelius, having enquired the way to Simon's house, came up to the gate, [18] And called out and asked if the Simon, who was also known as Peter, was lodging there.

[19] Peter was still pondering over the vision, when the Spirit said to him: "There are two men looking for you at this moment. [20] Go down at once and do not hesitate to go with them, for I have sent them." [21] Peter went down to the men and said: "I am the man for whom you are looking. What is your reason for coming?" [22] The men replied: "Our captain, Cornelius, a pious man who reverences God and is well spoken of by the whole Jewish nation, has been instructed by a holy angel to send for you to his house, and to listen to what you have to say." [23] Upon this Peter invited them in and entertained them. The next day he lost no time in setting out with them, accompanied by some of the Brethren from Jaffa; [24] And the day following he entered Caesarea. Cornelius was expecting them, and had invited his relations and intimate friends to meet them. [25] So, when Peter entered the city, Cornelius met him, and, throwing himself at Peter's feet, bowed to the ground. [26] Peter, however, lifted him up, saying as he did so: "Stand up, I am only a man like

yourself." [27] Talking with him as he went, Peter entered the house, where he found a large gathering of people, to whom he said: [28] "You are doubtless aware that it is forbidden for a Jew to be intimate with a foreigner, or even to enter his house; and yet God has shown me that I ought not to call any man 'defiled' or 'unclean.' [29] That was why I came, when I was sent for, without raising any objection. And now I ask your reason for sending for me." [30] "Just three days ago this very hour," Cornelius said, "I was in my house, saying the Afternoon Prayers, when a man in dazzling clothing suddenly stood before me. [31] 'Cornelius,' he said, 'your prayer has been heard, and your charities have been accepted, by God. [32] Therefore send to Jaffa, and invite the Simon, who is also known as Peter, to come here. He is lodging in the house of Simon the tanner, near the sea.' [33] Accordingly I sent to you at once, and you have been so good as to come. And now we are all here in the presence of God, to listen to all that you have been instructed by the Lord to say."

[34] Then Peter began. "I see, beyond all doubt," he said, "that 'God does not show partiality,' [35] But that in every nation he who reverences him and does what is right is acceptable to him. [36] God has sent his Message to the Israelites and told them, through Jesus Christ, the Good News of peace—and Jesus is Lord of all! [37] You yourselves know the story which spread through all Judea, how, beginning form Galilee, after the baptism which John proclaimed— [38] The story, I mean, of Jesus of Nazareth, and how God consecrated him his Christ by enduing him with the Holy Spirit and with power; and how he went about doing good and curing all who were under the power of the Devil, because God was with him. [39] We are ourselves, too, witnesses to all that he did in Judea and in Jerusalem; yet they put him to death by hanging him on a cross! [40] This Jesus God raised on the third day, and enabled him to appear, [41] Not indeed to every one, but to witnesses chosen beforehand by God—to us, who ate and drank with him after his resurrection from the dead. [42] Further, God charged us to proclaim to the people, and solemnly affirm, that it is Jesus who has been appointed by God Judge of the living and the dead. [43] To him it is that all the Prophets bear witness, when they say that every one who believes in him receives through his Name forgiveness of sins."

[44] Before Peter had finished saying these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all who were listening to the Message. [45] Those converts

from Judaism, who had come with Peter, were amazed that the gift of the Holy Spirit had been bestowed even upon the Gentiles; 46 For they heard them speaking with 'tongues' and extolling God. At this Peter asked: 47 "Can any one refuse the water for the baptism of these people, now that they have received the Holy Spirit as we did ourselves?" 48 And he directed that they should be baptized in the Faith of Jesus Christ; after which they asked him to stay there a few days longer.

Chapter 11

1 The Apostles and the Brethren throughout Judea heard that even the Gentiles had welcomed God's Message. 2 But, when Peter went up to Jerusalem, those who were converts from Judaism began to attack him, 3 On the ground that he had visited people who were not circumcised, and had taken meals with them. 4 So Peter began to relate the facts to them as they had occurred. 5 "I was in the town of Jaffa," he said, "and was praying; and, while in a trance, I saw a vision. There was something like a great sail descending, let down by its four corners out of the heavens; and it came right down to me. 6 Looking intently at it, I began to distinguish quadrupeds, wild beasts, reptiles, and birds; 7 And I also heard a voice saying to me—'Stand up, Peter, kill something and eat.' 8 'No, Lord, I cannot,' I answered, 'for nothing 'defiled' or 'unclean' has ever passed my lips.' 9 Then a second time there came a voice from the heavens. "What God has pronounced 'clean'," it said, "you must not call 'defiled'." 10 This happened three times, and then all was drawn up again into the heavens. 11 At that moment three men, who had been sent from Caesarea to see me, came up to the house in which we were. 12 The Spirit told me to go with them without hesitation. These six Brothers also went with me. And, when we came into the man's house, 13 He told us how he had seen the angel standing in his house, and how the angel had said to him—'Send to Jaffa and fetch the Simon, who is also known as Peter; 14 For he will tell you truths, which will prove the means of Salvation to you and all your household.' 15 I had but just begun to speak," continued Peter, "when the Holy Spirit fell on them, exactly as on us at the first; 16 And I recalled the saying of the Master—'John baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit.' 17 Since then, God had given them the very same gift as he gave us when we became

believers in Jesus Christ the Master—who was I that I could thwart God?" 18 On hearing this statement, they said no more, but broke out into praise of God. "So even to the Gentiles," they exclaimed, "God has granted the repentance which leads to Life!"

19 Now those who had been scattered in different directions, in consequence of the persecution that followed upon the death of Stephen, went as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus, and Antioch, telling the Message—but only to Jews. 20 Some of them, however, who were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, on coming to Antioch, addressed themselves also to the Jews of foreign birth, telling them the Good News about that Lord Jesus. 21 The power of the Lord was with them, so that a great number who had learned to believe came over to the Lord's side. 22 The news about them reached the ears of the Church at Jerusalem, and they sent Barnabas to Antioch. 23 On coming there he saw to his great joy these tokens of the loving-kindness of God, and encouraged them all to make up their minds to be faithful to the Lord— 24 For Barnabas was a good man and full of the Holy Spirit and of faith—and a large number of people took their stand on the Lord's side. 25 Afterwards Barnabas left for Tarsus to look for Saul; 26 And, when he had found him, he brought him to Antioch. And so it came about that, for a whole year, they attended the meetings of the Church there, and taught a large number of people; and it was in Antioch that the disciples were first called 'Christians.'

27 During this time, some Prophets came to Antioch from Jerusalem. 28 One of them, named Agabus, came forward and, under the influence of the Spirit, foretold a great famine that was to spread over all the world—a famine which occurred in the reign of Claudius. 29 So the disciples, without exception, determined, in proportion to their means, to send something to help the Brethren living in Judea. 30 And this they did, sending it to the Officers of the Church by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

Chapter 12

1 It was at that time that King Herod began to ill-treat some of the members of the Church. 2 He had James, the brother of John, beheaded; 3 And, when he saw that the Jews were pleased with this, he proceeded to arrest Peter also. (This was during the Festival of the Unleavened Bread.) 4 After seizing Peter, Herod put him in prison, and entrusted him to the keeping of four Guards of four

soldiers each, intending, after the Passover, to bring him up before the people.

5 So Peter was kept in prison, but meanwhile the prayers
of the Church were being earnestly offered to God on his behalf. 6
Just when Herod was intending to bring him before the people, on
that very night Peter was asleep between two soldiers, chained to
them both, while there were sentries in front of the door, guarding
the prison. 7 Suddenly an angel of the Lord stood by him, and a
light shone in the cell. The angel struck Peter on the side, and
roused him with the words: "Get up quickly." 8 The chains dropped
from his wrists, and then the angel said: "Put on your girdle and
sandals." When Peter had done so, the angel added: "Throw your
cloak round you and follow me." 9 Peter followed him out, not
knowing that what was happening under the angel's guidance was
real, but thinking that he was seeing a vision. 10 Passing the first
Guard, and then the second, they came to the iron gate leading
into the city, which opened to them of itself; and, when they had
passed through that, and had walked along one street, all at once
the angel left him. 11 Then Peter came to himself and said: "Now
I know beyond all doubt that the Lord has sent his angel, and has
rescued me from Herod's hands and from all that the Jewish people
have been expecting." 12 As soon as he realized what had happened,
he went to the house of Mary, the mother of John who was also
known as Mark, where a number of people were gathered together,
praying. 13 On his knocking at the door in the gate, a maidservant,
named Rhoda, came to answer it. 14 She recognized Peter's voice,
but in her joy left the gate unopened, and ran in, and told them that
Peter was standing outside. 15 "You are mad!" they exclaimed. But,
when she persisted that it was so, they said: "It must be his spirit!"
16 Meanwhile Peter went on knocking, and, when they opened the
gate and saw him, they were amazed. 17 Peter signed to them with
his hand to be silent, and then told them how the Lord had brought
him out of the prison, adding: "Tell James and the Brethren all
this." Then he left the house, and went away to another place. 18 In
the morning there was a great stir among the soldiers—what could
have become of Peter! 19 And, when Herod had made further search
for him and failed to find him, he closely questioned the Guard, and
ordered them away to execution. Then he went down from Judea to
stay at Caesarea.

20 It happened that Herod was deeply offended with the
people of Tyre and Sidon, but they went in a body to him, and,
having succeeded in winning over Blastus, the Chamberlain, they
begged Herod for a reconciliation, because their country was
dependent on the King's for its food-supply. 21 On an appointed day
Herod, wearing his state-robes, seated himself on his throne, and
delivered an oration. 22 The people kept shouting: "It is the voice of
God, and not of a man!" 23 Instantly an angel of the Lord struck him,
because he did not give God the glory; and he was attacked with
worms, and died. 24 Meanwhile the Lord's Message kept extending,
and spreading far and wide. 25 When Barnabas and Saul had carried
out their mission, they returned to Jerusalem, and took with them
John, who was also known as Mark.

Chapter 13

1 Among the members of the Church at Antioch there were
several Prophets and Teachers—Barnabas, Simeon who was known
by the name of 'Black', Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen, foster-brother of
Prince Herod, and Saul. 2 While they were engaged in the worship
of the Lord and were fasting, the Holy Spirit said: "Set apart for
me Barnabas and Saul, for the work to which I have called them."
3 Accordingly, after fasting and prayer, they placed their hands on
them and dismissed them.

4 Barnabas and Saul, sent on this mission, as they were, by
the Holy Spirit, went down to Seleucia, and from there sailed to
Cyprus. 5 On reaching Salamis, they began to tell the Message of
God in the Jewish Synagogues; and they had John with them as
an assistant. 6 After passing through the whole island, they reached
Paphos, where they found an astrologer who pretended to be a
Prophet—a Jew by birth, whose name was Barjoshua. 7 He was at
the court of the Governor, Sergius Paulus, a man of intelligence,
who sent for Barnabas and Saul and asked to be told God's Message.
8 But Elymas, the astrologer (for that is the meaning of the word),
opposed them, eager to divert the Governor's attention from the
Faith. 9 However, Saul (who is the same as Paul), full of the Holy
Spirit, fixed his eyes on him and said: 10 "You incarnation of deceit
and all fraud! You son of the Devil! You opponent of all that is
good! Will you never cease to divert 'the straight paths of the Lord'?
Listen! 11 The hand of the Lord is upon you even now, and you will

be blind for a time and unable to see the sun." Immediately a mist and darkness fell upon him, and he went feeling about for some one to guide him. 12 When the Governor saw what had happened, he became a believer in Christ, being greatly impressed by the teaching about the Lord. 13 After this, Paul and his companions set sail from Paphos and went to Perga in Pamphylia, where John left them and returned to Jerusalem.

14 The others went on from Perga and arrived at Antioch in Pisidia. There they went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath and took their seats. 15 After the reading of the Law and the Prophets, the President of the Synagogue sent them this message—"Brothers, if you have any helpful words to address to the people, now is the time to speak." 16 So Paul rose and, motioning with his hand, spoke as follows: "Men of Israel and all here who reverence God, hear what I have to say. 17 The God of this people Israel chose our ancestors, and during their stay in Egypt increased the prosperity of the people, and then 'with uplifted arm brought them out from that land.' 18 For about forty years 'he bore with them in the Desert'; 19 Then, after destroying seven heathen nations in Canaan, he allotted their land to this people— 20 For about four hundred and fifty years. In later times he gave them Judges, of whom the Prophet Samuel was the last. 21 And, when they demanded a king, God gave them Saul the son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, who reigned for forty years. 22 After removing him, he raised David to the throne, and bore this testimony to him—'In David, the son of Jesse, I have found a man after my own heart, who will carry out all my purposes.' 23 It was from this man's descendants that God, in accordance with his promise, gave Israel a Saviour—Jesus; 24 John having first proclaimed, before the appearance of Jesus, a baptism upon repentance for all the people of Israel. 25 As John was drawing towards the end of his career, he said what do you suppose that I am? I am not the Christ. But there is "One Coming" after me, whose very sandal I am not worthy to untie.' 26 Brothers, descendants of Abraham, and all those among you who reverence God, it was to us that the Message of this Salvation was sent. 27 The people of Jerusalem and their leading men, failing to recognize Jesus, and not understanding the utterances of the Prophets that are read every Sabbath, fulfilled them by condemning him. 28 They found no ground at all for putting him to death, and yet demanded his

execution from Pilate; 29 And, after carrying out everything written about him, they took Jesus down from the cross, and laid him in a tomb. 30 But God raised him from the dead; 31 And he appeared for many days to those who had gone up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, and who are now witnesses for him to the people. 32 We also have good news to tell you, about the promise made to our ancestors— 33 That our children have had this promise completely fulfilled to them by God, by his raising Jesus. That is just what is said in the second Psalm—'Thou art my Son; this day I have become thy Father.' 34 As to his raising Jesus from the dead, never again to return to corruption, this is what is said—'I will give to you the sacred promises made to David;' 35 And, therefore, in another Psalm it is said—'Thou wilt not give up the Holy One to undergo corruption.' 36 David, after obediently doing God's will in his own time, 'fell asleep and was laid by the side of his ancestors, and did undergo corruption; 37 But Jesus, whom God raised from the dead, did not undergo corruption. 38 I would, therefore, have you know, brothers, that through Jesus forgiveness of sins is being proclaimed to you, 39 And that, in union with him, every one who believes in him is absolved from every sin from which under the Law of Moses you could not be absolved. 40 Beware, therefore, that what is said in the Prophets does not come true of you— 41 'Look, you despisers, and wonder, and perish; for I am doing a deed in your days—a deed which, though told you in full, you will never believe'."

42 As Paul and Barnabas were leaving the Synagogue, the people begged for a repetition of this teaching on the next Sabbath. 43 After the congregation had dispersed, many of the Jews, and of the converts who joined in their worship, followed Paul and Barnabas, who talked with them and urged them to continue to rely upon the loving-kindness of God. 44 On the following Sabbath, almost all the city gathered to hear God's Message. 45 But the sight of the crowds of people filled the minds of the Jews with jealousy, and they kept contradicting Paul's statements in violent language. 46 Then Paul and Barnabas spoke out fearlessly, and said: "It was necessary that the Message of God should be told to you first; but, since you reject it and reckon yourselves not worthy of the Immortal Life—we turn to the Gentiles! 47 For this is the Lord's command to us—'I have destined thee for a Light to the Gentiles, a means of Salvation to the ends of the earth'." 48 On hearing this, the

Gentiles were glad and extolled God's Message; and all those who had been enrolled for Immortal Life became believers in Christ; [49] And the Lord's Message was carried throughout that district. [50] But the Jews incited the women of position who worshiped with them, and the leading men of the town, and started a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and drove them out of their neighbourhood. [51] They, however, shook the dust off their feet in protest, [52] And went to Iconium, leaving the disciples full of joy and of the Holy Spirit.

Chapter 14

[1] The same thing occurred in Iconium, where Paul and Barnabas went into the Jewish Synagogue, and spoke in such a way that a great number of both Jews and Greeks believed in Christ. [2] But the Jews who refused to believe stirred up the Gentiles, and poisoned their minds against the Brethren. [3] Therefore Paul and Barnabas spent a long time there, and spoke out fearlessly, relying upon the Lord, who confirmed the Message of his Love by permitting signs and wonders to take place at their hands. [4] But the townspeople were divided, some siding with the Jews, some with the Apostles; [5] And, when there was an attempt on the part of both Gentiles and Jews, with their leading men, to resort to violence and to stone them, [6] The Apostles heard of it, and took refuge in Lystra and Derbe, towns in Lycaonia, and in the district round, [7] And there they continued to tell the Good News.

[8] In the streets of Lystra there used to sit a man who had no power in his feet; he had been lame from his birth, and had never walked. [9] This man was listening to Paul speaking, when Paul, fixing his eyes on him, and seeing that he had the faith to be healed, [10] Said loudly: "Stand upright on your feet." The man leaped up, and began walking about, [11] And the crowd, seeing what Paul had done, called out in the Lycaonian language: "The Gods have made themselves like men and have come down to us." [12] So they called Barnabas 'Zeus,' and Paul 'Hermes,' because he took the lead in speaking; [13] And the priest of Zeus-beyond-the-Walls, accompanied by the crowd, brought bullocks and garlands to the gates, with the intention of offering sacrifices. [14] But, when the Apostles Barnabas and Paul heard of it, they tore their clothes and rushed out into the crowd. "Friends, why are you doing this?" they shouted. [15] "We are only men like yourselves, and we have come with the Good

News that you should turn away from these follies to a living God, 'who made the heavens, the earth, the sea, and everything that is in them.' [16] In bygone times he permitted all the nations to go their own ways. [17] Yet he has not failed to give you, in the good he does, some revelation of himself—sending you from heaven rain and fruitful seasons, and gladdening your hearts with plenty and good cheer." [18] Even with this appeal they could hardly restrain the people from offering sacrifice to them.

[19] Presently, however, there came some Jews from Antioch, and Iconium who, after they had won over the people, stoned Paul, and dragged him out of the town, thinking him to be dead. [20] But, when the disciples had gathered round him, he got up and went back into the town; the next day he went with Barnabas to Derbe. [21] After telling the Good News throughout that town, and making a number of converts, they returned to Lystra, Iconium, and Antioch, [22] Reassuring the minds of the disciples, urging them to remain true to the Faith, and showing that it is only through many troubles that we can enter the Kingdom of God. [23] They also appointed Officers for them in every Church, and, after prayer and fasting, commended them to the Lord in whom they had learned to believe. [24] Paul and Barnabas then went through Pisidia, and came into Pamphylia, [25] And, after telling the Message at Perga, went down to Attaleia. [26] From there they sailed to Antioch—the place where they had been committed to the gracious care of God for the work which they had now finished. [27] After their arrival, they gathered the Church together, and gave an account of all that God had helped them to do, and especially how he had opened to the Gentiles the door of faith; [28] And at Antioch they stayed with the disciples for a considerable time.

Chapter 15

[1] But certain persons came down from Judea, and began to teach the Brethren that, unless they were circumcised, in accordance with the custom enjoined by Moses, they could not be saved. [2] This gave rise to a serious dispute, and much discussion, between Paul and Barnabas and these men, and it was therefore settled that Paul and Barnabas and others of their number should go up to Jerusalem, to consult the Apostles and Officers of the Church about the matter under discussion. [3] The Church, therefore, sent

them on their journey, and they made their way through Phoenicia and Samaria, telling the story of the conversion of the Gentiles, to the great joy of all the Brethren. 4 On their arrival at Jerusalem, they were welcomed by the Church, as well as by the Apostles and the Officers, and gave an account of all that God had helped them to do. 5 Some of the Pharisees' party, however, who had become believers in Christ, came forward and declared that they were bound to circumcise converts and to direct them to observe the Law of Moses.

6 The Apostles and the Officers of the Church held a meeting to consider this question. 7 After much discussion, Peter rose and said: "You, my Brothers, know well that long ago God singled me out—that through my lips the Gentiles should hear the Message of the Good News, and become believers in Christ. 8 Now God, who reads all hearts, declared his acceptance of the Gentiles, by giving them the Holy Spirit, just as he did to us. 9 He made no distinction between them and us, when he purified their hearts by their faith. 10 Why, then, do you now provoke God, by putting on the necks of these disciples a yoke which neither our ancestors nor we were able to bear? 11 No, it is through the loving-kindness of the Lord Jesus that we, just as they do, believe that we have been saved." 12 Every voice in the assembly was hushed, as they listened to Barnabas and Paul, while they gave an account of all the signs and wonders which God had shown among the Gentiles through them. 13 After they had finished speaking, James addressed the Council. "Brothers," he began, "hear what I have to say. 14 Simon has described the manner in which God first visited the Gentiles, in order to take from among them a people to bear his Name. 15 And that is in harmony with the words of the Prophets, where they say— 16 '"After this I will return; and I will rebuild the House of David which has fallen—its very ruins I will rebuild, and will set it up once more; 17 That so the rest of mankind may earnestly seek the Lord—even all the Gentiles on whom my Name has been bestowed." 18 Says the Lord, as he does these things, foreknown from of old.' 19 In my judgement, therefore, we should not add to the difficulties of those Gentiles who are turning to God, 20 But we should write to them to abstain from food that has been polluted by being sacrificed to idols, from impurity, from eating the flesh of strangled animals, and from blood. 21 For in every town, for generations past, there have been those who preach

Moses, read as he is in the Synagogues every Sabbath."

22 It was then decided by the Apostles and the Officers, with the assent of the whole Church, to choose some of their number, and send them to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas. Those chosen were Judas (called Barsabas) and Silas, who were leading men among the Brethren. 23 They were bearers of the following letter— 'The Apostles, and the Brothers who are the Officers of the Church, send their greetings to the Brethren of Gentile birth in Antioch, Syria, and Cilicia. 24 As we had heard that some of our number had upset you by their assertions, and unsettled your minds—without instructions from us— 25 We met and decided to choose certain men and send them to you with our dear brothers Barnabas and Paul, 26 Who have sacrificed themselves for the Name of our Lord, Jesus Christ. 27 We are accordingly sending Judas and Silas, and they will tell you by word of mouth what we are now writing. 28 We have, therefore, decided, under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, to lay no further burden upon you beyond these necessary conditions— 29 That you abstain from food offered to idols, from blood, from eating the flesh of strangled animals, and from impurity. If you guard yourselves against such things, it will be well with you. Farewell.' 30 So the bearers of this letter were sent on their way, and went down to Antioch. There they called a meeting of all the brethren, 31 And delivered the letter, the reading of which caused great rejoicing by its encouraging contents. 32 Judas and Silas, who were themselves Prophets, further encouraged the Brethren by many an address, and strengthened their faith. 33 After some stay, they were dismissed with kind farewells from the Brethren, and returned to those who had sent them. 34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still. 35 Paul and Barnabas, however, remained in Antioch, where they taught and, with the help of many others, told the Good News of the Lord's Message.

36 Some time after this, Paul said to Barnabas: "Let us go back and visit the Brethren in every town in which we have told the Lord's Message, and see how they are prospering." 37 Barnabas wished to take with them John, whose other name was Mark; 38 But Paul felt that they ought not to take with them the man who had deserted them in Pamphylia, and had not gone on with them to their work. 39 This caused such unpleasant feeling between them that they parted, Barnabas taking Mark and sailing for Cyprus, 40 While Paul chose

Silas for his companion and, after he had been committed by the Brethren to the gracious care of the Lord, 41 Started on his journey and went through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the Churches in the faith.

Chapter 16

1 Among other places Paul went to Derbe and Lystra. At the latter place they found a disciple, named Timothy, whose mother was a Jewess who had become a believer in Christ, while his father was a Greek, 2 And who was well spoken of by the Brethren in Lystra and Iconium. 3 Wishing to take this man with him on his journey, Paul caused him to be circumcised on account of the Jews in that neighbourhood, for they all knew that his father had been a Greek. 4 As they travelled from town to town, they gave the Brethren the decisions which had been reached by the Apostles and Officers of the Church at Jerusalem, for them to observe. 5 So the Churches grew stronger in the Faith, and increased in numbers from day to day.

6 They next went through the Phrygian district of Galatia, but were restrained by the Holy Spirit from delivering the Message in Roman Asia. 7 When they reached the borders of Mysia, they attempted to go into Bithynia, but the Spirit of Jesus did not permit them. 8 Passing through Mysia, they went down to Troas; 9 And there one night Paul saw a vision. A Macedonian was standing and appealing to him—'Come over to Macedonia and help us.' 10 So, immediately after Paul had seen the vision, we looked for an opportunity to cross over to Macedonia, concluding that God had summoned us to tell the Good News to the people there. 11 Accordingly we set sail from Troas, and ran before the wind to Samothrace, reaching Neapolis the next day. 12 From there we made our way to Philippi, which is the principal city of that part of Macedonia, and also a Roman Settlement. In that city we spent several days. 13 On the Sabbath we went outside the gate to the river-side, where we supposed there would be a Place of Prayer; and we sat down and talked to the women who were gathered there. 14 Among them was a woman, named Lydia, belonging to Thyatira, a dealer in purple cloth, who was accustomed to join in the worship of God. The Lord touched this woman's heart, so that she gave attention to the Message delivered by Paul, 15 And, when

she and her household had been baptized, she urged us to become her guests. "Since you have shown your conviction," she said, "that I really am a believer in the Lord, come and stay in my house." And she insisted on our doing so.

16 One day, as we were on our way to the Place of Prayer, we were met by a girl possessed by a divining spirit, who made large profits for her masters by fortune-telling. 17 This girl followed Paul and the rest of us, calling: "These men are servants of the most high God, and they are bringing you news of a way to Salvation." 18 She had been doing this for several days, when Paul, much vexed, turned and said to the spirit within her: "In the Name of Jesus Christ I command you to leave her." That very moment the spirit left her. 19 When her masters saw that there was no hope of further profit from her, they seized Paul and Silas, dragged them into the public square to the authorities, 20 And took them before the Magistrates. "These men are causing a great disturbance in our town," they complained; 21 "They are Jews, and they are teaching customs which it is not right for us, as Romans, to sanction or adopt." 22 On this the mob rose as one man against them, and the Magistrates stripped them of their clothing and ordered them to be beaten with rods. 23 After beating them severely, the Magistrates put them in prison, with orders to the Governor of the Jail to keep them in safe custody. 24 On receiving so strict an order, the Governor put them into the inner cell, and secured their feet in the stocks.

25 About midnight, while Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and while the prisoners were listening to them, 26 Suddenly there was an earthquake of such violence that the Jail was shaken to its foundations; all the doors flew open, and all the prisoners' chains were loosened. 27 Roused from his sleep, and seeing the prison doors open, the Governor drew his sword intending to kill himself, in the belief that the prisoners had escaped. 28 But Paul called our loudly: "Do not harm yourself; we are all here." 29 Calling for a light, the Governor rushed in, and flung himself trembling at the feet of Paul and Silas. 30 Then he led them out, and said: "What must I do to be saved?" 31 "Believe in Jesus, our Lord," they replied, "and you shall be saved, you and your household too." 32 Then they spoke to him of God's Message, and to all his household as well. 33 And that very hour of the night he took them and washed their wounds, and he himself and every one belonging

to him were baptized without delay. 34 Afterwards he took them up to his house and set before them something to eat, rejoicing that he, with all his household, had come to believe in God.

35 In the morning the Magistrates sent the police with an order for the men to be discharged. 36 The Governor of the Jail told Paul of his instructions. "The Magistrates have sent an order for your discharge," he said, "so you had better leave the place at once and go quietly away." 37 But Paul's answer to them was: "They have flogged us in public without trial, though we are Roman citizens, and they have put us in prison, and now they are for sending us out secretly! No, indeed! Let them come and take us out themselves." 38 The police reported his words to the Magistrates, who, on hearing that Paul and Silas were Roman citizens, were alarmed, 39 And went to the prison, and did their best to conciliate them. Then they took them out, and begged them to leave the city. 40 When Paul and Silas left the prison, they went to Lydia's house, and, after they had seen the Brethren, and encouraged them, they left the place.

Chapter 17

1 After passing through Amphipolis and Apollonia, Paul and Silas came to Thessalonica. Here the Jews had a Synagogue; 2 And, following his usual custom, Paul joined them, and for three Sabbaths addressed them, drawing his arguments from the Scriptures. 3 He laid before them and explained that the Christ must undergo suffering and rise from the dead; and "It is this man," he declared, "who is the Christ—this Jesus about whom I am telling you." 4 Some of the people were convinced, and threw in their lot with Paul and Silas, as did also a large body of Greeks who were accustomed to join in the Jewish services, and a great number of women belonging to the leading families. 5 But the Jews, becoming jealous, engaged some worthless fellows from the streets, and, getting a mob together, kept the city in an uproar. They attacked Jason's house, with the intention of bringing Paul and Silas before the Popular Assembly; 6 And, not finding them there, they proceeded to drag Jason and some of the Brethren before the City Magistrates, shouting out: "These men, who have turned the world upside down, have now come here, 7 And have been harboured by Jason! They say that some one else is king—a man called Jesus!" 8 On hearing this, the people and the City Magistrates were much concerned; 9 And,

before letting them go, they took bail from Jason and the others.

10 That very night the Brethren sent Paul and Silas off to Beroea; and on reaching that place, they went to the Jewish Synagogue. 11 These Jews of Beroea were better disposed than those in Thessalonica, for they welcomed the Message with great readiness, and daily examined the Scriptures to see if what was said was true. 12 As a consequence, many of them became believers in Christ, besides a considerable number of Greek women of position, and of men also. 13 But, when the Jews of Thessalonica found out that God's Message had been delivered by Paul at Beroea, they came there too, exciting and disturbing the minds of the people. 14 Immediately upon that, the Brethren sent Paul off on his way to the sea coast, but both Silas and Timothy stayed behind in Beroea. 15 The friends who escorted Paul took him as far as Athens, and, after receiving a message for Silas and Timothy to join him as quickly as possible, they started on their return.

16 While Paul was waiting for them at Athens, his heart was stirred at seeing the whole city full of idols. 17 So he argued in the Synagogue with the Jews and with those who joined in their worship, as well as daily in the public Square with those who happened to be there. 18 Among others, some Epicurean and Stoic Philosophers joined issue with him. Some would ask "What is this prater wanting to make out?", while others would say "He seems to be a Preacher of foreign Deities." (This was because he was telling the Good News about Jesus and the Resurrection). 19 So they laid hold of him and took him to the Court of Areopagus. "May we hear," they asked, "what new teaching this is which you are giving? 20 For you are bringing some strange things to our notice, and we should like to know what they mean." 21 (All Athenians and the foreigners staying in the city found no time for anything else but telling, or listening to, the last new thing.)

22 So Paul took his stand in the middle of the Court, and said—"Men of Athens, on every hand I see signs of your being very devout. 23 For as I was going about, looking at your sacred shrines, I came upon an altar with this inscription—'To an Unknown God.' What, therefore, you worship in ignorance, that I am now proclaiming to you. 24 The God who made the world and all things that are in it—he, Lord as he is of Heaven and Earth, does not dwell in temples made by hands, 25 Nor yet do human hands minister to

his wants, as though he needed anything, since he himself gives, to all, life, and breath, and all things. 26 He made all races of the earth's surface—fixing a time for their rise and fall, and the limits of their settlements— 27 That they might search for God, if by any means they might feel their way to him and find him. And yet he is not really far from any one of us; 28 For in him we live and move and are. To use the words of some of your own poets—'His offspring, too, are we.' 29 Therefore, as the offspring of God, we must not think that the Deity has any resemblance to anything made of gold, or silver, or stone—a work of human art and imagination. 30 True, God looked with indulgence on the days of men's ignorance, but now he is announcing to every one everywhere the need for repentance, 31 Because he has fixed a day on which he intends to 'judge the world with justice,' by a man whom he has appointed—and of this he has given all men a pledge by raising this man from the dead."

32 On hearing of a resurrection of the dead, some began jeering, but others said that they would hear what he had to say about that another time. 33 And so Paul left the Court. 34 There were, however, some men who joined him, and became believers in Christ. Among them were Dionysius, a member of the Court of Areopagus, a woman named Damaris, and several others.

Chapter 18

1 On leaving Athens, Paul next went to Corinth. 2 There he met a Jew of the name of Aquila, a native of Pontus, who, with his wife Priscilla, had lately come from Italy, in consequence of the order which had been issued by the Emperor Claudius for all Jews to leave Rome. Paul paid them a visit, 3 And, since their trade was the same as his, he stayed and worked with them—their trade was tent-making. 4 Every Sabbath Paul gave addresses in the Synagogue, trying to convince both Jews and Greeks. 5 But, when Silas and Timothy had come down from Macedonia, Paul devoted himself entirely to delivering the Message, earnestly maintaining before the Jews that Jesus was the Christ. 6 However, as they set themselves against him and became abusive, Paul shook his clothes in protest and said to them: "Your blood be on your own heads. My conscience is clear. From this time forward I shall go to the Gentiles."

7 So he left, and went to the house of a certain Titius Justus, who had been accustomed to join in the worship of God, and whose

house was next door to the Synagogue. 8 Crispus, the President of the Synagogue, came to believe in the Lord, and so did all his household; and many of the Corinthians, as they listened to Paul, became believers in Christ and were baptized. 9 One night the Lord said to Paul, in a vision: "Have no fear, but continue to speak, and refuse to be silenced; 10 For I am with you, and no one shall do you harm, for I have many People in this city." 11 So he settled there for a year and a half, and taught God's Message among the people.

12 While Gallio was governor of Greece, the Jews made a combined attack on Paul, and brought him before the Governor's Bench, 13 Charging him with persuading people to worship God in a way forbidden by the Law. 14 Just as Paul was on the point of speaking, Gallio said to the Jews: "Jews, if this were a case of misdemeanour or some serious crime, there would be some reason for my listening patiently to you; 15 But, since it is a dispute about words, and names, and your own Law, you must see to it yourselves. I do not choose to be a judge in such matters." 16 Saying this, he drove them back from the Bench. 17 Then they all set upon Sosthenes, the President of the Synagogue, and beat him in front of the Bench, but Gallio did not trouble himself about any of these things.

18 Paul remained there some time after this, and then took leave of the Brethren, and sailed to Syria with Priscilla and Aquila, but not before his head had been shaved at Cenchreae, because he was under a vow. 19 They put into Ephesus, and there Paul, leaving his companions, went into the Synagogue and addressed the Jews. 20 When they asked him to prolong his stay, he declined, saying however, 21 As he took his leave, "I will come back again to you, please God," and then set sail from Ephesus. 22 On reaching Caesarea, he went up to Jerusalem and exchanged greetings with the Church, and then went down to Antioch. 23 After making some stay in Antioch, he set out on a tour through the Phrygian district of Galatia, strengthening the faith of all the disciples as he went.

24 Meanwhile there had come to Ephesus an Alexandrian Jew, named Apollos, an eloquent man, who was well-versed in the Scriptures. 25 He had been well-instructed in the Cause of the Lord, and with burning zeal he spoke of, and taught carefully, the facts about Jesus, though he knew of no baptism but John's. 26 This man began to speak out fearlessly in the Synagogue; and when Priscilla and Aquila heard him, they took him home and explained the Cause

of God to him more carefully still. [27] When he wanted to cross to Greece, the Brethren furthered his plans, and wrote to the disciples there to welcome him. On his arrival he proved of great assistance to those who had, through the loving-kindness of God, become believers in Christ, [28] For he vigorously confuted the Jews, publicly proving by the Scriptures that Jesus was the Christ.

Chapter 19

[1] While Apollos was at Corinth, Paul passed through the inland districts of Roman Asia, and went to Ephesus. There he found some disciples, of whom he asked: [2] "Did you, when you became believers in Christ, receive the Holy Spirit?" "No," they answered, "we did not even hear that there was a Holy Spirit." [3] "What then was your baptism?" Paul asked. [4] "John's baptism was a baptism upon repentance," rejoined Paul, "and John told the people (speaking of the 'One Coming; after him) that they should believe in him—that is in Jesus." [5] On hearing this, they were baptized into the faith of the Lord Jesus, [6] And, after Paul had placed his hands on them, the Holy Spirit descended upon them, and they began to speak with 'tongues' and to preach. [7] There were about twelve of them in all.

[8] Paul went to the Synagogue there, and for three months spoke out fearlessly, giving addresses and trying to convince his hearers, about the kingdom of God. [9] Some of them, however, hardened their hears and refused to believe, denouncing the Cause before the people. So Paul left them and withdrew his disciples, and gave daily addresses in the lecture-hall of Tyrannus. [10] This went on for two years, so that all who lived in Roman Asia, Jews and Greeks alike, heard the Lord's Message. [11] God did miracles of no ordinary kind by Paul's hands; [12] So that people would carry home to the sick handkerchiefs or aprons that had touched his body, and their diseases would leave them and the wicked spirits go out of them.

[13] An attempt was made by some itinerant Jews, who were exorcists, to use the Name of the Lord Jesus over those who had wicked spirits in them. "I adjure you," they would say, "by the Jesus, whom Paul preaches." [14] The seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish Chief Priest, were doing this; [15] But the wicked spirit answered them: "Jesus I acknowledge, and Paul I know, but you—who are you?" [16] Then the man, in whom this wicked spirit was, sprang upon them,

mastered both of them, and so completely overpowered them, that they fled out of the house, stripped of their clothes, and wounded. [17] This incident came to the knowledge of all the Jews and Greeks living at Ephesus; they were all awe-struck, and the Name of the Lord Jesus was held in the highest honour. [18] Many, too, of those who had become believers in Christ came with a full confession of their practices; [19] While a number of people, who had practiced magic, collected their books and burnt them publicly; and on reckoning up the price of these, they found it amounted to five thousand pounds. [20] So irresistibly did the Lord's Message spread and prevail.

[21] Sometime after these events Paul resolved to go through Macedonia and Greece, and then make his way to Jerusalem. "And after I have been there," he said, "I must visit Rome also." [22] So he sent to Macedonia two of his helpers, Timothy and Erastus, while he himself stayed for some time longer in Roman Asia. [23] Just about that time a great disturbance arose about the Cause. [24] A silversmith named Demetrius, who made silver models of the shrine of Artemis, and so gave a great deal of work to the artisans, [25] Got these men together, as well as the workmen engaged in similar occupations, and said: "Men, you know that our prosperity depends upon this work, [26] And you see and hear that not only at Ephesus, but in almost the whole of Roman Asia, this Paul has convinced and won over great numbers of people, by his assertion that those Gods which are made by hands are not Gods at all. [27] So that not only is this business of ours likely to fall into discredit, but there is the further danger that the Temple of the great Goddess Artemis will be thought nothing of, and that she herself will be deprived of her splendour—though all Roman Asia and the whole world worship her." [28] When they heard this, the men were greatly enraged, and began shouting—"Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!" [29] The commotion spread through the whole city, and the people rushed together into the amphitheatre, dragging with them Gaius and Aristarchus, two Macedonians who were Paul's travelling companions. [30] Paul wished to go into the amphitheatre and face the people, but the disciples would not let him, [31] While some of the chief religious officials of the province, who were friendly to him, sent repeated entreaties to him not to trust himself inside. [32] Meanwhile some were shouting one thing and some another, for the Assembly was all in confusion, most of those present not even knowing why they had met. [33] But some of

the crowd prompted Alexander, whom the Jews had pushed to the front, and he waved his hand to show that he wanted to speak in their defence to the people. 34 However, when they recognized him as a Jew, one cry broke from them all, and they continued shouting for two hours—"Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!" 35 When the Recorder had succeeded in quieting the crowd, he said: "Men of Ephesus, who is there, I ask you, who needs to be told that this city of Ephesus is the Warden of the Temple of the great Artemis, and of the statue which fell down from Zeus? 36 As these are undeniable facts, you ought to keep calm and do nothing rash; 37 For you have brought these men here, though they are neither robbers of Temples nor blasphemers of our Goddess. 38 If, however, Demetrius and the artisans who are acting with him have a charge to make against any one, there are Court Days and there are Magistrates; let both parties take legal proceedings. 39 But if you want anything more, it will have to be settled in the regular Assembly. 40 For I tell you that we are in danger of being proceeded against for to-day's riot, there being nothing to account for it; and in that case we shall be at a loss to give any reason for this disorderly gathering." 41 With these words he dismissed the Assembly.

Chapter 20

1 When the uproar had ceased, Paul sent for the disciples, and, with encouraging words, bade them goodbye, and started on his journey to Macedonia. 2 After going through those districts and speaking many encouraging words to the disciples, he went into Greece, where he stayed three months. 3 He was about to sail to Syria, when he learned that a plot had been laid against him by the Jews; so he decided to return by way of Macedonia. 4 He was accompanied by Sopater the son of Pyrrhus, of Beroea, Aristarchus and Secundus from Thessalonica, Gaius of Derbe, and Timothy, as well as by Tychicus and Trophimus of Roman Asia. 5 These men went to Troas and waited for us there; 6 While we ourselves sailed from Philippi after the Passover, and joined them five days later at Troas, where we stayed for a week.

7 On the first day of the week, when we had met for the Breaking of Bread, Paul, who was intending to leave the next day, began to address those who were present, and prolonged his address till midnight. 8 There were a good many lamps in the upstairs room,

where we had met; 9 And a young man named Eutychus, sitting at the window, was gradually overcome with great drowsiness, as Paul continued his address. At last, quite overpowered by his drowsiness, he fell from the third storey to the ground, and was picked up for dead. 10 But Paul went down, threw himself upon him, and put his arms round him. "Do not be alarmed," he said, "he is still alive." 11 Then he went upstairs; and, after breaking and partaking of the Bread, he talked with them at great length till daybreak, and then left. 12 Meanwhile they had taken the lad away alive, and were greatly comforted.

13 We started first, went on board ship, and sailed for Assos, intending to take Paul on board there. This was by his own arrangement, as he intended to go by land himself. 14 So, when he met us at Assos, we took him on board and went on to Mitylene. 15 The day after we had sailed from there, we arrived off Chios, touched at Samos the following day, and the next day reached Miletus; 16 For Paul had decided to sail past Ephesus, so as to avoid spending much time in Roman Asia. He was making haste to reach Jerusalem, if possible, by the Festival at the close of the Harvest.

17 From Miletus, however, he sent to Ephesus and invited the Officers of the Church to meet him; 18 And, when they came, he spoke to them as follows: "You know well the life that I always led among you from the very first day that I set foot in Roman Asia, 19 Serving the Lord, as I did, in all humility, amid the tears and trials which fell to my lot through the plots of the Jews. 20 I never shrank from telling you anything that could be helpful to you, or from teaching you both in public and in private. 21 I earnestly pointed both Jews and Greeks to the repentance that leads to God, and to faith in Jesus, our Lord. 22 And now, under spiritual constraint, I am here on my way to Jerusalem, not knowing what will happen to me there, 23 Except that in town after town the Holy Spirit plainly declares to me that imprisonment and troubles await me. 24 But I count my life of no value to myself, if only I may complete the course marked out for me, and the task that was allotted me by the Lord Jesus—which was to declare the Good News of the Love of God. 25 And now, I tell you, I know that none of you will ever see my face again—you among whom I have gone about proclaiming the Kingdom. 26 Therefore I declare to you this day, that my conscience is clear in regard to the fate of any of you, 27 For I have not shrunk

from announcing the whole purpose of God regarding you. [28] Be watchful over yourselves, and over the whole flock, of which the Holy Spirit has placed you in charge, to shepherd the Church of God, which he won for himself at the cost of his life. [29] I know that, after my departure, merciless wolves will get in among you, who will not spare the flock; [30] And from among yourselves, too, men will arise, who will teach perversions of truth, so as to draw away the disciples after them. [31] Therefore, be on your guard, remembering how for three years, night and day, I never ceased, even with tears, to warn each one of you. [32] And now I commend you to the Lord and to the Message of his Love—a Message which has the power to build up your characters, and to give you your place among all those who have become Christ's People. [33] I have never coveted any one's gold or silver or clothing. [34] You, yourselves, know that these hands of mine provided not only for my own wants, but for my companions also. [35] I left nothing undone to show you that, labouring as I laboured, you ought to help the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said himself—'It is more blessed to give than to receive.'"

[36] When Paul had finished speaking, he knelt down and prayed with them all. [37] All were in tears; and throwing their arms round Paul's neck, they kissed him again and again, [38] Grieving most of all over what he had said—that they would never see his face again. Then they escorted him to the ship.

Chapter 21

[1] When we had torn ourselves away and had set sail, we ran before the wind to Cos; the next day we came to Rhodes, and from there to Patara, [2] Where we found a ship crossing to Phoenicia, and went on board and set sail. [3] After sighting Cyprus and leaving it on the left, we sailed to Syria, and put into Tyre, where the ship was to discharge her cargo. [4] There we found the disciples and stayed a week with them. Speaking under the influence of the Spirit, they warned Paul not to set foot in Jerusalem. [5] However, when we had come to the end of our visit, we went on our way, all the disciples with their wives and children escorting us out of the city. We knelt down on the beach, and prayed, [6] And then said good-bye to one another; after which we went on board, and they returned home. [7] After we had made the run from Tyre, we landed at Ptolemais, and

exchanged greetings with the Brethren there, and spent a day with them.

[8] The next day we left, and reached Caesarea, where we went to the house of Philip, the Missionary, who was one of 'the Seven,' and stayed with him. [9] He had four unmarried daughters, who had the gift of prophecy. [10] During our visit, which lasted several days, a Prophet, named Agabus, came down from Judea. [11] He came to see us, and, taking Paul's girdle, and binding his own feet and hands with it, said: "This is what the Holy Spirit says—'The man to whom this girdle belongs will be bound like this at Jerusalem by the Jews, and they will give him up to the Gentiles'." [12] When we heard that, we and the people of the place began to entreat Paul not to go up to Jerusalem. [13] It was then that Paul made the reply: "Why are you weeping and breaking my heart like this? For my part, I am ready not only to be bound, but even to suffer death at Jerusalem for the Name of the Lord Jesus." [14] So, as he would not be persuaded, we said no more to him, only adding—"The Lord's will be done."

[15] At the end of our visit, we made our preparations, and started on our way up to Jerusalem. [16] Some of the disciples from Caesarea went with us, and brought Mnason with them, a Cypriot disciple of long standing, with whom we were to stay. [17] On our arrival at Jerusalem, the Brethren there gave us a hearty welcome; [18] And the next day Paul went with us to see James, and all the Officers of the Church were present. [19] After greeting them, Paul related in detail all that God had done among the Gentiles through his efforts; [20] And, when they had heard it, they began praising God, and said to Paul: "You see, Brother, that the Jews who have become believers in Christ may be numbered by tens of thousands, and they are all naturally earnest in upholding the Jewish Law. [21] Now they have heard it said about you, that you teach all Jews in foreign countries to forsake Moses, for you tell them not to circumcise their children or even to observe Jewish customs. [22] Well now, as they are certain to hear of your arrival, do what we are going to suggest. [23] We have four men here, who have of their own accord put themselves under a vow. [24] Join these men, share their purification, and bear their expenses, so that they may shave their heads; and then all will see that there is no truth in what they have been told about you, but that, on the contrary, you yourself rule your life in obedience to the Jewish Law. [25] As to the Gentiles who have become believers

in Christ, we have sent our decision that they should avoid food offered to idols, and blood, and the flesh of strangled animals, and impurity." [26] On this, Paul joined the men, and the next day shared their purification, and went into the Temple, and gave notice of the expiration of the period of purification when the usual offering should have been made on behalf of each of them.

[27] But, just as the seven days were drawing to a close, the Jews from Roman Asia caught sight of Paul in the Temple, and caused great excitement among all the people present, by seizing Paul and shouting: [28] "Men of Israel! help! This is the man who teaches every one everywhere against our People, our Law, and this Place; and, what is more, he has actually brought Greeks into the Temple and defiled this sacred place." [29] (For they had previously seen Trophimus the Ephesian in Paul's company in the city, and were under the belief that Paul had taken him into the Temple.) [30] The whole city was stirred, and the people quickly collected, seized Paul, and dragged him out of the Temple, when the doors were immediately shut. [31] They were bent upon killing him, when it was reported to the Officer commanding the garrison, that all Jerusalem was in commotion. [32] He instantly got together some officers and men, and charged down upon the crowd, who, when they saw the Commanding Officer and his men, stopped beating Paul. [33] Then he went up to Paul, arrested him, ordered him to be doubly chained, and proceeded to inquire who he was, and what he had been doing. [34] Some of the crowd said one thing, and some another; and, as he could get no definite reply on account of the uproar, he ordered Paul to be taken into the barracks. [35] When Paul reached the steps, he was actually being carried by the soldiers, owing to the violence of the mob; [36] For the people were following in a mass, shouting out: "Kill him!" [37] Just as he was about to be taken into the Fort, Paul said to the Commanding Officer: "May I speak to you?" "Do you know Greek?" asked the Commanding Officer. [38] "Are not you, then, the Egyptian who some time ago raised an insurrection and led the four thousand Bandits out into the Wilderness?" [39] "No," said Paul, "I am a Jew of Tarsus in Cilicia, a citizen of a city of some note; and I beg you to give me permission to speak to the people." [40] The Commanding Officer gave his permission, and Paul, standing on the steps, made signs with his hand to the people, and, when comparative silence had been obtained, he spoke to them in

Hebrew, as follows:

Chapter 22

[1] "Brothers and Father, listen to the defence which I am about to make." [2] When they heard that he was speaking to them in Hebrew, they were still more quiet; and Paul went on:

[3] "I am a Jew, a native of Tarsus in Cilicia, but I was brought up in this city under the teaching of Gamaliel, and educated in accordance with the strict system of our ancestral Law. I was as zealous in God's service as any of you who are here to-day. [4] In my persecution of this Cause I did not stop even at the taking of life. I put in chains, and imprisoned, men and women alike— [5] And to that the High Priest himself and all the Council can testify. For I had letters of introduction from them to our fellow Jews at Damascus, and I was on my way to that place, to bring those whom I might find there prisoners to Jerusalem for punishment. [6] While I was still on my way, just as I was getting close to Damascus, about mid-day, suddenly there flashed from the heavens a great light all round me. [7] I fell to the ground, and heard a voice saying to me 'Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?' [8] 'Who are you, Lord?' I replied. Then the voice said 'I am Jesus of Nazareth whom you are persecuting.' [9] The men with me saw the light, but did not hear the speaker's voice. [10] Then I said 'What am I to do, Lord?' 'Get up and go into Damascus,' The Lord said to me, 'and there you shall be told all that you have been appointed to do.' [11] In consequence of that dazzling light I could not see, but my companions held me by the hand, till I reached Damascus. [12] There a man named Ananias, a strict observer of our Law, well spoken of by all the Jewish inhabitants, came to see me. [13] Standing close to me, he said 'Saul, my Brother, recover your sight.' And then and there I recovered my sight and looked up at him. [14] Then he said 'The God of our ancestors has appointed you to learn his will, and to see the Righteous One, and to hear words from his lips; [15] For you shall be a witness for him to all the world of what you have just seen and heard. [16] And now why wait any longer: Be baptized at once, wash away your sins, and invoke his Name. [17] After my return to Jerusalem, while I was praying one day in the Temple, I fell into a trance, [18] And saw Jesus saying to me 'Make haste and leave Jerusalem at once, because they will not accept your testimony about me.' [19] 'Lord,' I answered, 'these people know

that I used to imprison and scourge, in Synagogue after Synagogue, those who believed in you; 20 And, when the blood of your martyr, Stephen, was being shed, I was myself standing by, approving of his death, and took charge of the clothes of those who were murdering him. 21 But Jesus said to me 'Go; for I will send you to the Gentiles far away'."

22 Up to this point the people had been listening to Paul, but at these words they called out: "Kill him! A fellow like this ought not to have been allowed to live!" 23 As they were shouting, tearing off their clothes, and throwing dust in the air, 24 The Commanding Officer ordered Paul to be taken into the Fort, and directed that he should be examined under the lash, that he might find out the reason for their outcry against him. 25 But just as they had tied him up to be scourged, Paul said to the Captain standing near: "Is it legal for you to scourge a Roman citizen, unconvicted?" 26 On hearing this, the Captain went and reported it to the Commanding Officer. "Do you know what you are doing?" he said. "This man is a Roman citizen." 27 So the Commanding Officer went up to Paul and said: "Tell me, are you a Roman citizen?" "Yes," replied Paul. 28 "I had to pay a heavy price for my position as citizen," said the Officer. "I am one by birth," rejoined Paul. 29 The men who were to have examined Paul immediately drew back, and the Officer, finding that Paul was a Roman citizen, was alarmed at having put him in chains. 30 On the next day the Commanding Officer, wishing to find out the real reason why Paul was denounced by the Jews, had his chains taken off, and directed the Chief Priests and the whole of the High Council to assemble, and then took Paul down and brought him before them.

Chapter 23

1 Paul fixed his eyes upon the Council, and began: "Brothers, for my part, I have always ordered my life before God, with a clear conscience, up to this very day." 2 At this, the High Priest Ananias ordered the men standing near to strike him on the mouth; 3 Whereupon Paul turned to him and said: "God will strike you, you white-washed wall! Are you sitting there to try me in accordance with law, and yet, in defiance of law, order me to be struck?" 4 The people standing near said to Paul: "Do you know that you are insulting God's High Priest?" 5 "I did not know, Brothers, that it was

the High Priest," said Paul, "for Scripture says—'Of the Ruler of thy People thou shalt speak no ill'."

6 Noticing that some of those present were Sadducees and others Pharisees, Paul called out in the Council: "Brothers, I am a Pharisee and a son of Pharisees. It is on the question of hope for the dead and of their resurrection that I am on my trial." 7 As soon as he said this, a dispute arose between the Pharisees and the Sadducees; and there was a sharp division of opinion among those present. 8 (For Sadducees say there is no such thing as a resurrection, and that there is neither angel nor spirit, while Pharisees believe in both.) 9 So a great uproar ensued, and some of the Teaches of the Law belonging to the Pharisees' party stood up and hotly protested: "We find nothing whatever wrong in this man. Suppose a spirit did speak to him, or an angel—" 10 The dispute was becoming so violent, that the Commanding Officer, fearing that Paul would be torn in pieces between them, ordered the Guard to go down and rescue him from them, and take him into the Fort. 11 That night the Lord came and stood by Paul, and said: "Courage! You have borne witness for me in Jerusalem and you must bear witness in Rome also."

12 In the morning the Jews combined together, and took an oath that they would not eat or drink till they had killed Paul. 13 There were more than forty in the plot; 14 And they went to the Chief Priests and the Councillors, and said: "We have taken a solemn oath not to touch food till we have killed Paul. 15 So we want you now, with the consent of the Council, to suggest to the Commanding Officer that he should bring Paul down before you, as though you intended to go more fully into his case; but, before he comes here, we will be ready to make away with him." 16 However, the son of Paul's sister, hearing of the plot, went to the Fort, and on being admitted, told Paul about it. 17 Paul called one of the Captains of the garrison and asked him to take the lad to the Commanding Officer, as he had something to tell him. 18 The Captain went with the lad to the Commanding Officer, and said: "The prisoner Paul called me and asked me to bring this lad to you, as he has something to tell you." 19 The Commanding Officer took the lad by the hand, and, stepping aside, asked what it was he had to tell him. 20 "The Jews have agreed," answered the lad, "to ask you to bring Paul down before the Council to-morrow, on the plea of your making further inquiry into his case. 21 But do not let them persuade you, for more

than forty of them are lying in wait for him, who have taken an oath that they will not eat or drink, till they have made away with him; and they are at this very moment in readiness, counting upon your promise." [22] The Commanding Officer then dismissed the lad, cautioning him not to mention to anybody that he had given him that information. [23] Then he called two Captains, and ordered them to have two hundred men ready to go to Caesarea, as well as seventy troopers and two hundred lancers, by nine o'clock that night, [24] And to have horses ready for Paul to ride, so that they might take him safely to Felix, the Governor. [25] To him he wrote a letter, somewhat as follows— [26] 'Claudius Lysias sends his compliments to His Excellency Felix the Governor. [27] The man whom I send with this had been seized by the Jews, and was on the point of being killed by them, when I came upon them with the force under my command, and rescued him, as I learned that he was a Roman citizen. [28] Wishing to ascertain exactly the ground of the charges they made against him, I brought him before their Council, [29] When I found that their charges were connected with questions of their own Law, and that there was nothing alleged involving either death or imprisonment. [30] Having, however, information of a plot against the man, which was about to be put into execution, I am sending him to you at once, and I have also directed his accusers to prosecute him before you.' [31] The soldiers, in accordance with their orders, took charge of Paul and conducted him by night to Antipatris; [32] And on the next day, leaving the troopers to go on with him, they returned to the Fort. [33] On arriving at Caesarea, the troopers delivered the letter to the Governor, and brought Paul before him. [34] As soon as Felix had read the letter, he enquired to what province Paul belonged, and, learning that he came from Cilicia, he said: [35] "I will hear all you have to say as soon as your accusers have arrived." And he ordered Paul to be kept under guard in Herod's Government House.

Chapter 24

[1] Five days afterwards the High Priest Ananias came down with some of the Councillors and a barrister named Tertullus. They laid an information with the Governor against Paul; [2] And, when the hearing came on, Tertullus began his speech for the prosecution. [3] "We owe it to your Excellency," he said, "that we are enjoying profound peace, and we owe it to your foresight that this nation is

constantly securing reforms—advantages which we very gratefully accept at all times and places. [4] But—not to be tedious—I beg you, with your accustomed fairness, to listen to a brief statement of our case. [5] We have found this man a public pest; he is one who stirs up disputes among the Jews all the world over, and is a ringleader of the Nazarene heretics. [6] He even attempted to desecrate the Temple itself, but we caught him; [7] But the chief captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands. [8] And you will be able, by examining him on all these points, to satisfy yourself as to the charges which we are bringing against him." [9] The Jews also joined in the attack and bore out his statements.

[10] On a sign from the Governor, Paul made this reply: "Knowing, as I do, for how many years you have acted as Judge to this nation, it is with confidence that I undertake my own defence. [11] For you can easily ascertain that it is not more than twelve days ago that I went up to worship at Jerusalem, [12] Where my prosecutors never found me holding discussions with any one, or causing a crowd to collect—either in the Temple, or in the Synagogues, or about the city; [13] And they cannot establish the charges which they are now making against me. [14] This, however, I do acknowledge to you, that it is as a believer in the Cause which they call heretical, that I worship the God of my ancestors. At the same time, I believe everything that is in accordance with the Law and that is written in the prophets; [15] And I have a hope that rests in God—a hope which they also cherish—that there will one day be a resurrection of good and bad alike. [16] This being so, I strive at all times to keep my conscience clear before both God and man. [17] After some years' absence I had come to bring charitable gifts to my nation, and to make offerings; [18] And it was while engaged in this that they found me in the Temple, after completing a period of purification, but not with any crowd or disorder. [19] There were, however, some Jews from Roman Asia who ought to have been here before you, and to have made any charge that they may have against me— [20] Or else let my opponents here say what they found wrong in me when I was before the Council, [21] Except as to the one sentence that I shouted out as I stood among them—'It is about the resurrection of the dead that I am on my trial before you to-day'."

[22] Felix, however, adjourned the case—though he had a fairly accurate knowledge of all that concerned the Cause—with

the promise: "When Lysias, the commanding Officer, comes down, I will give my decision in your case." [23] So he gave orders to the Captain in charge of Paul to keep him in custody, but to relax the regulations, and not to prevent any of his personal friends from attending to his wants. [24] Some days later Felix came with his wife Drusilla, who was herself a Jewess, and, sending for Paul, listened to what he had to say about faith in Christ Jesus. [25] But, while Paul was speaking at length about righteousness, self-control, and the coming judgement, Felix became terrified, and interrupted him—"Go for the present, but, when I find an opportunity, I will send for you again." [26] He was hoping, too, for a bribe from Paul, and so he used to send for him frequently and talk with him. [27] But, after the lapse of two years, Felix was succeeded by Porcius Festus; and, wishing to gain popularity with the Jews, he left Paul a prisoner.

Chapter 25

[1] Three days after Festus had entered upon his province, he left Caesarea and went up to Jerusalem. [2] There the Chief Priests and the leading men among the Jews laid an information before him against Paul, [3] And asked a favour of him, to Paul's injury—to have Paul brought to Jerusalem. All the while they were plotting to make away with him on the road. [4] But Festus answered that Paul was in prison at Caesarea, and that he himself would be leaving for that place shortly. [5] "So let the influential men among you," he said, "go down with me, and if there is anything amiss in the man, charge him formally with it." [6] After staying among them some eight or ten days, Festus went down to Caesarea. The next day he took his seat on the Bench, and ordered Paul to be brought before him. [7] On Paul's appearance, the Jews who had come down from Jerusalem surrounded him, and made many serious charges, which they failed to establish. [8] Paul's answer to the charge was—'I have not committed any offence against the Jewish Law, or the Temple, or the Emperor.' [9] But, as Festus wished to gain popularity with the Jews, he interrupted Paul with the question: "Are you willing to go up to Jerusalem and be tried on these charges before me there?" [10] "No," replied Paul, "I am standing at the Emperor's Bar, where I ought to be tried. I have not wronged the Jews, as you yourself are well aware. [11] If, however, I am breaking the law and have committed any offence deserving death, I do not ask to escape the penalty; but,

if there is nothing in the accusations of these people, no one has the power to give me up to them. I appeal to the Emperor." [12] Upon that, Festus, after conferring with his Council, answered: "You have appealed to the Emperor; to the Emperor you shall go."

[13] Some days later King Agrippa and Bernice came down to Caesarea, and paid a visit of congratulation to Festus; [14] And, as they were staying there for several days, Festus laid Paul's case before the King. "There is a man here," he said, "left a prisoner by Felix, [15] About whom, when I came to Jerusalem, the Jewish Chief Priest and the Councillors laid an information, demanding judgement against him. [16] My answer to them was, that it was not the practice of Romans to give up any man to his accusers till the accused had met them face to face, and had also had an opportunity of answering the charges brought against him. [17] So they met here, and without loss of time I took my seat on the Bench the very next day, and ordered the man to be brought before me. [18] But, when his accusers came forward, they brought no charge of wrong-doing such as I had expected; [19] But I found that there were certain questions in dispute between them about their own religion, and about some dead man called Jesus, whom Paul declared to be alive. [20] And, as I was at a loss how to enquire into questions of this kind, I asked Paul if he were willing to go up to Jerusalem, and there be put upon his trial. [21] Paul, however, appealed to have his case reserved for the consideration of his August Majesty, so I ordered him to be detained in custody, until I could send him to the Emperor." [22] "I should like to hear this man myself," Agrippa said to Festus. "You shall hear him to-morrow," Festus answered. [23] So the next day, when Agrippa and Bernice had come in full state and had entered the Audience Chamber, with the superior officers and the principal people of the city, by the order of Festus Paul was brought before them. [24] Then Festus said: "King Agrippa, and all here present, you see before you the man about whom the whole Jewish people have applied to me, both at Jerusalem and here, loudly asserting that he ought not to be allowed to live. [25] I found, however, that he had not done anything deserving death; so, as he had himself appealed to his August Majesty, I decided to send him. [26] But I have nothing definite to write about him to my Imperial Master; and for that reason I have brought him before you all, and especially before you, King Agrippa, that, after examining him, I may have something to

write. 27 For it seems to me absurd to send a prisoner, without at the
same time stating the charges made against him."

Chapter 26

1 Turning to Paul, Agrippa said: "You are at liberty to speak for
yourself." Then Paul stretched out his hand and began his defence.
2 "I have been congratulating myself, King Agrippa," he said, "that
it is before you that I have to make my defence to-day, with regard
to all the charges brought against me by Jews, 3 Especially as you
are so well-versed in all the customs and questions of the Jewish
world. I beg you therefore to give me a patient hearing. 4 My life,
then, from youth upwards, was passed, from the very first, among
my own nation, and in Jerusalem, and is within the knowledge
of all Jews; 5 And they have always known—if they choose to give
evidence—that, in accordance with the very strictest form of our
religion, I lived a true Pharisee. 6 Even now, it is because of my hope
in the promise given by God to our ancestors that I stand here on
my trial— 7 A promise which our Twelve Tribes, by earnest service
night and day, hope to see fulfilled. It is for this hope, your Majesty,
that I am accused—and by Jews themselves! 8 Why do you all hold
it incredible that God should raise the dead? 9 I myself, it is true,
once thought it my duty to oppose in every way the Name of Jesus
of Nazareth; 10 And I actually did so at Jerusalem. Acting on the
authority of the Chief Priests, I myself threw many of the People of
Christ into prison, and, when it was proposed to put them to death,
I gave my vote for it. 11 Time after time, in every Synagogue, I tried
by punishments to force them to blaspheme. So frantic was I against
them, that I pursued them even to towns beyond our borders.

12 It was while I was travelling to Damascus on an errand
of this kind, entrusted with full powers by the Chief Priests, 13 That
at mid-day, your Majesty, I saw right in my path, coming from the
heavens, a light brighter than the glare of the sun, which shone all
round me and those travelling with me. 14 We all fell to the ground,
and then I heard a voice saying to me in Hebrew—'Saul, Saul,
why are you persecuting me? By kicking against the goad you are
punishing yourself.' 15 'Who are you, Lord?' I asked. And the Lord
said: 'I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting; 16 But get up and stand
upright; for I have appeared to you in order to appoint you a servant
and a witness of those revelations of me which you have already

had, and of those in which I shall yet appear to you, 17 Since I am
choosing you out from your own people and from the Gentiles, to
whom I now send you, 18 To open their eyes, and to turn them from
darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God; so that they
may receive pardon for their sins, and a place among those who have
become God's People, by faith in me.' 19 After that, King Agrippa, I
did not fail to obey the heavenly vision; 20 On the contrary, first to
those at Damascus and Jerusalem, and then through the whole of
Judea, and to the Gentiles as well, I began to preach repentance and
conversion to God, and a life befitting that repentance. 21 This is why
the Jews seized me in the Temple, and made attempts upon my life.
22 However I have received help from God to this very day, and so
stand here, and bear my testimony to high and low alike—without
adding a word to what the Prophets, as well as Moses, declared
should happen— 23 That the Christ must suffer, and that, by rising
from the dead, he was destined to be the first to bring news of Light,
not only to our nation, but also to the Gentiles."

24 While Paul was making this defence, Festus called out
loudly: "You are mad, Paul; your great learning is driving you mad."
25 "I am not mad, your Excellency," he replied; "on the contrary,
the statements that I am making are true and sober. 26 Indeed, the
King knows about these matters, so I speak before him without
constraint. I am sure that there is nothing whatever of what I have
been telling him that has escaped his attention; for all this has not
been done in a corner. 27 King Agrippa, do you believe the Prophets?
I know you do." 28 But Agrippa said to Paul: "You are soon trying to
make a Christian of me!" 29 "Whether it is soon or late," answered
Paul, "I would to God that not only you, but all who are listening to
me, might to-day become just what I am myself—except for these
chains!" 30 Then the King rose, with the Governor and Bernice
and those who had been sitting with them, 31 And, after retiring,
discussed the case among themselves. "There is nothing," they said,
"deserving death or imprisonment in this man's conduct"; 32 And,
speaking to Festus, Agrippa added: "The man might have been
discharged, if he had not appealed to the Emperor."

Chapter 27

1 As it was decided that we were to sail to Italy, Paul and
some other prisoners were put in charge of a Captain of the

Augustan Guard, named Julius. 2 We went on board a ship from
Adramyttium, which was on the point of sailing to the ports along
the coast of Roman Asia, and put to sea. Aristarchus, a Macedonian
from Thessalonica, went with us. 3 The next day we put in to Sidon,
where Julius treated Paul in a friendly manner, and allowed him
to go to see his friends and receive their hospitality. 4 Putting to
sea again, we sailed under the lee of Cyprus, because the wind was
against us; 5 And, after crossing the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia,
we reached Myra in Lycia. 6 There the Roman Officer found an
Alexandrian ship on her way to Italy, and put us on board of her. 7
For several days our progress was slow, and it was only with difficulty
that we arrived off Cnidus. As the wind was still unfavourable when
we came off Cape Salmone, we sailed under the lee of Crete, 8 And
with difficulty, by keeping close in shore, we reached a place called
'Fair Havens,' near which was the town of Lasea. 9 This had taken a
considerable time, and sailing was already dangerous, for the Fast
was already over; and so Paul gave this warning. 10 "My friends," he
said, "I see that this voyage will be attended with injury and much
damage, not only to the cargo and the ship, but to our own lives
also." 11 The Roman Officer, however, was more influenced by the
captain and the owner than by what was said by Paul.

12 And, as the harbour was not a suitable one to winter in,
the majority were in favour of continuing the voyage, in hope of
being able to reach Phoenix, and winter there. Phoenix was a Cretan
harbour, open to the north-east and south-east. 13 So, when a light
wind sprang up from the south, thinking that they had found their
opportunity, they weighed anchor and kept along the coast of Crete,
close in shore. 14 But shortly afterwards a hurricane came down on
us off the land—a north-easter, as it is called. 15 The ship was caught
by it and was unable to keep her head to the wind, so we had to give
way and let her drive before it. 16 Running under the lee of a small
island called Cauda, we only just managed to secure the ship's boat,
17 And, after hoisting it on board, the men frapped the ship. But,
afraid of being driven on to the Syrtis Sands, they lowered the yard,
and then drifted. 18 So violently were we tossed about by the storm,
that the next day they began throwing the cargo overboard, 19 And,
on the following day, threw out the ship's tackle with their own
hands. 20 As neither sun nor stars were visible for several days, and,
as the gale still continued severe, all hope of our being saved was at

last abandoned.

21 It was then, when they had gone a long time without food,
that Paul came forward, and said: "My friends, you should have
listened to me, and not have sailed from Crete and so incurred this
injury and damage. 22 Yet, even as things are, I urge you not to lose
courage, for there will not be a single life lost among you—only the
ship. 23 For last night an angel of the God to whom I belong, and
whom I serve, stood by me, and said— 24 'Have no fear, Paul; you
must appear before the Emperor, and God himself has given you
the lives of all your fellow-voyagers.' 25 Therefore, courage, my
friends! for I believe God, that everything will happen exactly as
I have been told. 26 We shall, however, have to be driven on some
island." 27 It was now the fourteenth night of the storm, and we
were drifting about in the Adriatic Sea, when, about midnight, the
sailors began to suspect that they were drawing near land. 28 So they
took soundings, and found twenty fathoms of water. After waiting a
little, they took soundings again, and found fifteen fathoms. 29 Then,
as they were afraid of our being driven upon some rocky coast,
they let go four anchors from the stern, and longed for daylight.
30 The sailors wanted to leave the ship, and had lowered the boat,
on pretence of running out anchors from the bows, 31 When Paul
said to the Roman Officer and his men: "Unless the sailors remain
on board, you cannot be saved." 32 Upon that the soldiers cut the
ropes which held the boat, and let her drift away. 33 In the interval
before daybreak Paul kept urging them all to take something to eat.
"It is a fortnight to-day," he said, "that, owing to your anxiety, you
have gone without food, taking nothing. 34 So I urge you to take
something to eat; your safety depends upon it, for not one of you
will lose even a hair of his head." 35 With these words he took some
bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving to God before them all,
broke it in pieces, and began to eat; 36 And the men all felt cheered
and had something to eat themselves. 37 There were about seventy-
six of us on board, all told. 38 After satisfying their hunger, they
further lightened the ship by throwing the grain into the sea. 39
When daylight came, they could not make out what land it was,
but, observing a creek in which there was a beach, they consulted as
to whether they could run the ship safely into it. 40 Then they cast
off, and abandoned the anchors, and at the same time unlashed the
gear of the steering oars, hoisted the foresail to the wind, and made

for the beach. 41 They got, however, into a kind of channel, and there
ran the ship aground. The bows stuck fast and could not be moved,
while the stern began breaking up under the strain. 42 The advice of
the soldiers was that the prisoners should be killed, for fear that any
of them should swim away and make their escape. 43 But the Roman
Officer, anxious to save Paul, prevented their carrying out their
intention, and ordered that those who could swim should be the
first to jump into the sea and try to reach the shore; 44 And that the
rest should follow, some on planks, and others on different pieces
of the ship. In these various ways every one managed to get safely
ashore.

Chapter 28

1 When we were all safe, we found that the island was called
Malta. 2 The natives showed us marked kindness, for they lit a fire
and took us all under shelter, because it had come on to rain and
was cold. 3 Paul had gathered a quantity of dry sticks and laid them
on the fire, when a viper, driven out by the heat, fastened on his
hand. 4 When the natives saw the creature hanging from his hand,
they said to one another: "Evidently this man is a murderer, for
though he has been saved from the sea, Justice has not allowed him
to live." 5 However, Paul shook the creature off into the fire and took
no harm. 6 The natives were expecting inflammation to set in, or
that he would suddenly fall dead; but, after waiting for a long time,
and seeing that there was nothing amiss with him, they changed
their minds and said that he was a God. 7 In that neighbourhood
there was an estate belonging to the Governor of the island, whose
name was Publius. He took us up to his house, and for three days
entertained us most courteously. 8 It happened that the father of
Publius was lying ill of fever and dysentery. So Paul went to see
him; and, after praying, he placed his hands on him and cured him.
9 After this, all the people in the island who had any illness came to
Paul, and were cured. 10 They also presented us with many gifts, and
when we set sail they put supplies of necessaries on board.

11 After three months, we set sail in a ship that had wintered
in the island. She was an Alexandrian vessel, and had the Twin Sons
of Zeus for her figure-head. 12 We put in at Syracuse and stayed
there three days, 13 And from there we worked to windward and so
got to Rhegium. A day later a south wind sprang up and took us to

Puteoli in two days. 14 There we found some of the Brethren, and
were urged to stay a week with them; after which we went on to
Rome. 15 The Brethren there had heard about us, and came out as
far as the Market of Appius and the Three Taverns to meet us. At
sight of them Paul thanked God and was much cheered. 16 On our
reaching Rome, Paul was allowed to live by himself, except for the
soldier who was in charge of him.

17 Three days after our arrival, Paul invited the leading Jews
to meet him; and, when they came, he spoke to them as follows:
"Brothers, although I had done nothing hostile to the interests
of our nation or to our ancestral customs, yet I was sent from
Jerusalem as a prisoner, and handed over to the Romans. 18 The
Romans, when they had examined me, were ready to release me,
because there was nothing in my conduct deserving death. 19 But,
as the Jews opposed my release, I was compelled to appeal to the
Emperor—not, indeed, that I had any charge to make against my
own nation. 20 This, then, is my reason for urging you to come to see
me and talk with me; because it is for the sake of the Hope of Israel
that I am here in chains." 21 "We," was their reply, "have not had any
letter about you from Judea, nor have any of our fellow-Jews come
and reported or said anything bad about you. 22 But we shall be glad
to hear from you what your views are, for, with regard to this sect,
we are well aware that it is spoken against on all sides."

23 They then fixed a day with him, and came to the
place where he was staying, in even larger numbers, when Paul
proceeded to lay the subject before them. He bore his testimony to
the Kingdom of God, and tried to convince them about Jesus, by
arguments drawn from the Law of Moses and from the Prophets—
speaking from morning till evening. 24 Some were inclined to
accept what he said; others, however, rejected it. 25 So, as they
disagreed among themselves, they began to disperse, Paul adding
only—"True, indeed, was the declaration made by the Holy Spirit,
through the Prophet Isaiah to your ancestors— 26 'Go to this nation
and say—"You will hear with your ears without ever understanding,
and, though you have eyes, you will see without ever perceiving."
27 For the mind of this nation has grown dense, and their ears are
dull of hearing, their eyes also have they closed; lest some day they
should see with their eyes, and with their ears they should hear,
and in their mind they should understand, and should turn—and I

should heal them.' [28] Understand, then, that this Salvation of God was sent for the Gentiles; and they will listen." [29] And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

[30] For two whole years Paul stayed in a house which he rented for himself, welcoming all who came to see him, [31] Proclaiming the Kingdom of God, and teaching about the Lord Jesus Christ, with perfect fearlessness, unmolested.

Paul's Letter to the Romans

Chapter 1

[1] To all in Rome who are dear to God and have been called to become Christ's People, From Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, who has been called to become an Apostle, and has been set apart to tell God's Good News. [2] This Good News God promised long ago through his Prophets in the sacred Scriptures, [3] Concerning his Son, Jesus Christ, our Lord; who, as to his human nature, was descended from David, [4] But, as to the spirit of holiness within him, was miraculously designated Son of God by his resurrection from the dead. [5] Through him we received the gift of the Apostolic office, to win submission to the Faith among all nations for the glory of his Name. [6] And among these nations are you-you who have been called to belong to Jesus Christ. [7] May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace.

[8] First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ about you all, because the report of your faith is spreading throughout the world. [9] God, to whom I offer the worship of my soul as I tell the Goodness of his Son, is my witness how constantly I mention you when I pray, [10] Asking that, if he be willing, I may some day at last find the way open to visit you. [11] For I long to see you, in order to impart to you some spiritual gift and so give you fresh strength— [12] Or rather that both you and I may find encouragement in each other's faith. [13] I want you to know, Brothers, that I have many times intended coming to see you-but until now I have been prevented-that I might find among you some fruit of my labours, as I have already among the other nations. [14] I have a duty to both the Greek and the Barbarian, to both the cultured and the ignorant. [15] And so, for my part, I am ready to tell the Good News to you also who are in Rome.

[16] For I am not ashamed of the Good News; it is the power of God which brings Salvation to every one who believes in Christ, to the Jew first, but also to the Greek. [17] For in it there is a revelation of the Divine Righteousness resulting from faith and leading on to faith; as Scripture says—'Through faith the righteous man shall find Life.' [18] So, too, there is a revelation from Heaven of the Divine Wrath against every form of ungodliness and wickedness on the

part of those men who, by their wicked lives, are stifling the Truth.
19 This is so, because what can be known about God is plain
to them; for God himself has made it plain. 20 For ever since the
creation of the universe God's invisible attributes-his everlasting
power and divinity-are to be seen and studied in his works, so that
men have no excuse; 21 Because, although they learned to know God,
yet they did not offer him as God either praise or thanksgiving. Their
speculations about him proved futile, and their undiscerning minds
were darkened. 22 Professing to be wise, they showed themselves
fools; 23 And they transformed the Glory of the immortal God into
the likeness of mortal man, and of birds, and beasts, and reptiles.
24 Therefore God abandoned them to impurity, letting them follow
the cravings of their hearts, till they dishonoured their own bodies;
25 For they had substituted a lie for the truth about God, and had
reverenced and worshiped created things more than the Creator,
who is to be praised for ever. Amen. 26 That, I say, is why God
abandoned them to degrading passions. Even the women among
them perverted the natural use of their bodies to the unnatural; 27
While the men, disregarding that for which women were intended
by nature, were consumed with passion for one another. Men
indulged in vile practices with men, and incurred in their own
persons the inevitable penalty for their perverseness. 28 Then, as
they would not keep God before their minds, God abandoned them
to depraved thoughts, so that they did all kinds of shameful things.
29 They revelled in every form of wickedness, evil, greed, vice. Their
lives were full of envy, murder, quarrelling, treachery, malice. 30
They became back-biters, slanderers, impious, insolent, boastful.
They devised new sins. They disobeyed their parents. 31 They were
undiscerning, untrustworthy, without natural affection or pity. 32
Well aware of God's decree, that those who do such things deserve
to die, not only are they guilty of them themselves, but they even
applaud those who do them.

Chapter 2

1 Therefore you have nothing to say in your own defence,
whoever you are who set yourself up as a judge. In judging others you
condemn yourself, for you who set yourself up as a judge do the very
same things. 2 And we know that God's judgment falls unerringly
upon those who do them. 3 You who judge those that do such things

and yet are yourself guilty of them-do you suppose that you of all
men will escape God's judgement? 4 Or do you think lightly of his
abundant kindness, patience, and forbearance, not realizing that his
kindness is meant to lead you to repentance? 5 Hard-hearted and
impenitent as you are, you are storing up for yourself Wrath on the
'Day of Wrath,' when God's justice as a judge will be revealed; 6 For
'he will give to every man what his actions deserve.' 7 To those who,
by perseverance in doing good, aim at glory, honour, and all that is
imperishable, he will give Immortal Life; 8 While as to those who
are factious, and disobedient to Truth but obedient to Evil, wrath
and anger, distress and despair, 9 Will fall upon every human being
who persists in wrong-doing—upon the Jew first, but also upon the
Greek. 10 But there will be glory, honour, and peace for every one
who does right-for the Jew first, but also for the Greek, 11 Since God
shows no partiality. 12 All who, when they sin, are without Law will
also perish without Law; while all who, when they sin, are under
Law, will be judged as being under Law. 13 It is not those who hear
the words of a Law that are righteous before God, but it is those who
obey it that will be pronounced righteous. 14 When Gentiles, who
have no Law, do instinctively what the Law requires, they, though
they have no Law, are a Law to themselves; 15 For they show the
demands of the Law written upon their hearts; their consciences
corroborating it, while in their thoughts they argue either in self-
accusation or, it may be, in self-defence— 16 On the day when God
passes judgement on men's inmost lives, as the Good News that I
tell declares that he will do through Christ Jesus.
17 But, perhaps, you bear the name of 'Jew,' and are relying
upon Law, and boast of belonging to God, and understand his
will, 18 And, having been carefully instructed from the Law, have
learned to appreciate the finer moral distinctions. 19 Perhaps you
are confident that you are a guide to the blind, a light to those who
are in the dark, an instructor of the unintelligent, 20 And a teacher
of the childish, because in the Law you possess the outline of all
Knowledge and Truth. 21 Why, then, you teacher of others, do not
you teach yourself? Do you preach against stealing, and yet steal?
22 Do you forbid adultery, and yet commit adultery? Do you loathe
idols, and yet plunder temples? 23 Boasting, as you do, of your Law,
do you dishonour God by breaking the Law? 24 For, as Scripture
says-'The name of God is reviled among the Gentiles because of

you'! [25] Circumcision has its value, if you are obeying the Law. But, if you are a breaker of the Law, your circumcision is no better than uncircumcision. [26] If, then, an uncircumcised man pays regard to the requirements of the Law, will not he, although not circumcised, be regarded by God as if he were? [27] Indeed, the man who, owing to his birth, remains uncircumcised, and yet scrupulously obeys the Law, will condemn you, who, for all your written Law and your circumcision, are yet a breaker of the Law. [28] For a man who is only a Jew outwardly is not a real Jew; nor is outward bodily circumcision real circumcision. The real Jew is the man who is a Jew in soul; [29] And the real circumcision is the circumcision of the heart, a spiritual and not a literal thing. Such a man wins praise from God, though not from men.

Chapter 3

[1] What is the advantage, then, of being a Jew? or what is the good of circumcision? [2] Great in every way. First of all, because the Jews were entrusted with God's utterances. [3] What follows then? Some, no doubt, showed a want of faith; but will their want of faith make God break faith? Heaven forbid! [4] God must prove true, though every man prove a liar! As Scripture says of God-'That thou mayest be pronounced righteous in what thou sayest, and gain thy cause when men would judge thee.' [5] But what if our wrong-doing makes God's righteousness all the clearer? Will God be wrong in inflicting punishment? (I can but speak as a man.) Heaven forbid! [6] Otherwise how can God judge the world? [7] But, if my falsehood redounds to the glory of God, by making his truthfulness more apparent, why am I like others, still condemned as a sinner? [8] Why should we not say-as some people slanderously assert that we do say-'Let us do evil that good may come'? The condemnation of such men is indeed just! [9] What follows, then? Are we Jews in any way superior to others? Not at all. Our indictment against both Jews and Greeks was that all alike were in subjection to sin. [10] As Scripture says-'There is not even one who is righteous, [11] Not one who understands, not one who is searching for God! [12] They have all gone astray; they have one and all become depraved; there is no one who is doing good-no, not one!' [13] 'Their throats are like opened graves; they deceive with their tongues.' 'The venom of serpents lies behind their lips,' [14] 'And their mouths are full of bitter curses.' [15]

'Swift are their feet to shed blood. [16] Distress and trouble dog their steps, [17] And the path of peace they do not know.' [18] 'The fear of God is not before their eyes.'

[19] Now we know that everything said in the Law is addressed to those who are under its authority, in order that every mouth may be closed, and the whole world become liable to the judgement of God. [20] For 'no human being will be pronounced righteous before God' as the result of obedience to Law; for it is Law that shows what sin is. [21] But now, quite apart from Law, the Divine Righteousness stands revealed, and to it the Law and the Prophets bear witness— [22] The Divine Righteousness which is bestowed, through faith in Jesus Christ, upon all, without distinction, who believe in him. [23] For all have sinned, and all fall short of God's glorious ideal, [24] But, in his loving-kindness, are being freely pronounced righteous through the deliverance found in Christ Jesus. [25] For God set him before the world, to be, by the shedding of his blood, a means of reconciliation through faith. And this God did to prove his righteousness, and because, in his forbearance, he had passed over the sins that men had previously committed; [26] As a proof, I repeat, at the present time, of his own righteousness, that he might be righteous in our eyes, and might pronounce righteous the man who takes his stand on faith in Jesus. [27] What, then, becomes of our boasting? It is excluded. By what sort of Law? A Law requiring obedience? No, a Law requiring faith. [28] For we conclude that a man is pronounced righteous on the ground of faith, quite apart from obedience to Law. [29] Or can it be that God is the God only of the Jews? Is not he also the God of the Gentiles? [30] Yes, of the Gentiles also, since there is only one God, and he will pronounce those who are circumcised righteous as the result of faith, and also those who are uncircumcised on their showing the same faith. [31] Do we, then, use this faith to abolish Law? Heaven forbid! No, we establish Law.

Chapter 4

[1] What then, it may be asked, are we to say about Abraham, the ancestor of our nation? [2] If he was pronounced righteous as the result of obedience, then he has something to boast of. Yes, but not before God. [3] For what are the words of Scripture? 'Abraham had faith in God, and his faith was regarded by God as righteousness.' [4] Now wages are regarded as due to the man who works, not as a

favour, but as a debt; 5 While, as for the man who does not rely upon his obedience, but has faith in him who can pronounce the godless righteous, his faith is regarded by God as righteousness. 6 In precisely the same way David speaks of the blessing pronounced upon the man who is regarded by God as righteous apart from actions— 7 'Blessed are those whose wrong-doings have been forgiven and over whose sins a veil has been drawn! 8 Blessed the man whom the Lord will never regard as sinful!'

9 Is this blessing, then, pronounced upon the circumcised only or upon the uncircumcised as well? We say that-'Abraham's faith was regarded by God as righteousness.' 10 Under what circumstances, then, did this take place? After his circumcision or before it? 11 Not after, but before. And it was as a sign of this that he received the rite of circumcision-to attest the righteousness due to the faith of an uncircumcised man-in order that he might be the father of all who have faith in God even when uncircumcised, that they also may be regarded by God as righteous; 12 As well as father of the circumcised-to those who are not only circumcised, but who also follow our father Abraham in that faith which he had while still uncircumcised. 13 For the promise that he should inherit the world did not come to Abraham or his descendants through Law, but through the righteousness due to faith. 14 If those who take their stand on Law are to inherit the world, then faith is robbed of its meaning and the promise comes to nothing! 15 Law entails punishment; but, where no Law exists, no breach of it is possible. 16 That is why all is made to depend upon faith, that all may be God's gift, and in order that the fulfilment of the promise may be made certain for all Abraham's descendants-not only for those who take their stand on the Law, but also for those who take their stand on the faith of Abraham. (He is the Father of us all;

17 As Scripture says-'I have made thee the Father of many nations.') And this they do in the sight of that God in whom Abraham had faith, and who gives life to the dead, and speaks of what does not yet exist as if it did. 18 With no ground for hope, Abraham, sustained by hope, put faith in God; in order that, in fulfilment of the words-'So many shall thy descendants be,' he might become 'the Father of many nations.' 19 Though he was nearly a hundred years old, yet his faith did not fail him, even when he thought of his own body, then utterly worn out, and remembered that Sarah was past

bearing children. 20 He was not led by want of faith to doubt God's promise. 21 On the contrary, his faith gave him strength; and he praised God, in the firm conviction that what God has promised he is also able to carry out. 22 And therefore his faith 'was regarded as righteousness.'

23 Now these words-'it was regarded as righteousness'-were not written with reference to Abraham only; 24 But also with reference to us. Our faith, too, will be regarded by God in the same light, if we have faith in him who raised Jesus, our Lord, from the dead; 25 For Jesus 'was given up to death to atone for our offences,' and was raised to life that we might be pronounced righteous.

Chapter 5

1 Therefore, having been pronounced righteous as the result of faith, let us enjoy peace with God through Jesus Christ, our Lord. 2 It is through him that, by reason of our faith, we have obtained admission to that place in God's favour in which we not stand. So let us exult in our hope of attaining God's glorious ideal. 3 And not only that, but let us also exult in our troubles; 4 For we know that trouble develops endurance, and endurance strength of character, and strength of character hope, 5 And that 'hope never disappoints.' For the love of God has filled our hearts through the Holy Spirit which was given us;

6 Seeing that, while we were still powerless, Christ, in God's good time, died on behalf of the godless. 7 Even for an upright man scarcely any one will die. For a really good man perhaps some one might even dare to die. 8 But God puts his love for us beyond all doubt by the fact that Christ died on our behalf while we were still sinners. 9 Much more, then, now that we have been pronounced righteous by virtue of the shedding of his blood, shall we be saved through him from the Wrath of God. 10 For if, when we were God's enemies, we were reconciled to him through the death of his Son, much more, now that we have become reconciled, shall we be saved by virtue of Christ's Life. 11 And not only that, but we exult in God, through Jesus Christ, our Lord, through whom we have now obtained this reconciliation. 12 Therefore, just as sin came into the world through one man, and through sin came death; so, also, death spread to all mankind, because all men had sinned. 13 Even before the time of the Law there was sin in the world; but sin

cannot be charged against a man where no Law exists. 14 Yet, from
Adam to Moses, Death reigned even over those whose sin was not a
breach of a law, as Adam's was. And Adam foreshadows the One to
come. 15 But there is a contrast between Adam's Offence and God's
gracious Gift. For, if by reason of the offence of the one man the
whole race died, far more were the loving-kindness of God, and
the gift given in the loving-kindness of the one man, Jesus Christ,
lavished upon the whole race. 16 There is a contrast, too, between
the gift and the results of the one man's sin. The judgement, which
followed upon the one man's sin, resulted in condemnation, but
God's gracious Gift, which followed upon many offences, resulted
in a decree of righteousness. 17 For if, by reason of the offence of the
one man, Death reigned through that one man, far more will those,
upon whom God's loving-kindness and his gift of righteousness are
lavished, find Life, and reign through the one man, Jesus Christ.
18 Briefly then, just as a single offence resulted for all mankind in
condemnation, so, too, a single decree of righteousness resulted
for all mankind in that declaration of righteousness which brings
Life. 19 For, as through the disobedience of the one man the whole
race was rendered sinful, so, too, through the obedience of the one,
the whole race will be rendered righteous. 20 Law was introduced
in order that offences might be multiplied. But, where sins were
multiplied, the loving-kindness of God was lavished the more, 21 In
order than, just as Sin had reigned in the realm of Death, so, too,
might Loving-kindness reign through righteousness, and result in
Immortal Life, through Jesus Christ, our Lord.

Chapter 6

1 What are we to say, then? Are we to continue to sin, in order
that God's loving-kindness may be multiplied? 2 Heaven forbid! We
became dead to sin, and how can we go on living in it? 3 Or can it be
that you do not know that all of us, who were baptized into union
with Christ Jesus, in our baptism shared his death? 4 Consequently,
through sharing his death in our baptism, we were buried with him;
that, just as Christ was raised from the dead by a manifestation
of the Father's power, so we also may live a new Life. 5 If we have
become united with him by the act symbolic of his death, surely
we shall also become united with him by the act symbolic of his
resurrection. 6 We recognize the truth that our old self was crucified

with Christ, in order that the body, the stronghold of Sin, might
be rendered powerless, so that we should no longer be slaves to
Sin. 7 For the man who has so died has been pronounced righteous
and released from Sin. 8 And our belief is, that, as we have shared
Christ's Death, we shall also share his Life. 9 We know, indeed, that
Christ, having once risen from the dead, will not die again. Death
has power over him no longer. 10 For the death that he died was a
death to sin, once and for all. But the Life that he now lives, he lives
for God. 11 So let it be with you-regard yourselves as dead to sin,
but as living for God, through union with Christ Jesus. 12 Therefore
do not let Sin reign in your mortal bodies and compel you to obey
its cravings. 13 Do not offer any part of your bodies to Sin, in the
cause of unrighteousness, but once for all offer yourselves to God
(as those who, though once dead, now have Life), and devote every
part of your bodies to the cause of righteousness. 14 For Sin shall
not lord it over you. You are living under the reign, not of Law, but
of Love. 15 What follows, then? Are we to sin because we are living
under the reign of Love and not of Law? Heaven forbid! 16 Surely
you know that, when you offer yourselves as servants, to obey any
one, you are the servants of the person whom you obey, whether the
service be that of Sin which leads to Death, or that of Duty which
leads to Righteousness. 17 God be thanked that, though you were
once servants of Sin, yet you learned to give hearty obedience to
that form of doctrine under which you were placed. 18 Set free from
the control of Sin, you became servants to Righteousness. 19 I can
but speak as men do because of the weakness of your earthly nature.
Once you offered every part of your bodies to the service of impurity,
and of wickedness, which leads to further wickedness. Now, in the
same way, offer them to the service of Righteousness, which leads
to holiness. 20 While you were still servants of Sin, you were free as
regards Righteousness. 21 But what were the fruits that you reaped
from those things of which you are now ashamed? For the end of
such things is Death. 22 But now that you have been set free from
the control of Sin, and have become servants to God, the fruit that
you reap is an ever-increasing holiness, and the end Immortal Life.
23 The wages of Sin are Death, but the gift of God is Immortal Life,
through union with Christ Jesus, our Lord.

Chapter 7

1 Surely, Brothers, you know (for I am speaking to men who
know what Law means) that Law has power over a man only as long
as he lives. 2 For example, by law a married woman is bound to her
husband while he is living; but, if her husband dies, she is set free
from the law that bound her to him. 3 If, then, during her husband's
lifetime, she unites herself to another man, she will be called an
adulteress; but, if her husband dies, the law has no further hold on
her, nor, if she unites herself to another man, is she an adulteress.
4 And so with you, my Brothers; as far as the Law was concerned,
you underwent death in the crucified body of the Christ, so that you
might be united to another, to him who was raised from the dead, in
order that our lives might bear fruit for God. 5 When we were living
merely earthly lives, our sinful passions, aroused by the Law, were
active in every part of our bodies, with the result that our lives bore
fruit for Death. 6 But now we are set free from the Law, because
we are dead to that which once kept us under restraint; and so we
serve under new, spiritual conditions, and not under old, written
regulations.

7 What are we to say, then? That Law and sin are the same
thing? Heaven forbid! On the contrary, I should not have learned
what sin is, had not it been for Law. If the Law did not say 'Thou
shalt not covet,' I should not know what it is to covet. 8 But sin took
advantage of the Commandment to arouse in me every form of
covetousness, for where there is no consciousness of Law sin shows
no sign of life. 9 There was a time when I myself, unconscious of
Law, was alive; but when the Commandment was brought home
to me, sin sprang into life, while I died! 10 The very Commandment
that should have meant Life I found to result in Death! 11 Sin took
advantage of the Commandment to deceive me, and used it to bring
about my Death. 12 And so the Law is holy, and each Commandment
is also holy, and just, and good. 13 Did, then, a thing, which in itself
was good, involve Death in my case? Heaven forbid! It was sin that
involved Death; so that, by its use of what I regarded as good to
bring about my Death, its true nature might appear; and in this way
the Commandment showed how intensely sinful sin is.

14 We know that the Law is spiritual, but I am earthly-sold
into slavery to Sin. 15 I do not understand my own actions. For I am

so far from habitually doing what I want to do, that I find myself
doing the very thing that I hate. 16 But when I do what I want not to
do, I am admitting that the Law is right. 17 This being so, the action
is no longer my own, but that of Sin which is within me. 18 I know
that there is nothing good in me-I mean in my earthly nature. For,
although it is easy for me to want to do right, to act rightly is not
easy. 19 I fail to do the good thing that I want to do, but the bad thing
that I want not to do-that I habitually do. 20 But, when I do the very
thing that I want not to do, the action is no longer my own, but that
of Sin which is within me. 21 This, then, is the law that I find-When
I want to do right, wrong presents itself! 22 At heart I delight in the
Law of God; 23 But throughout my body I see a different law, one
which is in conflict with the law accepted by my reason, and which
endeavours to make me a prisoner to that law of Sin which exists
throughout my body. 24 Miserable man that I am! Who will deliver
me from the body that is bringing me to this Death? 25 Thank God,
there is deliverance through Jesus Christ, our Lord! Well then, for
myself, with my reason I serve the Law of God, but with my earthly
nature the Law of Sin.

Chapter 8

1 There is, therefore, now no condemnation for those who
are in union with Christ Jesus; 2 For through your union with Christ
Jesus, the Law of the life-giving Spirit has set you free from the
Law of Sin and Death. 3 What Law could not do, in so far as our
earthly nature weakened its action, God did, by sending his own
Son, with a nature resembling our sinful nature, to atone for sin. He
condemned sin in that earthly nature, 4 So that the requirements of
the Law might be satisfied in us who live now in obedience, not to
our earthly nature, but to the Spirit. 5 They who follow their earthly
nature are earthly-minded, while they who follow the Spirit are
spiritually minded. 6 To be earthly-minded means Death, to be
spiritually minded means Life and Peace; 7 Because to be earthly-
minded is to be an enemy to God, for such a mind does not submit
to the Law of God, nor indeed can it do so. 8 They who are earthly
cannot please God. 9 You, however, are not earthly but spiritual,
since the Spirit of God lives within you. Unless a man has the Spirit
of Christ, he does not belong to Christ;

10 But, if Christ is within you, then, though the body is

dead as a consequence of sin, the spirit is Life as a consequence of righteousness. 11 And, if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead lives within you, he who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will give Life even to your mortal bodies, through his Spirit living within you. 12 So then, Brothers, we owe nothing to our earthly nature, that we should live in obedience to it. 13 If you live in obedience to your earthly nature, you will inevitably die; but if, by the power of the Spirit, you put an end to the evil habits of the body, you will live. 14 All who are guided by the Spirit of God are Sons of God. 15 For you did not receive the spirit of a slave, to fill you once more with fear, but the spirit of a son which leads us to cry 'Abba, Our Father.' 16 The Spirit himself unites with our spirits in bearing witness to our being God's children,

17 And if children, then heirs-heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ, since we share Christ's sufferings in order that we may also share his Glory. 18 I do not count the sufferings of our present life worthy of mention when compared with the Glory that is to be revealed and bestowed upon us. 19 All Nature awaits with eager expectation the appearing of the Sons of God. 20 For Nature was made subject to imperfection-not by its own choice, but owing to him who made it so— 21 Yet not without the hope that some day Nature, also, will be set free from enslavement to decay, and will attain to the freedom which will mark the Glory of the Children of God. 22 We know, indeed, that all Nature alike has been groaning in the pains of labour to this very hour. 23 And not Nature only; but we ourselves also, though we have already a first gift of the Spirit-we ourselves are inwardly groaning, while we eagerly await our full adoption as Sons-the redemption of our bodies. 24 By our hope we were saved. But the thing hoped for is no longer an object of hope when it is before our eyes; for who hopes for what is before his eyes? 25 But when we hope for what is not before our eyes, then we wait for it with patience.

26 So, also, the Spirit supports us in our weakness. We do not even know how to pray as we should; but the Spirit himself pleads for us in sighs that can find no utterance. 27 Yet he who searches all our hearts knows what the Spirit's meaning is, because the pleadings of the Spirit for Christ's People are in accordance with his will. 28 But we do know that God causes all things to work together for the good of those who love him-those who have received the Call

in accordance with his purpose.

29 For those whom God chose from the first he also destined from the first to be transformed into likeness to his Son, so that his Son might be the eldest among many Brothers. 30 And those whom God destined for this he also called; and those whom he called he also pronounced righteous; and those whom he pronounced righteous he also brought to Glory.

31 What are we to say, then, in the light of all this? If God is on our side, who can there be against us? 32 God did not withhold his own Son, but gave him up on behalf of us all; will he not, then, with him, freely give us all things? 33 Who will bring a charge against any of God's People? He who pronounces them righteous is God! 34 Who is there to condemn them? He who died for us is Christ Jesus!-or, rather, it was he who was raised from the dead, and who is now at God's right hand and is even pleading on our behalf! 35 Who is there to separate us from the love of the Christ? Will trouble, or difficulty, or persecution, or hunger, or nakedness, or danger, or the sword? 36 Scripture says-'For thy sake we are being killed all the day long, We are regarded as sheep to be slaughtered.' 37 Yet amidst all these things we more than conquer through him who loved us! 38 For I am persuaded that neither Death, nor Life, nor Angels, nor Archangels, nor the Present, nor the Future, nor any Powers, 39 Nor Height, nor Depth, nor any other created thing, will be able to separate us from the love of God revealed in Christ Jesus, our Lord!

Chapter 9

1 I am speaking the truth as one in union with Christ; it is no lie; and my conscience, enlightened by the Holy Spirit, 2 Bears me out when I say that there is a great weight of sorrow upon me and that my heart is never free from pain. 3 I could wish that I were myself accursed and severed from the Christ, for the sake of my Brothers-my own countrymen. 4 For they are Israelites, and theirs are the adoption as Sons, the visible Presence, the Covenants, the revealed Law, the Temple worship, and the Promises. 5 They are descended from the Patriarchs; and, as far as his human nature was concerned, from them came the Christ-he who is supreme over all things, God for ever blessed. Amen.7

6 Not that God's Word has failed. For it is not all who are descended from Israel who are true Israelites; 7 Nor, because they

are Abraham's descendants, are they all his Children; but-'It is Isaac's children who will be called thy descendants.' [8] This means that it is not the children born in the course of nature who are God's Children, but it is the children born in fulfilment of the Promise who are to be regarded as Abraham's descendants. [9] For these words are the words of a promise-'About this time I will come, and Sarah shall have a son.' [10] Nor is that all. There is also the case of Rebecca, when she was about to bear children to our ancestor Isaac. [11] For in order that the purpose of God, working through selection, might not fail-a selection depending, not on obedience, but on his Call-Rebecca was told, before her children were born and before they had done anything either right or wrong, [12] that 'the elder would be a servant to the younger.' [13] The words of Scripture are-'I loved Jacob, but I hated Esau.'

[14] What are we to say, then? Is God guilty of injustice? Heaven forbid! [15] For his words to Moses are-'I will take pity on whom I take pity, and be merciful to whom I am merciful.' [16] So, then, all depends, not on human wishes or human efforts, but on God's mercy. [17] In Scripture, again, it is said to Pharaoh-'It was for this very purpose that I raised thee to the throne, to show my power by my dealings with thee, and to make my name known throughout the world.' [18] So, then, where God wills, he takes pity, and where he wills, he hardens the heart. [19] Perhaps you will say to me-'How can any one still be blamed? For who withstands his purpose?' [20] I might rather ask 'Who are you who are arguing with God?' Does a thing which a man has moulded say to him who has moulded it 'Why did you make me like this?' [21] Has not the potter absolute power over his clay, so that out of the same lump he makes one thing for better, and another for common, use? [22] And what if God, intending to reveal his displeasure and make his power known, bore most patiently with the objects of his displeasure, though they were fit only to be destroyed, [23] So as to make known his surpassing glory in dealing with the objects of his mercy, whom he prepared beforehand for glory, [24] And whom he called-even us-Not only from among the Jews but from among the Gentiles also!

[25] This, indeed, is what he says in the Book of Hosea-'I will

[7] *Literally* of whom the fathers, and out of whom the Christ, the (thing) according to flesh, the one being upon all things, God blessed one into the ages; Amen.

call those my People who were not my People, and her my beloved who was not beloved. [26] And in the very place where it was said to them-"Ye are not my People", they shall be called Sons of the Living God.' [27] And Isaiah cries aloud over Israel-'Though the Sons of Israel are like the sand of the sea in number, only a remnant of them shall escape! [28] For the Lord will execute his sentence upon the world, fully and without delay.' [29] It is as Isaiah foretold-'Had not the Lord of Hosts spared some few of our race to us, we should have become like Sodom and been made to resemble Gomorrah.'

[30] What are we to say, then? Why, that Gentiles, who were not in search of righteousness, secured it-a righteousness which was the result of faith; [31] While Israel, which was in search of a Law which would ensure righteousness, failed to discover one. [32] And why? Because they looked to obedience, and not to faith, to secure it. They stumbled over 'the Stumbling-block.' [33] As Scripture says—'See, I place a Stumbling-block in Zion—a Rock which shall prove a hindrance; and he who believes in him shall have no cause for shame.'

Chapter 10

[1] Brothers, my heart's desire and prayer to God for my People is for their Salvation. [2] I can testify that they are zealous for the honour of God; but they are not guided by true insight, [3] For, in their ignorance of the Divine Righteousness, and in their eagerness to set up a righteousness of their own, they refused to accept with submission the Divine Righteousness. [4] For Christ has brought Law to an end, so that righteousness may be obtained by every one who believes in him. [5] For Moses writes that, as for the righteousness which results from Law, 'those who practice it will find Life through it.' [6] But the righteousness which results from faith finds expression in these words—'Do not say to yourself "Who will go up into heaven?"'—which means to bring Christ down—' [7] Or "Who will go down into the depths below?"'—which means to bring Christ up from the dead. [8] No, but what does it say? 'The Message of Faith' which we proclaim. [9] For, if with your lips you acknowledge the truth of the Message that JESUS IS LORD, and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you shall be saved. [10] For with their hearts men believe and so attain to righteousness, while with their lips they make their Profession of Faith and so find

Salvation. 11 As the passage of Scripture says—'No one who believes
in him shall have any cause for shame.'

12 For no distinction is made between the Jew and the Greek,
for all have the same Lord, and he is bountiful to all who invoke
him. 13 For 'every one who invokes the Name of the Lord shall be
saved.' 14 But how, it may be asked, are they to invoke one in whom
they have not learned to believe? And how are they to believe in
one whose words they have not heard? And how are they to hear
his words unless some one proclaims him? 15 And how are men to
proclaim him unless they are sent as his messengers? As Scripture
says—'How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news!' 16
Still, it may be said, every one did not give heed to the Good News.
No, for Isaiah asks—'Lord, who has believed our teaching?' 17 And
so we gather, faith is a result of teaching, and the teaching comes in
the Message of Christ. 18 But I ask 'Is it possible that men have never
heard?' No, indeed, for—'Their voices spread through all the earth,
and their Message to the very ends of the world.' 19 But again I ask
'Did not the people of Israel understand? First there is Moses, who
says—'I, the Lord, will stir you to rivalry with a nation which is no
nation; Against an undiscerning nation I will arouse your anger.' 20
And Isaiah says boldly—'I was found by those who were not seeking
me; I made myself known to those who were not inquiring of me. 21
But of the people of Israel he says—'All day long I have stretched out
my hands to a people who disobey and contradict.'

Chapter 11

1 I ask, then, 'Has God rejected his People?' Heaven forbid!
For I myself am an Israelite, a descendant of Abraham, of the tribe
of Benjamin. 2 God has not rejected his People, whom he chose from
the first. Have you forgotten the words of Scripture in the story of
Elijah- how he appeals to God against Israel? 3 'Lord, they have
killed thy Prophets, they have pulled down thy altars, and I only
am left; and now they are eager to take my life.' 4 But what was the
divine response? 'I have kept for myself seven thousand men who
have never bowed the knee to Baal.' 5 And so in our own time, too,
there is to be found a remnant of our nation selected by God in love.
6 But if in love, then no longer as a result of obedience. Otherwise
love would cease to be love. 7 What follows from this? Why, that
Israel as a nation failed to secure what it was seeking, while

those whom God selected did secure it. 8 The rest grew callous;
as Scripture says—'God has given them a deadness of mind—eyes
that are not to see and ears that are not to hear—and it is so to this
very day.' 9 David, too, says—'May their feasts prove a snare and a
trap to them—a hindrance and a retribution; 10 May their eyes be
darkened, so that they cannot see; and do thou always make their
backs to bend.' 11 I ask then—'Was their stumbling to result in their
fall?' Heaven forbid! On the contrary, through their falling away
Salvation has reached the Gentiles, to stir the rivalry of Israel. 12
And, if their falling away has enriched the world, and their failure
has enriched the Gentiles, how much more will result from their full
restoration! 13 But I am speaking to you who were Gentiles. 14 Being
myself an Apostle to the Gentiles, I exalt my office, in the hope that
I may stir my countrymen to rivalry, and so save some of them.
15 For, if their being cast aside has meant the reconciliation of the
world, what will their reception mean, but Life from the dead? 16 If
the first handful of dough in holy, so is the whole mass; and if the
root is holy, so are the branches. 17 Some, however, of the branches
were broken off, and you, who were only a wild olive, were grafted
in among them, and came to share with them the root which is the
source of the richness of the cultivated olive. 18 Yet do not exult over
the other branches. But, if you do exult over them, remember that
you do not support the root, but that the root supports you. 19 But
branches, you will say, were broken off, so that I might be grafted
in. 20 True; it was because of their want of faith that they were
broken off, and it is because of your faith that you are standing. Do
not think too highly of yourself, but beware. 21 For, if God did not
spare the natural branches, neither will he spare you. 22 See, then,
both the goodness and the severity of God—his severity towards
those who fell, and his goodness towards you, provided that you
continue to confide in that goodness; otherwise you, also, will be
cut off. 23 And they, too, if they do not continue in their unbelief, will
be grafted in; for God has it in his power to graft them in again. 24
If you were cut off from your natural stock—a wild olive—and were
grafted, contrary to the course of nature, upon a good olive, much
more will they—the natural branches—be grafted back into their
parent tree. 25 Brothers, for fear that you should think too highly of
yourselves, I want you to recognize the truth, hitherto hidden, that
the callousness which has come over Israel is only partial, and will

continue only till the whole Gentile world has been gathered in. [26] And then all Israel shall be saved. As Scripture says—'From Zion will come the Deliverer; he will banish ungodliness from Jacob. [27] And they shall see the fulfilment of my Covenant, when I have taken away their sins.' [28] From the stand-point of the Good News, the Jews are God's enemies on your account; but from the stand-point of God's selection, they are dear to him on account of the Patriarchs. [29] For God never regrets his gifts or his Call. [30] Just as you at one time were disobedient to him, but have now found mercy in the day of their disobedience; [31] So, too, they have now become disobedient in your day of mercy, in order that they also in their turn may now find mercy. [32] For God has given all alike over to disobedience, that to all alike he may show mercy.

[33] Oh! the unfathomable wisdom and knowledge of God! How inscrutable are his judgements, how untraceable his ways! Yes— [34] 'Who has ever comprehended the mind of the Lord? Who has ever become his counsellor? [35] Or who has first given to him, so that he may claim a recompense?' [36] For all things are from him, through him, and for him. And to him be all glory for ever and ever! Amen.

Chapter 12

[1] I entreat you, then, Brothers, by the mercies of God, to offer your bodies as a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, for this is your rational worship. [2] Do not conform to the fashion of this world; but be transformed by the complete change that has come over your minds, so that you may discern what God's will is—all that is good, acceptable, and perfect. [3] In fulfilment of the charge with which I have been entrusted, I bid every one of you not to think more highly of himself than he ought to think, but to think till he learns to think soberly—in accordance with the measure of faith that God has allotted to each. [4] For, just as in the human body there is a union of many parts, and each part has its own function, [5] So we, by our union in Christ, many though we are, form but one body, and individually we are related one to another as its parts. [6] Since our gifts differ in accordance with the particular charge entrusted to us, if our gift is to preach, let our preaching correspond to our faith; [7] If it is to minister to others, let us devote ourselves to our ministry; the teacher to his teaching, [8] The speaker to his exhortation. Let the

man who gives in charity do so with a generous heart; let him who is in authority exercise due diligence; let him who shows kindness do so in a cheerful spirit. [9] Let your love be sincere. Hate the wrong; cling to the right. [10] In brotherly love, be affectionate to one another; in showing respect, set an example of deference to one another; [11] Never flagging in zeal; fervent in spirit; serving the Master; [12] Rejoicing in your hope; steadfast under persecution; persevering in prayer; [13] Relieving the wants of Christ's People; devoted to hospitality. [14] Bless your persecutors—bless and never curse. [15] Rejoice with those who are rejoicing, and weep with those who are weeping. [16] Let the same spirit of sympathy animate you all, not a spirit of pride; be glad to associate with the lowly. Do not think too highly of yourselves. [17] Never return injury for injury. Aim at doing what all men will recognize as honourable. [18] If it is possible, as far as rests with you, live peaceably with every one. [19] Never avenge yourselves, dear friends, but make way for the Wrath of God; for Scripture declares—'"It is for me to avenge, I will requite," says the Lord.' [20] Rather—'If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him to drink. By doing this you will heap coals of fire upon his head.' [21] Never be conquered by evil, but conquer evil with good.

Chapter 13

[1] Let every one obey the supreme Authorities. For no Authority exists except by the will of God, and the existing Authorities have been appointed by God. [2] Therefore he who sets himself against the authorities is resisting God's appointment, and those who resist will bring a judgement upon themselves. [3] A good action has nothing to fear from Rulers; a bad action has. Do you want to have no reason to fear the Authorities? Then do what is good, and you will win their praise. [4] For they are God's servants appointed for your good. But, if you do what is wrong, you may well be afraid; for the sword they carry is not without meaning! They are God's servants to inflict his punishments on those who do wrong. [5] You are bound, therefore, to obey, not only through fear of God's punishments, but also as a matter of conscience. [6] This, too, is the reason for your paying taxes; for the officials are God's officers, devoting themselves to this special work.

[7] In all cases pay what is due from you—tribute where tribute is due, taxes where taxes are due, respect where respect is

due, and honour where honour is due. 8 Owe nothing to any one
except brotherly love; for he who loves his fellow men has satisfied
the Law. 9 The commandments, 'Thou shalt not commit adultery,
Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not covet,' and
whatever other commandment there is, are all summed up in the
words—'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thou dost thyself.' 10 Love
never wrongs a neighbour. Therefore Love fully satisfies the Law.

11 This I say, because you know the crisis that we have
reached, for the time has already come for you to rouse yourselves
from sleep; our Salvation is nearer now than when we accepted the
Faith. 12 The night is almost gone; the day is near. Therefore let us
have done with the deeds of Darkness, and arm ourselves with the
weapons of Light. 13 Being in the light of Day, let us live becomingly,
not in revelry and drunkenness, not in lust and licentiousness, not
in quarrelling and jealousy. 14 No! Arm yourselves with the spirit of
the Lord Jesus Christ, and spend no thought on your earthly nature,
to satisfy its cravings.

Chapter 14

1 As for those whose faith is weak, always receive them as
friends, but not for the purpose of passing judgement on their
scruples. 2 One man's faith permits of his eating food of all kinds,
while another whose faith is weak eats only vegetable food. 3 The
man who eats meat must not despise the man who abstains from it;
nor must the man who abstains from eating meat pass judgement
on the one who eats it, for God himself has received him. 4 Who are
you, that you should pass judgement on the servant of another? His
standing or falling concerns his own master. And stand he will, for
his Master can enable him to stand. 5 Again, one man considers
some days to be more sacred than others, while another considers
all days to be alike. Every one ought to be fully convinced in his own
mind. 6 He who observes a day, observes it to the Master's honour.
He, again, who eats meat eats it to the Master's honour, for he
gives thanks to God; while he who abstains from it abstains from
it to the Master's honour, and also gives thanks to God. 7 There is
not one of us whose life concerns himself alone, and not one of us
whose death concerns himself alone; 8 For, if we live, our life is for
the Master, and, if we die, our death is for the Master. Whether,
then, we live or die we belong to the Master. 9 The very purpose for

which Christ died and came back to life was this—that he might be
Lord over both the dead and the living. 10 I would ask the one man
'Why do you judge your Brother?' And I would ask the other 'Why
do you despise your Brother?' For we shall all stand before the Bar
of God. 11 For Scripture says—"'As surely as I live," says the Lord,
"every knee shall bend before me; and every tongue shall make
acknowledgment to God."' 12 So, then, each one of us will have to
render account of himself to God. 13 Let us, then, cease to judge one
another. Rather let this be your resolve—never to place a stumbling-
block or an obstacle in a Brother's way. 14 Through my union with
the Lord Jesus, I know and am persuaded that nothing is 'defiling in
itself.' A thing is 'defiling' only to him who holds it to be so. 15 If, for
the sake of what you eat, you wound your Brother's feelings, your
life has ceased to be ruled by love. Do not, by what you eat, ruin a
man for whom Christ died! 16 Do not let what is right for you become
a matter of reproach. 17 For the Kingdom of God does not consist of
eating and drinking, but of righteousness and peace and gladness
through the presence of the Holy Spirit. 18 He who serves the Christ
in this way pleases God, and wins the approval of his fellow men. 19
Therefore our efforts should be directed towards all that makes for
peace and the mutual building up of character. 20 Do not undo God's
work for the sake of what you eat. Though everything is 'clean,' yet,
if a man eats so as to put a stumbling-block in the way of others, he
does wrong. 21 The right course is to abstain from meat or wine or,
indeed, anything that is a stumbling-block to your Brother. 22 As
for yourself—keep this faith of yours to yourself, as in the presence
of God. Happy is he who never has to condemn himself in regard
to the very thing which he thinks right! 23 He, however, who has
misgivings stands condemned if he still eats, because his doing so is
not the result of faith. And anything not done as the result of faith
is a sin.

Chapter 15

1 We, the strong, ought to take on our own shoulders the
weaknesses of those who are not strong, and not merely to please
ourselves. 2 Let each of us please his neighbour for his neighbour's
good, to help in the building up of his character. 3 Even the Christ
did not please himself! On the contrary, as Scripture says of
him—'The reproaches of those who were reproaching thee fell upon

me.' [4] Whatever was written in the Scriptures in days gone by was written for our instruction, so that, through patient endurance, and through the encouragement drawn from the Scriptures, we might hold fast to our hope.

[5] And may God, the giver of this patience and this encouragement, grant you to be united in sympathy in Christ, [6] So that with one heart and one voice you may praise the God and Father of Jesus Christ, our Lord.

[7] Therefore always receive one another as friends, just as the Christ himself received us, to the glory of God. [8] For I tell you that Christ, in vindication of God's truthfulness, has become a minister of the Covenant of Circumcision, so that he may fulfil the promises made to our ancestors, [9] And that the Gentiles also may praise God for his mercy. As Scripture says—'Therefore will I make acknowledgment to thee among the Gentiles and sing in honour of thy Name.' [10] And again it says—'Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with God's People.' [11] And yet again—'Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and let all Peoples sing his praises.' [12] Again, Isaiah says—'There shall be a Scion of the house of Jesse, One who is to arise to rule the Gentiles; on him shall the Gentiles rest their hopes.'

[13] May God, who inspires our hope, grant you perfect happiness and peace in your faith, till you are filled with this hope by the power of the Holy Spirit.

[14] I am persuaded, my Brothers—yes, I Paul, with regard to you—that you are yourselves full of kindness, furnished with all Christian learning, and well able to give advice to one another. [15] But in parts of this letter I have expressed myself somewhat boldly—by way of refreshing your memories— [16] Because of the charge with which God has entrusted me, that I should be a minister of Christ Jesus to go to the Gentiles—that I should act as a priest of God's Good News, so that the offering up of the Gentiles may be an acceptable sacrifice, consecrated by the Holy Spirit.

[17] It is, then, through my union with Christ Jesus that I have a proud confidence in my work for God. [18] For I will not dare to speak of anything but what Christ has done through me to win the obedience of the Gentiles— [19] By my words and actions, through the power displayed in signs and marvels, and through the power of the Holy Spirit. And so, starting from Jerusalem and its neighbourhood, and going as far as Illyria, I have told in full the Good News of the

Christ; [20] Yet always with the ambition to tell the Good News where Christ's name had not previously been heard, so as to avoid building upon another man's foundations. [21] But as Scripture says—'They to whom he had never been proclaimed shall see; and they who have never heard shall understand!'

[22] That is why I have so often been prevented from coming to you. [23] But now there are no further openings for me in these parts, and I have for several years been longing to come to you whenever I may be going to Spain. [24] For my hope is to visit you on my journey, and then to be sent on my way by you, after I have first partly satisfied myself by seeing something of you. [25] Just now, however, I am on my way to Jerusalem, to take help to Christ's People there. [26] For Macedonia and Greece have been glad to make a collection for the poor among Christ's People at Jerusalem. [27] Yes, they were glad to do so; and indeed it is a duty which they owe to them. For the Gentile converts who have shared their spiritual blessings are in duty bound to minister to them in the things of this world. [28] When I have settled this matter, and have secured to the poor at Jerusalem the enjoyment of these benefits, I shall go, by way of you, to Spain. [29] And I know that, when I come to you, it will be with a full measure of blessing from Christ.

[30] I beg you, then, Brothers, by Jesus Christ, our Lord, and by the love inspired by the Spirit, to join me in earnest prayer to God on my behalf. [31] Pray that I may be rescued from those in Judea who reject the Faith, and that the help which I am taking to Jerusalem may prove acceptable to Christ's People; [32] So that, God willing, I may be able to come to you with a joyful heart, and enjoy some rest among you. [33] May God, the giver of peace, be with you all. Amen.

Chapter 16

[1] I commend to your care our Sister, Phoebe, who helps in the work of the Church at Cenchreae; [2] And I ask you to give her a Christian welcome—one worthy of Christ's People—and to aid her in any matter in which she may need your assistance. She has proved herself a staunch friend to me and to many others. [3] Give my greeting to Prisca and Aquila, my fellow-workers in the Cause of Christ Jesus, [4] Who risked their own lives to save mine. It is not I alone who thank them, but all the Churches among the Gentiles thank them also. [5] Give my greeting, also, to the Church that meets

at their house, as well as to my dear friend Epaenetus, one of the
first in Roman Asia to believe in Christ; 6 To Mary, who worked
hard for you; 7 To Andronicus and Junias, my countrymen and once
my fellow-prisoners, who are men of note among the Apostles, and
who became Christians before I did;[8] 8 To my dear Christian friend
Ampliatus; 9 To Urban, our fellow-worker in the Cause of Christ,
and to my dear friend Stachys; 10 To that proved Christian Apelles;
to the household of Aristobulus; 11 To my countryman Herodion; to
the Christians in the household of Narcissus; 12 To Tryphaena and
Tryphosa, who have worked hard for the Master; to my dear friend
Persis, for she has done much hard work for the Master; 13 To that
eminent Christian, Rufus, and to his mother, who has been a mother
to me also; 14 To Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas,
and the Brothers with them; 15 Also to Philologus and Julia, Nereus
and his sister, and Olympas, and to all Christ's People who are with
them. 16 Greet one another with a sacred kiss. All the Churches of
the Christ send you greetings.

17 I urge you, Brothers, to be on your guard against people
who, by disregarding the teaching which you received, cause
divisions and create difficulties; dissociate yourselves from them. 18
For such persons are not serving Christ, our Master, but are slaves
to their own appetites; and, by their smooth words and flattery, they
deceive simple-minded people. 19 Every one has heard of your ready
obedience. It is true that I am very happy about you, but I want you
to be well versed in all that is good, and innocent of all that is bad. 20
And God, the giver of peace, will before long crush Satan under your
feet. May the blessing of Jesus, our Lord, be with you.

21 Timothy, my fellow-worker, sends you his greetings,
and Lucius, Jason, and Sosipater, my countrymen, send theirs.
22 I Tertius, who am writing this letter, send you my Christian
greeting. 23 My host Gaius, who extends his hospitality to the whole
Church, sends you his greeting; and Erastus, the City Treasurer,
and Quartus, our Brother, add theirs. 24 The grace of our Lord Jesus
Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him who is able to strengthen you, as promised in
the Good News entrusted to me and in the proclamation of Jesus

[8] *Literally* Greet Andronicus and Junias my relatives and fellow captives,
who are notable in the apostles, who also before me have become in
Christ.

Christ, in accordance with the revelation of that hidden purpose,
which in past ages was kept secret but now has been revealed 26
And, in obedience to the command of the Immortal God, made
known through the writings of the Prophets to all nations, to secure
submission to the Faith— 27 To him, I say, the wise and only God, be
ascribed, through Jesus Christ, all glory for ever and ever. Amen.

The First Letter of Paul to the Corinthians

Chapter 1

[1] To the Church of God in Corinth, to those who have been consecrated by union with Christ Jesus and called to become his People, and also to all, wherever they may be, who invoke the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ-their Master and ours, [2] From Paul, who has been called to be an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, And from Sosthenes, our Brother. [3] May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace. [4] I always thank God about you for the blessing bestowed upon you in Christ Jesus. [5] For through union with him you were enriched in every way-in your power to preach, and in your knowledge of the Truth; [6] And so became yourselves a confirmation of my testimony to the Christ. [7] And thus there is no gift in which you are deficient, while waiting for the Appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ. [8] And God himself will strengthen you to the end, so that at the Day of our Lord Jesus Christ you may be found blameless. [9] God will not fail you, and it is he who called you into communion with his Son, Jesus Christ, our Lord.

[10] But I appeal to you, Brothers, by the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to agree in what you profess, and not to allow divisions to exist among you, but to be united-of one mind and of one opinion. [11] For I have been informed, my Brothers, by the members of Chloe's household, that party feeling exists among you. [12] I mean this, that every one of you says either 'I follow Paul,' or 'I Apollos,' or 'I Kephas,' or 'I Christ.' [13] You have rent the Christ in pieces! Was it Paul who was crucified for you? or were you baptized into the Faith of Paul?

[14] I am thankful that I did not baptize any of you except Crispus and Gaius, [15] So that no one can say that you were baptized into my Faith. [16] I baptized also the household of Stephanas. I do not know that I baptized any one else.

[17] My mission from Christ was not to baptize, but to tell the Good News; not, however, in the language of philosophy, lest the cross of the Christ should be robbed of its meaning. [18] The

Message of the Cross is indeed mere folly to those who are in the path to Ruin, but to us who are in the path of Salvation it is the very power of God. 19 For Scripture says-'I will bring the philosophy of the philosophers to nought, and the shrewdness of the shrewd I will make of no account.' 20 Where is the Philosopher? where the Teacher of the Law? where the Disputant of to-day? Has not God shown the world's philosophy to be folly? 21 For since the world, in God's wisdom, did not by its philosophy learn to know God, God saw fit, by the 'folly' of our proclamation, to save those who believe in Christ! 22 While Jews ask for miraculous signs, and Greeks study philosophy, 23 We are proclaiming Christ crucified!-to the Jews an obstacle, to the Gentiles mere folly, 24 But to those who have received the Call, whether Jews or Greeks, Christ, the Power of God and the Wisdom of God! 25 For God's 'folly' is wiser than men, and God's 'weakness' is stronger than men. 26 Look at the facts of your Call, Brothers. There are not many among you who are wise, as men reckon wisdom, not many who are influential, not many who are high-born; 27 But God chose what the world counts foolish to put its wise men to shame, and God chose what the world counts weak to put its strong things to shame, 28 And God chose what the world counts poor and insignificant—things that to it are unreal-to bring its 'realities' to nothing, 29 So that in his presence no human being should boast. 30 But you, by your union with Christ Jesus, belong to God; and Christ, by God's will, became not only our Wisdom, but also our Righteousness, Holiness, and Deliverance, 31 So that-in the words of Scripture-'Let him who boasts make his boast of the Lord!'

Chapter 2

1 For my own part, Brothers, when I came to you, it was with no display of eloquence or philosophy that I came to tell the hidden purpose of God; 2 For I had determined that, while with you, I would know nothing but Jesus Christ-and him crucified! 3 Indeed, when I came among you, I was weak, and full of fears, and in great anxiety. 4 My Message and my Proclamation were not delivered in the persuasive language of philosophy, but were accompanied by the manifestation of spiritual power, 5 So that your faith should be based, not on the philosophy of man, but on the power of God.

6 Yet there is a philosophy that we teach to those whose faith

is matured, but it is not the philosophy of to-day, nor that of the leaders of to-day-men whose downfall is at hand. 7 No, it is a divine philosophy that we teach, one concerned with the hidden purpose of God-that long-hidden philosophy which God, before time began, destined for our glory. 8 This philosophy is not known to any of the leaders of to-day; for, had they known it, they would not have crucified our glorified Lord. 9 It is what Scripture speaks of as-'What eye never saw, nor ear ever heard, what never entered the mind of man-even all that God has prepared for those who love him.' 10 Yet to us God revealed it through his Spirit; for the Spirit fathoms all things, even the inmost depths of God's being. 11 For what man is there who knows what a man is, except the man's own spirit within him? So, also, no one comprehends what God is, except the Spirit of God. 12 And as for us, it is not the Spirit of the World that we have received, but the Spirit that comes from God, that we may realize the blessings given to us by him. 13 And we speak of these gifts, not in language taught by human philosophy, but in language taught by the Spirit, explaining spiritual things in spiritual words. 14 The merely intellectual man rejects the teaching of the Spirit of God; for to him it is mere folly; he cannot grasp it, because it is to be understood only by spiritual insight. 15 But the man with spiritual insight is able to understand everything, although he himself is understood by no one. 16 For 'who has so comprehended the mind of the Lord as to be able to instruct him?' We, however, have the very mind of Christ.

Chapter 3

1 But I, Brothers, could not speak to you as men with spiritual insight, but only as worldly-minded-mere infants in the Faith of Christ. 2 I fed you with milk, not with solid food, for you were not then able to take it. No, and even now you are not able; you are still worldly. 3 While there exist among you jealousy and party feeling, is it not true that you are worldly, and are acting merely as other men do? 4 When one says 'I follow Paul,' and another 'I follow Apollos,' are not you like other men?

5 What, I ask, is Apollos? or what is Paul? Servants through whom you were led to accept the Faith; and that only as the Lord helped each of you. 6 I planted, and Apollos watered, but it was God who caused the growth. 7 Therefore neither the man who plants, nor

the man who waters, is of any account, but only God who causes the growth. 8 In this the man who plants and the man who waters are one; yet each will receive his own reward in proportion to his own labour. 9 For we are God's fellow workers; you are God's harvest field, God's building. 10 In fulfilment of the charge which God had entrusted to me, I laid the foundation like a skilful master-builder; but another man is now building upon it. Let every one take care how he builds;

11 For no man can lay any other foundation than the one already laid-Jesus Christ. 12 Whatever is used by those who build upon this foundation, whether gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay, or straw, 13 The quality of each man's work will become known, for the Day will make it plain; because that Day is to be ushered in with fire, and the fire itself will test the quality of every man's work. 14 If any man's work, which he has built upon that foundation, still remains, he will gain a reward. 15 If any man's work is burnt up, he will suffer loss; though he himself will escape, but only as one who has passed through fire.

16 Do not you know that you are God's Temple, and that God's Spirit has his home in you? 17 If any one destroys the Temple of God, God will destroy him; for the Temple of God is sacred, and so also are you.

18 Let no one deceive himself. If any one among you imagines that, as regards this world, he is a wise man, let him become a 'fool,' that he may become wise. 19 For in God's sight this world's wisdom is folly. Scripture tells of-'One who catches the wise in their own craftiness,' 20 And it says again-'The Lord sees how fruitless are the deliberations of the wise.'

21 Therefore let no one boast about men; for all things are yours— 22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Kephas, or the world, or life, or death, or the present, or the future-all things are yours! 23 But you are Christ's and Christ is God's.

Chapter 4

1 Let men look upon us as Christ's servants, and as stewards of the hidden truths of God. 2 Now what we look for in stewards is that they should be trustworthy. 3 But it weighs very little with me that I am judged by you or by any human tribunal. No, I do not even judge myself; 4 For, though I am conscious of nothing against

myself, that does not prove me innocent. It is the Lord who is my judge. 5 Therefore do not pass judgement before the time, but wait till the Lord comes. He will throw light upon what is now dark and obscure, and will reveal the motives in men's minds; and then every one will receive due praise from God. 6 All this, Brothers, I have, for your sakes, applied to Apollos and myself, so that, from our example, you may learn to observe the precept-'Keep to what is written,' that none of you may speak boastfully of one teacher to the disparagement of another.

7 For who makes any one of you superior to others? And what have you that was not given you? But if you received it as a gift, why do you boast as if you had not? 8 Are you all so soon satisfied? Are you so soon rich? Have you begun to reign without us? Would indeed that you had, so that we also might reign with you! 9 For, as it seems to me, God has exhibited us, the Apostles, last of all, as men doomed to death. We are made a spectacle to the universe, both to angels and to men! 10 We, for Christ's sake, are 'fools,' but you, by your union with Christ, are men of discernment. We are weak, but you are strong. You are honoured, but we are despised. 11 To this very hour we go hungry, thirsty, and naked; we are beaten; we are homeless; 12 We work hard, toiling with our own hands. We meet abuse with blessings, we meet persecution with endurance, 13 We meet slander with gentle appeals. We have been treated as the scum of the earth, the vilest of the vile, to this very hour.

14 It is with no wish to shame you that I am writing like this; but to warn you as my own dear children. 15 Though you may have thousands of instructors in the Faith of Christ, yet you have not many fathers. It was I who, through union with Christ Jesus, became your father by means of the Good News. 16 Therefore I entreat you-Follow my example.

17 This is my reason for sending Timothy to you. He is my own dear faithful child in the Master's service, and he will remind you of my methods of teaching the Faith of Christ Jesus-methods which I follow everywhere in every Church. 18 Some, I hear, are puffed up with pride, thinking that I am not coming to you. 19 But come to you I will, and that soon, if it please the Lord; and then I shall find out, not what words these men use who are so puffed up, but what power they possess; 20 For the Kingdom of God is based, not on words, but on power. 21 What do you wish? Am I to come to

you with a rod, or in a loving and gentle spirit?

Chapter 5

1 There is a wide-spread report respecting a case of
immorality among you, and that, too, of a kind that does not occur
even among the Gentiles-a man, I hear, is living with his father's
wife! 2 Instead of grieving over it and taking steps for the expulsion
of the man who has done this thing, is it possible that you are still
puffed up? 3 For I myself, though absent in body, have been present
with you in spirit, and in the name of our Lord Jesus I have already
passed judgement, just as if I had been present, upon the man who
has acted in this way. 4 I have decided-having been present in spirit
at your meetings, when the power of the Lord Jesus was with us- 5
To deliver such a man as this over to Satan, that what is sensual in
him may be destroyed, so that his spirit may be saved at the Day of
the Lord. 6 Your boasting is unseemly. Do not you know that even a
little leaven leavens all the dough?

7 Get rid entirely of the old leaven, so that you may be like
new dough-free from leaven, as in truth you are. For our Passover
Lamb is already sacrificed-Christ himself; 8 Therefore let us keep
our festival, not with the leaven of former days, nor with the leaven
of vice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity
and truth.

9 I told you, in my letter, not to associate with immoral
people— 10 Not, of course, meaning men of the world who are in
immoral, or who are covetous and grasping, or who worship idols;
for then you would have to leave the world altogether. 11 But, as
things are, I say that you are not to associate with any one who,
although a Brother in name, is immoral, or covetous, or an idolater,
or abusive, or a drunkard, or grasping-no, not even to sit at table
with such people. 12 What have I to do with judging those outside
the Church? Is it not for you to judge those who are within the
Church, 13 While God judges those who are outside? 'Put away the
wicked man from among you.'

Chapter 6

1 Can it be that, when one of you has a dispute with another,
he dares to have his case tried before the heathen, instead of before

Christ's People? 2 Do not you know that Christ's People will try the
world? And if the world is to be tried by you, are you unfit to try the
most trivial cases? 3 Do not you know that we are to try angels-to
say nothing of the affairs of this life? 4 Why, then, if you have cases
relating to the affairs of this life, do you set to try them men who
carry no weight with the Church? To your shame I ask it. 5 Can it
be that there is not one man among you wise enough to decide
between two of his Brothers? 6 Must Brother go to law with Brother,
and that, too, before unbelievers? 7 To begin with, it is undoubtedly
a loss to you to have lawsuits with one another. Why not rather let
yourselves be wronged? Why not rather let yourselves be cheated?
8 Instead of this, you wrong and cheat others yourselves-yes, even
your Brothers!

9 Do not you know that wrong-doers will have no share in
God's Kingdom? Do not be deceived. No one who is immoral, or an
idolater, or an adulterer, or licentious, or a sodomite, 10 Or a thief,
or covetous, or a drunkard, or abusive, or grasping, will have any
share in God's Kingdom. 11 Such some of you used to be; but you
washed yourselves clean. You became Christ's People! you were
pronounced righteous through the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ,
and through the Spirit of our God!

12 Everything is allowable for me! Yes, but everything is not
profitable. Everything is allowable for me! Yes, but for my part,
I will not let myself be enslaved by anything. 13 Food exists for
the stomach, and the stomach for food; but God will put an end
to both the one and the other. The body, however, exists, not for
immorality, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body; 14 And, as
God has raised the Lord, so he will raise up us also by the exercise
of his power. 15 Do not you know that your bodies are Christ's
members? Am I, then, to take the members that belong to the Christ
and make them the members of a prostitute? Heaven forbid! 16 Or
do not you know that a man who unites himself with a prostitute is
one with her in body (for 'the two,' it is said, 'will become one'); 17
While a man who is united with the Lord is one with him in spirit? 18
Shun all immorality. Every other sin that men commit is something
outside the body; but an immoral man sins against his own body. 19
Again, do not you know that your body is a shrine of the Holy Spirit
that is within you-the Spirit which you have from God? 20 Moreover,
you are not your own masters; you were bought, and the price was

paid. Therefore, honour God in your bodies.

Chapter 7

1 With reference to the subjects about which you wrote to
me: It would be well for a man to remain single. 2 But, owing to
the prevalence of immorality, I advise every man to have his own
wife, and every woman her husband. 3 A husband should give his
wife her due, and a wife her husband. 4 It is not the wife, but the
husband, who exercises power over her body; and so, too, it is not
the husband, but the wife, who exercises power over his body. 5 Do
not deprive each other of what is due-unless it is only for a time and
by mutual consent, so that your minds may be free for prayer till
you again live as man and wife-lest Satan should take advantage of
your want of self-control and tempt you. 6 I say this, however, as a
concession, not as a command. 7 I should wish every one to be just
what I am myself. But every one has his own gift from God-one in
one way, and one in another. 8 My advice, then, to those who are not
married, and to widows, is this: It would be well for them to remain
as I am myself. 9 But, if they cannot control themselves, let them
marry, for it is better to marry than to be consumed with passion.

10 To those who are married my direction is-yet it is not
mine, but the Master's-that a woman is not to leave her husband
11 (If she has done so, let her remain as she is, or else be reconciled
to her husband) and also that a man is not to divorce his wife. 12
To all others I say-I, not the Master-If a Brother is married to a
woman, who is an unbeliever but willing to live with him, he should
not divorce her; 13 And a woman who is married to a man, who is
an unbeliever but willing to live with her, should not divorce her
husband. 14 For, through his wife, the husband who is an unbeliever
has become associated with Christ's People; and the wife who is an
unbeliever has become associated with Christ's People through our
Brother whom she has married. Otherwise your children would be
'defiled,' but, as it is, they belong to Christ's People. 15 However, if
the unbeliever wishes to be separated, let him be so. Under such
circumstances neither the Brother nor the Sister is bound; God
has called you to live in peace. 16 How can you tell, wife, whether
you may not save your husband? and how can you tell, husband,
whether you may not save your wife?

17 In any case, a man should continue to live in the condition

which the Lord has allotted to him, and in which he was when
God called him. This is the rule that I lay down in every Church.
18 Was a man already circumcised when he was called? Then he
should not efface his circumcision. Has a man been called when
uncircumcised? Then he should not be circumcised. 19 Circumcision
is nothing; the want of it is nothing; but to keep the commands of
God is everything. 20 Let every one remain in that condition of life
in which he was when the Call came to him. 21 Were you a slave
when you were called? Do not let that trouble you. No, even if you
are able to gain your freedom, still do your best. 22 For the man
who was a slave when he was called to the master's service is the
Master's freed-man; so, too, the man who was free when called is
Christ's slave. 23 You were bought, and the price was paid. Do not let
yourselves become slaves to men. 24 Brothers, let every one remain
in the condition in which he was when he was called, in close
communion with God.

25 With regard to unmarried women, I have no command
from the Master to give you, but I tell you my opinion, and it is that
of a man whom the Master in his mercy has made worthy to be
trusted. 26 I think, then, that, in view of the time of suffering that
has now come upon us, what I have already said is best-that a man
should remain as he is. 27 Are you married to a wife? Then do not
seek to be separated. Are you separated from a wife? Then do not
seek for a wife. 28 still, if you should marry, that is not wrong; nor,
if a young woman marries, is that wrong. But those who marry will
have much trouble to bear, and my wish is to spare you. 29 What
I mean, Brothers, is this-The time is short. Meanwhile, let those
who have wives live as if they had none, 30 Those who are weeping
as if not weeping, those who are rejoicing as if not rejoicing, those
who buy as if not possessing, 31 And those who use the good things
of the world as using them sparingly; for this world as we see it is
passing away. 32 I want you to be free from anxiety. The unmarried
man is anxious about the Master's Cause, desiring to please him; 33
While the married man is anxious about worldly matters, desiring
to please his wife; 34 And so his interests are divided. Again, the
unmarried woman, whether she is old or young, is anxious about
the Master's Cause, striving to be pure both in body and in spirit,
while the married woman is anxious about worldly matters,
desiring to please her husband. 35 I say this for your own benefit,

not with any intention of putting a halter round your necks, but in order to secure for the Master seemly and constant devotion, free from all distraction.

36 If, however, a father thinks that he is not acting fairly by his unmarried daughter, when she is past her youth, and if under these circumstances her marriage ought to take place, let him act as he thinks right. He is doing nothing wrong-let the marriage take place. 37 On the other hand, a father, who has definitely made up his mind, and is under no compulsion, but is free to carry out his own wishes, and who has come to the decision, in his own mind, to keep his unmarried daughter at home will be doing right. 38 In short, the one who consents to his daughter's marriage is doing right, and yet the other will be doing better.

39 A wife is bound to her husband as long as he lives; but, if the husband should pass to his rest, the widow is free to marry any one she wishes, provided he is a believer. 40 Yet she will be happier if she remains as she is-in my opinion, for I think that I also have the Spirit of God.

Chapter 8

1 With reference to food that has been offered in sacrifice to idols-We are aware that all of us have knowledge! Knowledge breeds conceit, while love builds up character. 2 If a man thinks that he knows anything, he has not yet reached that knowledge which he ought to have reached. 3 On the other hand, if a man loves God, he is known by God.

4 With reference, then, to eating food that has been offered to idols-we are aware that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is no God but one. 5 Even supposing that there are so-called 'gods' either in Heaven or on earth-and there are many such 'gods' and 'lords'- 6 Yet for us there is only one God, the Father, from whom all things come (and for him we live), and one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things come (and through him we live).

7 Still, it is not every one that has this knowledge. Some people, because of their association with idols, continued down to the present time, eat the food as food offered to an idol; and their consciences, while still weak, are dulled. 8 What we eat, however, will not bring us nearer to God. We lose nothing by not eating this food, and we gain nothing by eating it. 9 But take care that this right

of yours does not become in any way a stumbling-block to the weak. 10 For if some one should see you who possess this knowledge, feasting in an idol's temple, will not his conscience, if he is a weak man, become so hardened that he, too, will eat food offered to idols? 11 And so, through this knowledge of yours, the weak man is ruined-your Brother for whose sake Christ died! 12 In this way, by sinning against your Brothers and injuring their consciences, while still weak, you sin against Christ. 13 Therefore, if what I eat makes my Brother fall, rather than make my Brother fall, I will never eat meat again.

Chapter 9

1 Am I not free? Am I not an Apostle? Have I not seen our Lord Jesus? Are not you yourselves my work achieved in union with the Lord? 2 If I am not an Apostle to others, yet at least I am to you; for you are the seal that stamps me as an Apostle in union with the Lord.

3 The defence that I make to my critics is this: 4 Have not we a right to food and drink? 5 Have not we a right to take a wife with us, if she is a Christian, as the other Apostles and the Master's brothers and Kephas all do? 6 Or is it only Barnabas and I who have no right to give up working for our bread? 7 Does any one ever serve as a soldier at his own expense? Does any one plant a vineyard and not eat its produce? Or does any one look after a herd and not drink the milk? 8 Am I, in all this, speaking only from the human standpoint? Does not the Law also say the same? 9 For in the Law of Moses it is said-'Thou shalt not muzzle a bullock while it is treading out the grain.' Is it the bullocks that God is thinking of? 10 Or is not is said entirely for our sakes? Surely it was written for our sakes, for the ploughman ought not to plough, nor the thrasher to thrash, without expecting a share of the grain. 11 Since we, then, sowed spiritual seed for you, is it too much that we should reap from you an earthly harvest? 12 If others share in this right over you, do not we even more? Still we did not avail ourselves of this right. No, we endure anything rather than impede the progress of the Good News of the Christ. 13 Do not you know that those who do the work of the Temple live on what comes from the Temple, and that those who serve at the altar share the offerings with the altar? 14 So, too, the Master has appointed that those who tell the Good News should get

their living from the Good News.

15 I, however, have not availed myself of any of these rights.
I am not saying this to secure such an arrangement for myself;
indeed, I would far rather die-Nobody shall make my boast a vain
one! 16 If I tell the Good News, I have nothing to boast of, for I can
but do so. Woe is me if I do not tell it! 17 If I do this work willingly,
I have a reward; but, if unwillingly, I have been charged to perform
a duty. 18 What is my reward, then? To present the Good News free
of all cost, and so make but a sparing use of the rights which it gives
me.

19 Although I was entirely free, yet, to win as many converts
as possible, I made myself everyone's slave. 20 To the Jews I became
like a Jew, to win Jews. To those who are subject to Law I became
like a man subject to Law-though I was not myself subject to Law-
to win those who are subject to Law. 21 To those who have no Law I
became like a man who has no Law—not that I am free from God's
Law; no, for I am under Christ's Law-to win those who have no
law. 22 To the weak I became weak, to win the weak. I have become
all things to all men, so as at all costs to save some. 23 And I do
everything for the sake of the Good News, that with them I may
share in its blessings.

24 Do not you know that on a race-course, though all run,
yet only one wins the prize? Run in such a way that you may win. 25
Every athlete exercises self-restraint in everything; they, indeed, for
a crown that fades, we for one that is unfading. 26 I, therefore, run
with no uncertain aim. I box-not like a man hitting the air. 27 No, I
bruise my body and make it my slave, lest I, who have called others
to the contest, should myself be rejected.

Chapter 10

1 I want you to bear in mind, Brothers, that all our ancestors
were beneath the cloud, and all passed through the sea; 2 That in
the cloud and in the sea they all underwent baptism as followers
of Moses; 3 And that they all ate the same supernatural food, 4 and
all drank the same supernatural water, for they used to drink from
a supernatural rock which followed them, and that rock was the
Christ. 5 Yet with most of them God was displeased; for they were
'struck down in the desert.'

6 Now these things happened as warnings to us, to teach

us not to long for evil things as our forefathers longed. 7 Do not
become idolaters, as some of them became. Scripture says-'The
people sat down to eat and drink, and stood up to dance.' 8 Nor
let us act immorally, as some of them acted, with the result that
twenty-three thousand of them fell dead in a single day. 9 Nor let
us try the patience of the Lord too far, as some of them tried it,
with the result that they 'were, one after another, destroyed by the
snakes.' 10 And do not murmur, as some of them murmured, and so
'were destroyed by the Angel of Death.' 11 These things happened to
them by way of warning, and were recorded to serve as a caution to
us, in whose days the close of the ages has come. 12 Therefore let the
man who thinks that he stands take care that he does not fall. 13 No
temptation has come upon you that is not common to all mankind.
God will not fail you, and he will not allow you to be tempted
beyond your strength; but, when he sends the temptation, he will
also provide the way of escape, so that you may have strength to
endure. 14 Therefore, my dear friends, shun the worship of idols.

15 I speak to you as man of discernment; form your own
judgement about what I am saying. 16 In the Cup of Blessing which
we bless, is not there a sharing in the blood of the Christ? And in
the Bread which we break, is not there a sharing in the Body of the
Christ? 17 The Bread is one, and we, though many, are one body; for
we all partake of that one Bread. 18 Look at the people of Israel. Do
not those who eat the sacrifices share with the altar? 19 What do I
mean? you ask. Than an offering made to an idol, or the idol itself,
is anything? 20 No; what I say is that the sacrifices offered by the
Gentiles 'are offered to demons and to a Being who is no God,' and I
do not want you to share with demons. 21 You cannot drink both the
Cup of the Lord and the cup of demons. You cannot partake at the
Table of the Lord and at the table of demons. 22 Or 'are we to rouse
the jealousy of the Lord'? Are we stronger than he?

23 Everything is allowable! Yes, but everything is not
profitable. Everything is allowable! Yes, but everything does not
build up character. 24 A man must not study his own interests, but
the interests of others. 25 Eat anything that is sold in the market,
without making inquiries to satisfy your scruples; 26 For 'the earth,
with all that is in it, belongs to the Lord.' 27 If an unbeliever invites
you to his house and you consent to go, eat anything that is put
before you, without making inquiries to satisfy your scruples. 28

But, if any one should say to you 'This has been offered in sacrifice to an idol,' then, for the sake of the speaker and his scruples, do not eat it. [29] I do not say 'your' scruples, but 'his.' For why should the freedom that I claim be condemned by the scruples of another? [30] If, for my part, I take the food thankfully, why should I be abused for eating that for which I give thanks? [31] Whether, then, you eat or drink or whatever you do, do everything to the honour of God. [32] Do not cause offence either to Jews or Greeks or to the Church of God; [33] For I, also, try to please everybody in everything, not seeking my own advantage, but that of men in general, that they may be saved.

Chapter 11

[1] Imitate me, as I myself imitate Christ. [2] I praise you, indeed, because you never forget me, and are keeping my injunctions in mind, exactly as I laid them upon you. [3] But I am anxious that you should understand that the Christ is the Head of every man, that man is the Head of woman, and that God is the Head of the Christ. [4] Any man who keeps his head covered, when praying or preaching in public, dishonours him who is his Head; [5] While any woman, who prays or preaches in public bare-headed, dishonours him who is her Head; for that is to make herself like one of the shameless women who shave their heads. [6] Indeed, if a woman does not keep her head covered, she may as well cut her hair short. But, since to cut her hair short, or shave it off, marks her as one of the shameless women, let her keep her head covered. [7] A man ought not to have his head covered, for he has been from the beginning 'the likeness of God' and the reflection of his glory, but woman is the reflection of man's glory. [8] For it was not man who was taken from woman, but woman who was taken from man. [9] Besides, man was not created for the sake of woman, but woman for the sake of man. [10] And, therefore, a woman ought to wear on her head a symbol of her subjection, because of the presence of the angels. [11] Still, when in union with the Lord, woman is not independent of man, or man of woman; [12] For just as woman came from man, so man comes by means of woman; and all things come from God. [13] Judge for yourselves. Is it fitting that a woman should pray to God in public with her head uncovered? [14] Does not nature herself teach us that, while for a man to wear his hair long is degrading to him, [15] A woman's long hair is her glory? Her hair has been given her to serve as a covering. [16] If,

however, any one still thinks it right to contest the point-well, we have no such custom, nor have the Churches of God.

[17] In giving directions on the next subject, I cannot praise you; because your meetings do more harm than good. [18] To begin with, I hear you and, to some extent, I believe it. [19] Indeed, there must be actual parties among you, for so only will the men of real worth become known. [20] When you meet together, as I understand, it is not possible to eat the Lord's Supper; [21] For, as you eat, each of you tries to secure his own supper first, with the result that one has too little to eat, and another has too much to drink! [22] Have you no houses in which you can eat and drink? Or are you trying to show your contempt for the Church of God, and to humiliate the poor? What can I say to you? Shall I praise you? In this matter I cannot praise you.

[23] For I myself received from the Lord the account which I have in turn given to you-how the Lord Jesus, on the very night of his betrayal, took some bread, [24] And, after saying the thanksgiving, broke it and said "This is my own body given on your behalf. Do this in memory of me." [25] And in the same way with the cup, after supper, saying "This cup is the new Covenant made by my blood. Do this, whenever you drink it, in memory of me." [26] For whenever you eat this bread and drink the cup, you proclaim the Lord's death-till he comes. [27] Therefore, whoever eats the bread, or drinks the Lord's cup, in an irreverent spirit, will have to answer for an offence against the Lord's body and blood. [28] Let each man look into his own heart, and only then eat of the bread and drink from the cup. [29] For the man who eats and drinks brings a judgement upon himself by his eating and drinking, when he does not discern the body. [30] That is why so many among you are weak and ill, and why some are sleeping. [31] But, if we judged ourselves rightly, we should not be judged. [32] Yet, in being judged by the Lord, we are undergoing discipline, so that we may not have judgement passed upon us with the rest of the world. [33] Therefore, my Brothers, when you meet together to eat the Supper, wait for one another. [34] If a man is hungry, let him eat at home, so that your meetings may not bring a judgement upon you. The other details I will settle when I come.

Chapter 12

[1] In the next place, Brothers, I do not want you to be ignorant

about spiritual gifts. 2 You know that there was a time when you
were Gentiles, going astray after idols that could not speak, just as
you happened to be led. 3 Therefore I tell you plainly that no one
who speaks under the influence of the Spirit of God says 'JESUS
IS ACCURSED,' and that no one can say 'JESUS IS LORD,' except
under the influence of the Holy Spirit. 4 Gifts differ, but the Spirit
is the same; 5 Ways of serving differ, yet the Master is the same; 6
Results differ, yet the God who brings about every result is in every
case the same. 7 To each man there is given spiritual illumination for
the general good. 8 To one is given the power to speak with wisdom
through the Spirit; to another the power to speak with knowledge,
due to the same Spirit; 9 To another faith by the same Spirit;
to another power to cure diseases by the one Spirit; to another
supernatural powers; 10 To another the gift of preaching; to another
the gift of distinguishing between true and false inspiration; to
another varieties of the gift of 'tongues'; to another the power to
interpret 'tongues.' 11 All these result from one and the same Spirit,
who distributes his gifts to each individually as he wills.

12 For just as the human body is one whole, and yet has many
parts, and all its parts, many though they are, form but one body,
so it is with the Christ; 13 For it was by one Spirit that we were all
baptized to form one Body, whether Jews or Greeks, slaves or free
men, and were all imbued with one Spirit. 14 The human body, I
repeat, consists not of one part, but of many. 15 If the foot says 'Since
I am not a hand, I do not belong to the body,' it does not on that
account cease to belong to the body. 16 Or if the ear says 'Since I am
not an eye, I do not belong to the body,' it does not on that account
cease to belong to the body. 17 If all the body were an eye, where
would the hearing be? If it were all hearing, where would the sense
of smell be? 18 But in fact God has placed each individual part just
where he thought fit in the body. 19 If, however, they all made up
only one part, where would the body be? 20 But in fact, although it
has many parts, there is only one body. 21 The eye cannot say to the
hand 'I do not need you,' nor, again, the head to the feet 'I do not
need you.' 22 No! Those parts of the body that seem naturally the
weaker are indispensable; 23 And those parts which we deem less
honourable we surround with special honour; and our ungraceful
parts receive a special grace which our graceful parts do not require.
24 Yes, God has so constructed the body—by giving a special honour

to the part that lacks it- 25 As to secure that there should be no
disunion in the body, but that the parts should show the same care
for one another. 26 If one part suffers, all the others suffer with it,
and if one part has honour done it, all the others share its joy.

27 Together you are the Body of Christ, and individually its
parts. 28 In the Church God has appointed, first, Apostles, secondly
Preachers, thirdly Teachers; then he has given supernatural powers,
then power to cure diseases, aptness for helping others, capacity
to govern, varieties of the gift of 'tongues.' 29 Can every one be an
Apostle? can every one be a Preacher? can every one be a Teacher?
can every one have supernatural powers? 30 Can every one have
power to cure diseases? can every one speak in 'tongues'? can every
one interpret them? 31 Strive for the greater gifts. Yet I can still show
you a way beyond all comparison the best.

Chapter 13

1 Though I speak in the 'tongues' of men, or even of angels,
yet have not Love, I have become mere echoing brass, or a clanging
cymbal! 2 Even though I have the gift of preaching, and fathom
all hidden truths and all the depths of knowledge; even though
I have such faith as might move mountains, yet have not Love, I
am nothing! 3 Even though I dole my substance to the poor, even
though I sacrifice my body, that I may boast, yet have not Love, it
avails me nothing!

4 Love is long-suffering, and kind; Love is never envious,
never boastful, never conceited, never behaves unbecomingly; 5
Love is never self-seeking, never provoked, never reckons up her
wrongs; 6 Love never rejoices at evil, but rejoices in the triumph of
Truth; 7 Love bears with all things, every trustful, ever hopeful, ever
patient.

8 Love never fails. But, whether it be the gift of preaching,
it will be done with; whether it be the gift of 'tongues,' it will
cease; whether it be knowledge, it, too, will be done with. 9 For our
knowledge is incomplete, and our preaching is incomplete, 10 But,
when the Perfect has come, that which is incomplete will be done
with. 11 When I was a child, I talked as a child, I felt as a child, I
reasoned as a child; now that I am a man, I have done with childish
ways. 12 As yet we see, in a mirror, dimly, but then-face to face! As
yet my knowledge is incomplete, but then I shall know in full, as I

have been fully known. 13 Meanwhile Faith, Hope, and Love endure-
these three, but the greatest of these is Love.

Chapter 14

1 Seek this Love earnestly, and strive for spiritual gifts,
above all for the gift of preaching. 2 He who, when speaking, uses
the gift of 'tongues' is speaking, not to men, but to God, for no one
understands him; yet in spirit he is speaking of hidden truths. 3 But
he who preaches is speaking to his fellow men words that will build
up faith, and give them comfort and encouragement. 4 He who,
when speaking, uses the gift of 'tongues' builds up his own faith,
while he who preaches builds up the faith of the Church. 5 Now I
want you all to speak in 'tongues,' but much more I wish that you
should preach. A Preacher is of more account than he who speaks
in 'tongues,' unless he interprets his words, so that the faith of the
Church may be built up.

6 This being so, Brothers, what good shall I do you, if I
come to you and speak in 'tongues,' unless my words convey
some revelation, or knowledge, or take the form of preaching or
teaching? 7 Even with inanimate things, such as a flute or a harp,
though they produce sounds, yet unless the notes are quite distinct,
how can the tune played on the flute or the harp be recognized?
8 If the bugle sounds a doubtful call, who will prepare for battle?
9 And so with you; unless, in using the gift of 'tongues,' you utter
intelligible words, how can what you say be understood? You will be
speaking to the winds! 10 There is, for instance, a certain number of
different languages in the world, and not one of them fails to convey
meaning. 11 If, however, I do not happen to know the language, I
shall be a foreigner to those who speak it, and they will be foreigners
to me. 12 And so with you; since your are striving for spiritual gifts,
be eager to excel in such as will build up the faith of the Church.
13 Therefore let him who, when speaking, uses the gift of 'tongues'
pray for ability to interpret them. 14 If, when praying, I use the gift of
'tongues,' my spirit indeed prays, but my mind is a blank.

15 What, then, is my conclusion? Simply this-I will pray with
my spirit, but with my mind as well; I will sing with my spirit, but
with my mind as well. 16 If you bless God with your spirit only, how
can the man in the congregation who is without your gift say 'Amen'
to your thanksgiving? He does not know what you are saying! 17

Your thanksgiving may be excellent, but the other is not helped by
it. 18 Thank God, I use the gift of 'tongues' more than any of you. 19
But at a meeting of the Church I would rather speak five words with
my mind, and so teach others, than ten thousand words when using
the gift of 'tongues.' 20 Brothers, do not show yourselves children
in understanding. In wickedness be infants, but in understanding
show yourselves men.

21 It is said in the Law-'In strange tongues and by the lips
of strangers will I speak to this people, but even then they will not
listen to me, says the Lord.' 22 Therefore the gift of the 'tongues' is
intended as a sign, not for those who believe in Christ, but for those
who do not, while the gift of preaching is intended as a sign, not for
those who do not believe in Christ, but for those who do. 23 So, when
the whole Church meets, if all present use the gift of 'tongues,' and
some men who are without the gift, or who are unbelievers, come
in, will not they say that you are mad? 24 While, if all those present
use the gift of preaching, and an unbeliever, or a man without the
gift, comes in, he is convinced of his sinfulness by them all, he is
called to account by them all; 25 The secrets of his heart are revealed,
and then, throwing himself on his face, he will worship God, and
declare 'God is indeed among you!'

26 What do I suggest, then, Brothers? Whenever you meet
for worship, each of you comes, either with a hymn, or a lesson, or a
revelation, or the gift of 'tongues,' or the interpretation of them; let
everything be directed to the building up of faith. 27 If any of you use
the gift of 'tongues,' not more than two, or at the most three, should
do so-each speaking in his turn-and some one should interpret
them. 28 If there is no one able to interpret what is said, they should
remain silent at the meeting of the Church, and speak to themselves
and to God. 29 Of preachers two or three should speak, and the rest
should weigh well what is said. 30 But, if some revelation is made to
another person as he sits there, the first speaker should stop. 31 For
you can all preach in turn, so that all may learn some lesson and all
receive encouragement. 32 (The spirit that moves the preachers is
within the preachers' control; 33 For God is not a God of disorder,
but of peace.) This custom prevails in all the Churches of Christ's
People.

34 At the meetings of the Church married women should
remain silent, for they are not allowed to speak in public; they

should take a subordinate place, as the Law itself directs. 35 If they want information on any point, they should ask their husbands about it at home; for it is unbecoming for a married woman to speak at a meeting of the Church.

36 What! did God's Message to the world originate with you? or did it find its way to none but you? 37 If any one thinks that he has the gift of preaching or any other spiritual gift, let him recognize that what I am now saying to you is a command from the Lord. 38 Any one who ignores it may be ignored. 39 Therefore, my Brothers, strive for the gift of preaching, and yet do not forbid speaking in 'tongues.' 40 Let everything be done in a proper and orderly manner.

Chapter 15

1 Next, Brothers, I would remind you of the Good News which I told you, and which you received-the Good News on which you have taken your stand, 2 And by means of which you are being saved. I would remind you of the very words that I used in telling it to you, since you are still holding fast to it, and since it was not in vain that you became believers in Christ. 3 For at the very beginning of my teaching I gave you the account which I had myself received-that Christ died for our sins (as the Scriptures had foretold), 4 That he was buried, that on the third day he was raised (as the Scriptures had foretold), 5 And that he appeared to Kephas, and then to the Twelve. 6 After that, he appeared to more than five hundred of our Brothers at one time, most of whom are still alive, though some have gone to their rest. 7 After that, he appeared to James, and then to all the Apostles. 8 Last of all, he appeared even to me, who am, as it were, the abortion. 9 For I am the meanest of the Apostles, I who am unworthy of the name of 'Apostle,' because I persecuted the Church of God. 10 But it is through the love of God that I am what I am, and the love that he showed me has not been wasted. No, I have toiled harder than any of them, and yet it was not I, but the love of God working with me. 11 Whether, then, it was I or whether it was they, this we proclaim, and this you believed.

12 Now, if it is proclaimed of Christ that he has been raised from the dead, how is it that some of you say that there is no such thing as a resurrection of the dead? 13 But, if there is no such thing as a resurrection of the dead, then even Christ has not been raised; 14 And, if Christ has not been raised, then our proclamation is

without meaning, and our faith without meaning also! 15 Yes, and we are being proved to have borne false testimony about God; for we testified of God that he raised the Christ, whom he did not raise, if, indeed, the dead do not rise! 16 For, if the dead do not rise, then even Christ himself has not been raised, 17 And, if Christ has not been raised, your faith is folly-your sins are on you still! 18 Yes, and they, who have passed to their rest in union with Christ, perished! 19 If all that we have done has been to place our hope in Christ for this life, then we of all men are the most to be pitied.

20 But, in truth, Christ has been raised from the dead, the first-fruits of those who are at rest. 21 For, since through a man there is death, so, too, through a man there is a resurrection of the dead. 22 For, as through union with Adam all men die, so through union with the Christ will all be made to live. 23 But each in his proper order-Christ the first-fruits; afterwards, at his Coming, those who belong to the Christ. 24 Then will come the end-when he surrenders the Kingdom to his God and Father, having overthrown all other rule and all other authority and power. 25 For he must reign until God 'has put all his enemies under his feet.' 26 The last enemy to be overthrown is death; 27 For God has placed all things under Christ's feet. (But, when it is said that all things have been placed under Christ, it is plain that God is excepted who placed everything under him.) 28 And, when everything has been placed under him, the Son will place himself under God who placed everything under him, that God may be all in all! 29 Again, what good will they be doing who are baptized on behalf of the dead? If it is true that the dead do not rise, why are people baptized on their behalf? 30 Why, too, do we risk our lives every hour? 31 Daily I face death-I swear it, Brothers, by the pride in you that I feel through my union with Christ Jesus, our Lord. 32 If with only human hopes I had fought in the arena at Ephesus, what should I have gained by it? If the dead do not rise, then-'Let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we shall die'! 33 Do not be deceived. 'Good character is marred by evil company.' 34 Awake to a righteous life, and cease to sin. There are some who have no true knowledge of God. I speak in this way to shame you.

35 Some one, however, may ask 'How do the dead rise? and in what body will they come?' 36 You foolish man! The seed you yourself sow does not come to life, unless it dies! 37 And when you sow, you sow not the body that will be, but a mere grain-perhaps of

wheat, or something else. 38 God gives it the body that he pleases-to
each seed its special body. 39 All forms of life are not the same; there
is one for men, another for beasts, another for birds, and another
for fishes. 40 There are heavenly bodies, and earthly bodies; but
the beauty of the heavenly bodies is not the beauty of the earthly.
41 There is a beauty of the sun, and a beauty of the moon, and a
beauty of the stars; for even star differs from star in beauty. 42 It is
the same with the resurrection of the dead. Sown a mortal body, it
rises immortal; sown disfigured, it rises beautiful; 43 Sown weak,
it rises strong; sown a human body, it rises a spiritual body. 44 As
surely as there is a human body, there is also a spiritual body. 45
That is what is meant by the words-'Adam, the first man, became
a human being'; the last Adam became a Life-giving spirit. 46 That
which comes first is not the spiritual, but the human; afterwards
comes the spiritual; 47 The first man was from the dust of the earth;
the second man from Heaven. 48 Those who are of the dust are like
him who came from the dust; and those who are of Heaven are like
him who came from Heaven. 49 And as we have borne the likeness
of him who came from the dust, so let us bear the likeness of him
who came from Heaven. 50 This I say, Brothers-Flesh and blood can
have no share in the Kingdom of God, nor can the perishable share
the imperishable.

51 Listen, I will tell you God's hidden purpose! We shall not
all have passed to our rest, but we shall all be transformed-in a
moment, in the twinkling of an eye, 52 At the last trumpet-call; for
the trumpet will sound, and the dead will rise immortal, and we,
also, shall be transformed. 53 For this perishable body of ours must
put on an imperishable form, and this dying body a deathless form.
54 And, when this dying body has put on its deathless form, then
indeed will the words of Scripture come true- 55 'Death has been
swallowed up in victory! Where, O Death, is thy victory? Where, O
Death, is thy sting?' 56 It is sin that gives death its sting, and it is the
Law that gives sin its power. 57 But thanks be to God, who gives us
the victory, through Jesus Christ, our Lord.

58 Therefore, my dear Brothers, stand firm, unshaken,
always diligent in the Lord's work, for you know that, in union with
him, your toil is not in vain.

Chapter 16

1 With reference to the Collection for Christ's People, I want
you to follow the instructions that I gave to the Churches in Galatia.
2 On the first day of every week each of you should put by what he
can afford, so that no collections need be made after I have come. 3
On my arrival, I will send any persons, whom you may authorize by
letter, to carry your gift to Jerusalem; 4 And, if it appears to be worth
while for me to go also, they shall go with me.

5 I will come to you as soon as I have been through
Macedonia—for I am going through Macedonia- 6 And I shall
probably make some stay with you or, perhaps, remain for the
winter, so that you may yourselves send me on my way, wherever I
may be going. 7 I do not propose to pay you a visit in passing now,
for I hope to stay with you for some time, if the Lord permits. 8 I
intend, however, staying at Ephesus till the Festival at the close of
the Harvest; 9 For a great opening for active work has presented
itself, and there are many opponents.

10 If Timothy comes, take care that he has no cause for feeling
anxious while he is with you. He is doing the Master's work no less
than I am. 11 No one, therefore, should slight him. See him safely on
his way to me, for I am expecting him with some of our Brothers. 12
As for our Brother Apollos, I have often urged him to go to you with
the others. He has, however, been very unwilling to do so as yet; but
he will go as soon as he finds a good opportunity.

13 Be watchful; stand firm in your faith; show yourselves
men; be strong. 14 Let everything you do be done in a loving spirit.
15 I have another request to make of you, Brothers. You remember
Stephanas and his household, and that they were the first-fruits
gathered in from Greece, and set themselves to serve Christ's
People. 16 I want you, on your part, to show deference to such men
as these, as well as to every fellow labourer and earnest worker. 17
I am glad Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus have come, for
they have made up for your absence; 18 They have cheered my heart,
and your hearts also. Recognize the worth of such men as these.

19 The Churches in Roman Asia send you their greetings.
Aquila and Prisca and the Church that meets at their house
send you many Christian greetings. 20 All our brothers send you
greetings. Greet one another with a sacred kiss. 21 I, Paul, add this

greeting in my own handwriting. [22] Accursed be any one who has no love for the Lord. THE LORD IS COMING. [23] May the blessing of the Lord Jesus be with you. [24] My love to all of you who are in union with Christ Jesus.

The Second Letter of Paul to the Corinthians

Chapter 1

[1] To the Church of God in Corinth, and to all Christ's People throughout Greece, from Paul, an Apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God, and from Timothy, a Brother. [2] May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace.

[3] Blessed is the God and Father of Jesus Christ our Lord, the all-merciful Father, the God ever ready to console, [4] Who consoles us in all our troubles, so that we may be able to console those who are in any trouble with the consolation that we ourselves receive from him. [5] It is true that we have our full share of the sufferings of the Christ, but through the Christ we have also our full share of consolation. [6] If we meet with trouble, it is for the sake of your consolation and salvation; and, if we find consolation, it is for the sake of the consolation that you will experience when you are called to endure the very sufferings that we ourselves are enduring;

[7] And our hope for you remains unshaken. We know that, as you are sharing our sufferings, you will also share our consolation. [8] We want you, Brothers, to know that, in the troubles which befell us in Roman Asia, we were burdened altogether beyond our strength, so much so that we even despaired of life. [9] Indeed, we had the presentiment that we must die, so that we might rely, not on ourselves, but on God who raises the dead. [10] And from so imminent a death God delivered us, and will deliver us again; for in him we have placed our hopes of future deliverance, while you, also, help us by your prayers. [11] And then many lips will give thanks on our behalf for the blessing granted us in answer to many prayers.

[12] Indeed, our main ground for satisfaction is this—Our conscience tells us that our conduct in the world, and still more in our relations with you, was marked by a purity of motive and a sincerity that were inspired by God, and was based, not on worldly policy, but on the help of God. [13] We never write anything to you other than what you will acknowledge to the very end— [14] And, indeed, you have already partly acknowledged it about us—that you have a right to be proud of us, as we shall be proud of you, on the

Day of our Lord Jesus.

15 With this conviction in my mind, I planned to come to
see you first, so that your pleasure might be doubled— 16 To visit
you both on my way to Macedonia, and to come to you again on
my return from Macedonia, and then to get you to send me on my
way into Judea. 17 As this was my plan, where, pray, did I show any
fickleness of purpose? Or do you think that my plans are formed
on mere impulse, so that in the same breath I say 'Yes' and 'No'?
18 As God is true, the Message that we brought you does not waver
between 'Yes' and 'No'! 19 The Son of God, Christ Jesus, whom
we—Silas, Timothy, and I—proclaimed among you, never wavered
between 'Yes' and 'No.' With him it has always been 'Yes.' 20 For,
many as were the promises of God, in Christ is the 'Yes' that fulfils
them. Therefore, through Christ again, let the 'Amen' rise, through
us, to the glory of God. 21 God who brings us, with you, into close
union with Christ, and who consecrated us, 22 Also set his seal
upon us, and gave us his Spirit in our hearts as a pledge of future
blessings. 23 But, as my life shall answer for it, I call God to witness
that it was to spare you that I deferred my visit to Corinth. 24 I do
not mean that we are to dictate to you with regard to your faith; on
the contrary, we work with you for your true happiness; indeed, it is
through your faith that you are standing firm.

Chapter 2

1 For my own sake, as well, I decided not to pay you another
painful visit. 2 If it is I who cause you pain, why, who is there to
cheer me, except the very person whom I am paining? 3 So I wrote
as I did, for fear that, if I had come, I should have been pained by
those who ought to have made me glad; for I felt sure that it was
true of you all that my joy was in every case yours also. 4 I wrote to
you in sore trouble and distress of heart and with many tears, not to
give you pain, but to let you see how intense a love I have for you.

5 Now whoever has caused the pain has not so much pained
me, as he has, to some extent—not to be too severe—pained
every one of you. 6 The man to whom I refer has been sufficiently
punished by the penalty inflicted by the majority of you; 7 So that
now you must take the opposite course, and forgive and encourage
him, or else he may be overwhelmed by the intensity of his pain.
8 So I entreat you to assure him of your love. 9 I had this further

object, also, in what I wrote—to ascertain whether you might be
relied upon to be obedient in everything. 10 When you forgive a man
anything, I forgive him, too. Indeed, for my part, whatever I have
forgiven (if I have had to forgive anything), I have forgiven for your
sakes, in the presence of Christ, 11 So as to prevent Satan from taking
advantage of us; for we are not ignorant of his devices.

12 When I went to the district round Troas to tell the Good
News of the Christ, even though there was an opening for serving
the Master, 13 I could get no peace of mind because I failed to find
Titus, my Brother; so I took leave of the people there, and went on
to Macedonia. 14 All thanks to God, who, through our union with the
Christ, leads us in one continual triumph, and uses us to spread the
sweet odour of the knowledge of him in every place. 15 For we are
the fragrance of Christ ascending to God—both among those who
are in the path of Salvation and among those who are in the path to
Ruin. 16 To the latter we are an odour which arises from death and
tells of Death; to the former an odour which arises from life and
tells of Life. But who is equal to such a task? 17 Unlike many people,
we are not in the habit of making profit out of God's Message; but
in all sincerity, and bearing God's commission, we speak before him
in union with Christ.

Chapter 3

1 Are we beginning to commend ourselves again? Or are we
like some who need letters of commendation to you, or from you?
2 You yourselves are our letter—a letter written on our hearts, and
one which everybody can read and understand. 3 All can see that
you are a letter from Christ delivered by us, a letter written, not with
ink, but with the Spirit of the Living God, not on 'tablets of stone,'
but on 'tablets of human hearts.' 4 This, then, is the confidence in
regard to God that we have gained through the Christ. 5 I do not
mean that we are fit to form any judgement by ourselves, as if on
our own authority;

6 Our fitness comes from God, who himself made us fit to
be ministers of a New Covenant, of which the substance is, not a
written Law, but a Spirit. For the written Law means Death, but the
Spirit gives Life. 7 If the system of religion which involved Death,
embodied in a written Law and engraved on stones, began amid
such glory, that the Israelites were unable to gaze at the face of

Moses on account of its glory, though it was but a passing glory, [8] Will not the religion that confers the Spirit have still greater glory? [9] For, if there was a glory in the religion that involved condemnation, far greater is the glory of the religion that confers righteousness! [10] Indeed, that which then had glory has lost its glory, because of the glory which surpasses it. [11] And, if that which was to pass away was attended with glory, far more will that which is to endure be surrounded with glory!

[12] With such a hope as this, we speak with all plainness; [13] Unlike Moses, who covered his face with a veil, to prevent the Israelites from gazing at the disappearance of what was passing away. [14] But their minds were slow to learn. Indeed, to this very day, at the public reading of the Old Covenant, the same veil remains unlifted; only for those who are in union with Christ does it pass away. [15] But, even to this day, whenever Moses is read, a veil lies on their hearts. [16] 'Yet, whenever a man turns to the Lord, the veil is removed.' [17] And the 'Lord' is the Spirit, and, where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom. [18] And all of us, with faces from which the veil is lifted, seeing, as if reflected in a mirror, the glory of the Lord, are being transformed into his likeness, from glory to glory, as it is given by the Lord, the Spirit.

Chapter 4

[1] Therefore, since it is by God's mercy that we are engaged in this ministry, we do not lose heart. [2] No, we have renounced the secrecy prompted by shame, refusing to adopt crafty ways, or to tamper with God's Message, and commending ourselves to every man's conscience, in the sight of God, by our exhibition of the Truth. [3] And, even if the Good News that we bring is veiled, it is veiled only in the case of those who are on the path to Ruin— [4] Men whose minds have been blinded by the God of this Age, unbelievers as they are, so that the light from the Good News of the glory of the Christ, who is the very incarnation of God, should not shine for them. [5] (For it is not ourselves that we proclaim, but Christ Jesus, as Lord, and ourselves as your servants for Jesus' sake.) [6] Indeed, the same God who said 'Out of darkness light shall shine,' has shone in upon our hearts, so that we should bring out into the light the knowledge of the glory of God, seen in the face of Christ. [7] This treasure we have in these earthen vessels, that its all-prevailing power may be seen to

come from God, and not to be our own.

[8] Though hard pressed on every side, we are never hemmed in; through perplexed, never driven to despair; [9] Though pursued, never abandoned; though struck down, never killed! [10] We always bear on our bodies the marks of the death that Jesus died, so that the Life also of Jesus may be exhibited in our bodies. [11] Indeed, we who still live are continually being given over to death for Jesus' sake, so that the Life also of Jesus may be exhibited in our mortal nature. [12] And so, while death is at work within us, Life is at work within you. [13] But, in the same spirit of faith as that expressed in the words—'I believed, and therefore I spoke,' we, also believe, and therefore speak. [14] For we know that he who raised the Lord Jesus will raise us also with him, and will bring us, with you, into his presence. [15] For all this is for your sakes, that the loving-kindness of God, spreading from heart to heart, may cause yet more hearts to overflow with thanksgiving, to his glory. [16] Therefore, as I said, we do not lose heart. No, even though outwardly we are wasting away, yet inwardly we are being renewed day by day. [17] The light burden of our momentary trouble is preparing for us, in measure transcending thought, a weight of imperishable glory; [18] We, all the while, gazing not on what is seen, but on what is unseen; for what is seen is transient, but what is unseen is imperishable.

Chapter 5

[1] For we know that if our tent—that earthly body which is now our home—is taken down, we have a house of God's building, a home not made by hands, imperishable, in Heaven. [2] Even while in our present body we sigh, longing to put over it our heavenly dwelling, [3] Sure that, when we have put it on, we shall never be found discarnate. [4] For we who are in this 'tent' sigh under our burden, unwilling to take it off, yet wishing to put our heavenly body over it, so that all that is mortal may be absorbed in Life. [5] And he who has prepared us for this change is God, who has also given us his Spirit as a pledge. [6] Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, while our home is in the body, we are absent from our home with the Lord. [7] For we guide our lives by faith, and not by what we see. [8] And in this confidence we would gladly leave our home in the body, and make our home with the Lord. [9] Therefore, whether in our home or absent from our home, our one ambition is

to please him. [10] For at the Bar of the Christ we must all appear in our true characters, that each may reap the results of the life which he has lived in the body, in accordance with his actions—whether good or worthless. [11] Therefore, because we know the fear inspired by the Lord, it is true that we are trying to win men, but our motives are plain to God; and I hope that in your inmost hearts they are plain to you also.

[12] We are not "commending ourselves" again to you, but rather are giving you cause for pride in us, so that you may have an answer ready for those who pride themselves on appearances and not on character. [13] For, if we were "beside ourselves," it was in God's service! If we are not in our senses, it is in yours! [14] It is the love of the Christ which compels us, when we reflect that, as one died for all, therefore all died; [15] And that he died for all, so that the living should no longer live for themselves, but for him who died and rose for them.

[16] For ourselves, then, from this time forward, we refuse to regard any one from the world's standpoint. Even if we once thought of Christ from the standpoint of the world, yet now we do so no longer. [17] Therefore, if any one is in union with Christ, he is a new being! His old life has passed away; a new life has begun! [18] But all this is the work of God, who reconciled us to himself through Christ, and gave us the Ministry of Reconciliation— [19] To proclaim that God, in Christ, was reconciling the world to himself, not reckoning men's offences against them, and that he had entrusted us with the Message of this reconciliation. [20] It is, then, on Christ's behalf that we are acting as ambassadors, God, as it were, appealing to you through us. We implore you on Christ's behalf—Be reconciled to God. [21] Him who never knew sin God made to be Sin, on our behalf; so that we, through union with him, might become the Righteousness of God.

Chapter 6

[1] Therefore, as God's fellow-workers, we also appeal to you not to receive his loving-kindness in vain. [2] For he says—'At the time for acceptance I listened to thee, And on the day of deliverance I helped thee.' Now is the time for acceptance! Now is the day of deliverance! [3] Never do we put an obstacle in any one's way, that no fault may be found with our ministry. [4] No, we are trying to

commend ourselves under all circumstances, as God's ministers should—in many an hour of endurance, in troubles, in hardships, in difficulties, [5] In floggings, in imprisonments, in riots, in toils, in sleepless nights, in fastings; [6] By purity, by knowledge, by patience, by kindliness, by holiness of spirit, by unfeigned love; [7] By the Message of Truth, and by the power of God; by the weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left; [8] Amid honour and disrepute, amid slander and praise; regarded as deceivers, yet proved to be true; [9] As unknown, yet well-known; as at death's door, yet, see, we are living; as chastised, yet not killed; [10] As saddened, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet enriching many; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things!

[11] We have been speaking freely to you, men of Corinth; we have opened our heart; [12] There is room there for you, yet there is not room, in your love, for us. [13] Can you not in return—I appeal to you as I should to children—open your hearts to us? [14] Do not enter into inconsistent relations with those who reject the Faith. For what partnership can there be between righteousness and lawlessness? or what has light to do with darkness? [15] What harmony can there be between Christ and Belial? or what can those who accept the Faith have in common with those who reject it? [16] What agreement can thee be between a temple of God and idols? And we are a temple of the Living God. That is what God meant when he said—'I will dwell among them, and walk among them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. [17] Therefore "Come out from among the nations, and separate yourselves from them," says the Lord, "and touch nothing impure; And I will welcome you; [18] And I will be a father to you, and you shall be my sons and daughters," says the Lord, the Ruler of all.'

Chapter 7

[1] With these promises, dear friends, let us purify ourselves from everything that pollutes either body or spirit, and, in deepest reverence for God, aim at perfect holiness. [2] Make room for us in your hearts. In no instance have we ever wronged, or harmed, or taken advantage of, any one. [3] I am not saying this to condemn you. Indeed, I have already said that you are in our very heart, to live and die together. [4] I have the utmost confidence in you; I am always boasting about you. I am full of encouragement and, in spite of all

our troubles, my heart is overflowing with happiness.

5 Ever since we reached Macedonia, we have had no rest in
body or mind; on every side there have been troubles—conflicts
without, anxieties within. 6 But God, who encourages the downcast,
has encouraged us by the arrival of Titus. 7 And it is not only by
his arrival that we are encouraged, but also by the encouragement
which he received from you; for he tells us of your strong affection,
your penitence, and your zeal on my behalf—so that I am happier
still. 8 For, though I caused you sorrow by my letter, I do not regret
it. Even if I were inclined to regret it—for I see that my letter did
cause you sorrow though only for a time— 9 I am glad now; not
because of the sorrow it caused you, but because your sorrow
brought you to repentance. For it was God's will that you should
feel sorrow, in order that you should not suffer loss in any way at
our hands. 10 For, when sorrow is in accordance with God's will, it
results in a repentance leading to Salvation, and which will never
be regretted. The sure result of the sorrow that the world knows
is Death. 11 For see what results that other sorrow—sorrow in
accordance with God's will—has had in your case. What earnestness
it produced! what explanations! what strong feeling! what alarm!
what longing! what eagerness! what readiness to punish! You have
proved yourselves altogether free from guilt in that matter.

12 So, then, even though I did write to you, it was not for the
sake of the wrong-doer, or of the man who was wronged, but to
make you conscious, in the sight of God, of your own earnest care
for us. And it is this that has encouraged us. 13 In addition to the
encouragement that this gave us, we were made far happier still by
the happiness of Titus for his heart has been cheered by you all. 14
Although I have been boasting a little to him about you, you did not
put me to shame; but, just as every thing we had said to you was
true, so our boasting to Titus about you has also proved to be the
truth. 15 And his affection for you is all the greater, as he remembers
the deference that you all showed him, and recalls how you received
him with anxious care. 16 I am glad that I can feel perfect confidence
in you.

Chapter 8

1 We would remind you, Brothers, of the love that God has
shown to the Churches in Macedonia— 2 How, tired though they

were by many a trouble, their overflowing happiness, and even their
deep poverty, resulted in a flood of generosity. 3 I can bear witness
that to the full extent of their power, and even beyond their power,
spontaneously, 4 And with many an appeal to us for permission,
they showed their love, and contributed their share towards the
fund for their fellow-Christians. 5 And that, not only in the way we
had expected; but first they gave themselves to the Lord, and to us
also, in accordance with God's will. 6 And this led us to urge upon
Titus that, as he had started the work for you, he should also see to
the completion of this expression of your love.

7 And, remembering how you excel in everything—in faith,
in teaching, in knowledge, in unfailing earnestness, and in the
affection that we have awakened in you—I ask you to excel also
in this expression of your love. 8 I am not laying a command upon
you, but I am making use of the earnestness shown by others to
test the genuineness of your affection. 9 For you do not forget the
loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ—how that for your sakes,
although he was rich, he became poor, so that you also might
become rich through his poverty. 10 I am only making suggestions
on this matter; for this is the best course for you, since you were a
year before others, not only in taking action, but also in showing
your readiness to do so. 11 And now I want you to complete the
work, so that its completion may correspond with your willing
readiness—in proportion, of course, to your means. 12 For, where
there is willingness, a man's gift is valued by its comparison with
what he has, and not with what he has not. 13 For our object is not
to give relief to others and bring distress on you, but, by equalizing
matters, to secure that, 14 On the present occasion, what you can
spare may supply their need, so that at another time what they can
spare may supply your need, and thus matters may be equalized. 15
As Scripture says—'The man who had much had nothing over, and
the man who had little did not lack!'

16 I thank God for inspiring Titus with the same keen interest
in your welfare that I have; 17 For Titus has responded to my appeals
and, in his great earnestness, is starting to go to you of his own
accord. 18 We are sending with him the Brother whose fame in the
service of the Good News has spread through all the Churches;
19 And not only that, but he has been elected by the Churches to
accompany us on our journey, in Keynesian[9] with this expression

of your love, which we are personally administering to the honour of the Lord, and to show our deep interest. 20 What we are specially guarding against is that any fault should be found with us in regard to our administration of this charitable fund; 21 For we are trying to make arrangements which shall be right, not only in the eyes of the Lord, but also in the eyes of men. 22 We are also sending with them another of our Brothers, whose earnestness we have many a time proved in many ways, and whom we now find made even more earnest by his great confidence in you. 23 If I must say anything about Titus, he is my intimate companion, and he shares my work for you; if it is our Brothers, they are delegates of the Churches, an honour to Christ. 24 Show them, therefore—so that the Churches may see it—the proof of your affection, and the ground for our boasting to them about you.

Chapter 9

1 With reference, indeed, to the Fund for your fellow-Christians, it is quite superfluous for me to say anything to you. 2 I know, of course, your willingness to help, and I am always boasting of it to the Macedonians. I tell them that you in Greece have been ready for a year past; and it was really your zeal that stimulated most of them. 3 So my reason for sending our Brothers is to prevent what we said about you from proving, in this particular matter, an empty boast, and to enable you to be as well prepared as I have been saying that you are. 4 Otherwise, if any Macedonians were to come with me, and find you unprepared, we—to say nothing of you—should feel ashamed of our present confidence. 5 Therefore I think it necessary to urge the Brothers to go to you in advance, and to complete the arrangements for the gift, which you have already promised, so that it may be ready, as a gift, before I come, and not look as if it were being given under pressure.

6 Remember the saying—'Scanty sowing, scanty harvest; plentiful sowing, plentiful harvest.' 7 Let every one give as he has determined before hand, not grudgingly or under compulsion; for God loves 'a cheerful giver.' 8 God has power to shower all kinds of blessings upon you, so that, having, under all circumstances and on all occasions, all that you can need, you may be able to shower all kinds of benefits upon others. 9 (As Scripture says—'He scattered

9 *Alternately* connection

broadcast, he gave to the poor; His righteousness continues for ever.' 10 And he who supplies 'seed to the sower, and bread for eating,' will supply you with seed, and cause it to increase, and will multiply 'the fruits of your righteousness'). 11 Rich in all things yourselves, you will be able to show liberality to all, which, with our help, will cause thanksgiving to be offered to God. 12 For the rendering of a public service such as this, not only relieves the needs of your fellow-Christians, but also results in the offering to God of many a thanksgiving. 13 Through the evidence afforded by the service thus rendered, you cause men to praise God for your fidelity to your profession of faith in the Good News of the Christ, as well as for the liberality of your contributions for them and for all others. 14 And they also, in their prayers for you, express their longing to see you, because of the surpassing love of God displayed toward you. 15 All thanks to God for his inestimable gift!

Chapter 10

1 Now, I, Paul, make a personal appeal to you by the meekness and gentleness of the Christ—I who, "in your presence, am humble in my bearing towards you, but, when absent, am bold in my language to you"— 2 I implore you not to drive me to "show my boldness," when I do come, by the confident tone which I expect to have to adopt towards some of you, who are expecting to find us influenced in our conduct by earthly motives. 3 For, though we live an earthly life, we do not wage an earthly war. 4 The weapons for our warfare are not earthly, but, under God, are powerful enough to pull down strongholds. 5 We are engaged in confuting arguments and pulling down every barrier raised against the knowledge of God. We are taking captive every hostile thought, to bring it into submission to the Christ, 6 And are fully prepared to punish every act of rebellion, when once your submission is complete.

7 You look at the outward appearance of things! Let any one, who is confident that he belongs to Christ, reflect, for himself, again upon the fact—that we belong to Christ no less than he does. 8 Even if I boast extravagantly about our authority—which the Lord gave us for building up your faith and not for overthrowing it—still I have no reason to be ashamed. 9 I say this, that it may not seem as if I were trying to overawe you by my letters. 10 For people say "His letters are impressive and vigorous, but his personal appearance is

insignificant and his speaking contemptible." [11] Let such a man be assured of this—that our words in our letters show us to be, when absent, just what our deeds will show us to be, when present.

[12] We have not indeed the audacity to class or compare ourselves with some of those who indulge in self-commendation! But, when such persons measure themselves by themselves, and compare themselves with themselves, they show a want of wisdom. [13] We, however, will not give way to unlimited boasting, but will confine ourselves to the limits of the sphere to which God limited us, when he permitted us to come as far as Corinth. [14] For it is not the case, as it would be if we were not in the habit of coming to you, that we are exceeding our bounds! Why, we were the very first to reach you with the Good News of the Christ! [15] Our boasting, therefore, is not unlimited, nor does it extend to the labours of others; but our hope is that, as your faith grows, our influence among you may be very greatly increased—though still confined to our sphere— [16] So that we shall be able to tell the Good News in the districts beyond you, without trespassing on the sphere assigned to others, or boasting of what has been already done. [17] 'Let him who boasts make his boast of the Lord.' [18] For it is not the man who commends himself that stands the test, but the man who is commended by the Lord.

Chapter 11

[1] I could wish that you would tolerate a little folly in me! But indeed you do tolerate me. [2] I am jealous over you with the jealousy of God. For I betrothed you to one husband, that I might present you to the Christ a pure bride. [3] Yet I fear that it may turn out that, just as the Serpent by his craftiness deceived Eve, so your minds may have lost the loyalty and purity due from you to the Christ. [4] For, if some new-comer is proclaiming a Jesus other than him whom we proclaimed, or if you are receiving a Spirit different from the Spirit which you received, or a Good News different from that which you welcomed, then you are marvellously tolerant!

[5] I do not regard myself as in any way inferior to the most eminent Apostles! [6] Though I am no trained orator, yet I am not without knowledge; indeed we made this perfectly clear to you in every way. [7] Perhaps you say that I did wrong in humbling myself that you might be exalted—I mean because I told you God's Good

News without payment. [8] I robbed other churches by taking pay from them, so that I might serve you! [9] And, when I was with you in need, I did not become a burden to any of you; for our Brothers, on coming from Macedonia, supplied my needs. I kept myself, and will keep myself from being an expense to you in any way. [10] As surely as I know anything of the Truth of Christ, this boast, as far as I am concerned, shall not be stopped in any part of Greece. [11] Why? Because I do not love you? God knows that I do! [12] What I am doing now I shall continue to do, that I may cut away the ground from under those who are wishing for some ground for attacking me, so that as regards the thing of which they boast they may appear in their true characters, just as we do. [13] Men of this stamp are false apostles, treacherous workers, disguising themselves as Apostles of Christ! [14] And no wonder; for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of Light. [15] It is not surprising, therefore, if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of Righteousness. But their end will be in accordance with their actions.

[16] I say again—Let no one think me a fool! Yet, if you do, at least welcome me as you would a fool, that I, too may indulge in a little boasting. [17] When I speak thus, I am not speaking as the Master would, but as a fool might, in boasting so confidently. [18] As so many are boasting of earthly things, I, too, will boast. [19] For all your cleverness, you tolerate fools willingly enough! [20] You tolerate a man even when he enslaves you, when he plunders you, when he gets you into his power, when he puts on airs of superiority, when he strikes you in the face! [21] I admit, to my shame, that we have been weak. But whatever the subject on which others are not afraid to boast—though it is foolish to say so—I am not afraid either!

[22] Are they Hebrews? So am I! Are they Israelites? So am I! Are they descendants of Abraham? So am I! [23] Are they 'Servants of Christ'? Though it is madness to talk like this, I am more so than they! I have had more of toil, more of imprisonment! I have been flogged times without number. I have been often at death's door. [24] Five times I received at the hands of the Jews forty lashes, all but one. [25] Three times I was beaten with rods. Once I was stoned. Three times I was shipwrecked. I have spent a whole day and night in the deep. [26] My journeys have been many. I have been through dangers from rivers, dangers from robbers, dangers from my own people, dangers from the Gentiles, dangers in towns, dangers in

the country, dangers on the sea, dangers among false Brothers.
27 I have been through toil and hardship. I have passed many a
sleepless night; I have endured hunger and thirst; I have often
been without food; I have known cold and nakedness. 28 And, not
to speak of other things, there is my daily burden of anxiety about
all the Churches. 29 Who is weak without my being weak? Who is
led astray without my burning with indignation? 30 If I must boast,
I will boast of things which show my weakness! 31 The God and
Father of the Lord Jesus—he who is for ever blessed—knows that
I am speaking the truth. 32 When I was in Damascus, the Governor
under King Aretas had the gates of that city guarded, so as to arrest
me, 33 But I was let down in a basket through a window in the wall,
and so escaped his hands.

Chapter 12

1 I must boast! It is unprofitable; but I will pass to visions and
revelations given by the Lord. 2 I know a man in union with Christ,
who, fourteen years ago—whether in the body or out of the body I
do not know; God knows—was caught up (this man of whom I am
speaking) to the third Heaven. 3 And I know that this man—whether
in the body or separated from the body I do not know; God knows—
4 Was caught up into Paradise, and heard unspeakable things of
which no human being may tell. 5 About such a man I will boast,
but about myself I will not boast except as regards my weaknesses.
6 Yet if I choose to boast, I shall not be a fool; for I shall be speaking
no more than the truth. But I refrain, lest any one should credit me
with more than he can see in me or hear from me, and because of
the marvellous character of the revelations. 7 It was for this reason,
and to prevent my thinking too highly of myself, that a thorn was
sent to pierce my flesh—an instrument of Satan to discipline me—so
that I should not think too highly of myself. 8 About this I three
times entreated the Lord, praying that it might leave me. 9 But his
reply has been—'My help is enough for you; for my strength attains
its perfection in the midst of weakness.' Most gladly, then, will I
boast all the more of my weaknesses, so that the strength of the
Christ may overshadow me. 10 That is why I delight in weakness, ill-
treatment, hardship, persecution, and difficulties, when borne for
Christ. For, when I am weak, then it is that I am strong!

11 I have been "playing the fool!" It is you who drove me to

it. For it is you who ought to have been commending me! Although
I am nobody, in no respect did I prove inferior to the most eminent
Apostles. 12 The marks of the true Apostle were exhibited among
you in constant endurance, as well as by signs, by marvels, and by
miracles. 13 In what respect, I ask, were you treated worse than the
other Churches, unless it was that, for my part, I refused to become
a burden to you? Forgive me the wrong I thus did you! 14 Remember,
this is the third time that I have made every preparation to come to
see you, and I shall refuse to be a burden to you; I want, not your
money, but you. It is not the duty of children to put by for their
parents, but of parents to put by for their children. 15 For my part, I
will most gladly spend, and be spent, for your welfare. Can it be that
the more intensely I love you the less I am to be loved? 16 You will
admit that I was not a burden to you but you say that I was "crafty"
and caught you "by a trick"! 17 Do you assert that I took advantage of
you through any of those whom I have sent to you? 18 I urged Titus
to go, and I sent our Brother with him. Did Titus take any advantage
of you? Did not we live in the same Spirit, and tread in the same
footsteps? 19 Have you all this time been fancying that it is to you
that we are making our defence? No, it is in the sight of God, and in
union with Christ, that we are speaking. And all this, dear friends, is
to build up your characters; 20 For I am afraid that perhaps, when I
come, I may find that you are not what I want you to be, and, on the
other hand, that you may find that I am what you do not want me
to be. I am afraid that I may find quarrelling, jealousy, ill-feeling,
rivalry, slandering, back-biting, self-assertion, and disorder. 21 I am
afraid lest, on my next visit, my God may humble me in regard to
you, and that I may have to mourn over many who have long been
sinning, and have not repented of the impurity, immorality, and
sensuality, in which they have indulged.

Chapter 13

1 For the third time I am coming to see you. 'By the word
of two or three witnesses each statement shall be established.' 2 I
have said it, and I say it again before I come, just as if I were with
you on my second visit, though for the moment absent, I say to
those who have been long sinning, as well as to all others—that if I
come again, I shall spare no one. 3 And that will be the proof, which
you are looking for, that the Christ speaks through me. There is no

weakness in his dealings with you. No, he shows his power among you. 4 For though his crucifixion was due to weakness, his life is due to the power of God. And we, also, are weak in his weakness, but with him we shall live for you through the power of God. 5 Put yourselves to the proof, to see whether you are holding to the Faith. Test yourselves. Surely you recognize this fact about yourselves—that Jesus Christ is in you! Unless indeed you cannot stand the test! 6 But I hope that you will recognize that we can stand the test.

7 We pray God that you may do nothing wrong, not that we may be seen to stand the test, but that you may do what is right, even though we may seem not to stand the test. 8 We have no power at all against the Truth, but we have power in the service of the Truth. 9 We are glad when we are weak, if you are strong. And what we pray for is that you may become perfect. 10 This is my reason for writing as I am now doing, while I am away from you, so that, when I am with you, I may not act harshly in the exercise of the authority which the Lord gave me—and gave me for building up and not for pulling down.

11 And now, brothers, good-bye. Aim at perfection; take courage; agree together; live in peace. And then God, the source of all love and peace, will be with you. 12 Greet one another with a sacred kiss. 13 All Christ's people here send you their greetings. 14 May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion with the Holy Spirit, be with you all.

The Letter of Paul to the Galatians

Chapter 1

1 To the churches in Galatia, from Paul, an Apostle whose commission is not from men and is given, not by man, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father who raised him from the dead; 2 And from all the Brothers here. 3 May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, bless you and give you peace. For Christ, to rescue us from this present wicked age, 4 Gave himself for our sins, in accordance with the will of God and Father, 5 To whom be ascribed all glory for ever and ever. Amen.

6 I am astonished at your so soon deserting him, who called you through the love of Christ, for a different 'Good News,' 7 Which is really no Good News at all. But then, I know that there are people who are harassing you, and who want to pervert the Good News of the Christ. 8 Yet even if we—or if an angel from Heaven were to tell you any other 'Good News' than that which we told you, may he be accursed! 9 We have said it before, and I repeat it now—If any one tells you a 'Good News' other than that which you received, may he be accursed!

10 Is this, I ask, trying to conciliate men, or God? Am I seeking to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I should not be a servant of Christ. 11 I would remind you, Brothers, that the Good News which I told is no mere human invention. 12 I, at least, did not receive it from man, nor was I taught it, but it came to me through a revelation made by Jesus Christ. 13 You heard, no doubt, of my conduct when I was devoted to Judaism—how I persecuted the Church of God to an extent beyond belief, and made havoc of it, 14 And how, in my devotion to Judaism, I surpassed many of my contemporaries among my own people in my intense earnestness in upholding the traditions of my ancestors. 15 But when God, who had set me apart even before my birth, and who called me by his love, 16 Saw fit to reveal his Son in me, so that I might tell the Good News of him among the Gentiles, then at once, instead of consulting any human being, 17 Or even going up to Jerusalem to see those who were Apostles before me, I went to Arabia, and came back again to

Damascus. [18] Three years afterwards I went up to Jerusalem to make the acquaintance of Peter, and I stayed a fortnight with him. [19] I did not, however, see any other Apostle, except James, the Master's brother. [20] (As to what I am now writing to you, I call God to witness that I am speaking the truth). [21] Afterwards I went to the districts of Syria and Cilicia. [22] But I was still unknown even by sight to the Christian Churches in Judea; [23] All that they had heard was—'The man who once persecuted us is now telling the Good News of the very Faith of which he once made havoc.' [24] And they praised God on my account.

Chapter 2

[1] Fourteen years afterwards I went up to Jerusalem again with Barnabas, and I took Titus also with me. [2] It was in obedience to a revelation that I went; and I laid before the Apostles the Good News that I am proclaiming among the Gentiles. I did this privately before those who are thought highly of, for fear that I might possibly be taking, or might have already taken, a course which would prove useless. [3] Yet even my companion, Titus, though a Greek, was not compelled to be circumcised. [4] But, on account of the false Brothers who had stolen in, the men who had crept in to spy upon the liberty which we have through union with Christ Jesus, in order to bring us back to slavery— [5] Why, we did not for a moment yield submission to them, that the Truth of the Good News might be yours always! [6] Of those who are thought somewhat highly of—what they once were makes no difference to me; God does not recognize human distinctions—those, I say, who are thought highly of added nothing to my Message. [7] On the contrary, they saw that I had been entrusted with the Good News for the Gentiles, just as Peter had been for the Jews. [8] For he who gave Peter power for his mission to the Jews gave me, also, power to go to the Gentiles. [9] Recognizing the charge entrusted to me, James, Peter, and John, who were regarded as pillars of the Church, openly acknowledged Barnabas and me as fellow-workers, agreeing that we should go to the Gentiles, and they to the Jews. [10] Only we were to remember the poor—the very thing I was myself anxious to do.

[11] But, when Peter came to Antioch, I opposed him to his face; for he stood self-condemned. [12] Before certain persons came from James, he had been in the habit of eating with the Gentile converts;

but, when they came, he began to withdraw and hold aloof, for fear of offending those who still held to circumcision. [13] The rest of the Jewish converts were guilty of the same hypocrisy, so that even Barnabas was led away by it. [14] But, when I saw that they were not dealing straightforwardly with the Truth of the Good News, I said to Peter, before them all, "If you, who were born a Jew, adopt Gentile customs, instead of Jewish, why are you trying to compel the Gentile converts to adopt Jewish customs?" [15] We, though we are Jews by birth and not outcasts of Gentile origin, know that no one is pronounced righteous as the result of obedience to Law, but only through faith in Christ Jesus. [16] So we placed our faith in Christ Jesus, in order that we might be pronounced righteous, as the result of faith in Christ, and not of obedience to Law; for such obedience 'will not result in even one soul's being pronounced righteous.' [17] If, while seeking to be pronounced righteous through union with Christ, we were ourselves seen to be outcasts, would that make Christ an agent of sin? Heaven forbid! [18] For, if I rebuild the very things that I pulled down, I prove myself to have done wrong. [19] I, indeed, through Law became dead to Law, in order to live for God. [20] I have been crucified with Christ. So it is no longer I that live, but it is Christ who lives in me; and, as for my present earthly life, I am living it by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. [21] I do not reject the love of God. If righteousness comes through Law, then there was no need for Christ to die!

Chapter 3

[1] Foolish Galatians! Who has been fascinating you—you before whose very eyes Jesus Christ was depicted upon the cross? [2] Here is the one thing that I want to find out from you—Did you receive the Spirit as the result of obedience to Law, or of your having listened with faith? [3] Can you be so foolish? After beginning with what is spiritual, do you now end with what is external? [4] Did you go through so much to no purpose?—if indeed it really was to no purpose! [5] He who supplies you abundantly with his Spirit and endows you with such powers—does he do this as the result of obedience to Law? or as the result of your having listened with faith?

[6] It is just as it was with Abraham—'He had faith in God, and his faith was regarded by God as righteousness.' [7] You see, then,

that those whose lives are based on faith are the Sons of Abraham.
8 And Scripture, foreseeing that God would pronounce the Gentiles
righteous as the result of faith, foretold the Good News to Abraham
in the words—'Through thee all the Gentiles shall be blessed.'
9 And, therefore, those whose lives are based on faith share the
blessings bestowed upon the faith of Abraham. 10 All who rely upon
obedience to Law are under a curse, for Scripture says—'Cursed is
every one who does not abide by all that is written in the Book of
the Law, and do it.' 11 Again, it is evident that no one is pronounced
righteous before God through Law, for we read—'Through faith the
righteous man shall find Life.' 12 But the Law is not based on faith;
no, its words are—'Those who practice these precepts will find Life
through them.' 13 Christ ransomed us from the curse pronounced
in the Law, by taking the curse on himself for us, for Scripture
says—'Cursed is any one who is hanged on a tree.' 14 And this he
did that the blessing given to Abraham might be extended to the
Gentiles through their union with Jesus Christ; that so, through our
faith, we also might receive the promised gift of the Spirit. 15 To take
an illustration, Brothers, from daily life—No one sets aside even an
agreement between two men, when once it has been confirmed,
nor does he add conditions to it. 16 Now it was to Abraham that the
promises were made, 'and to his offspring.' It was not said 'to his
offsprings,' as if many persons were meant, but the words were 'to
thy offspring,' showing that one person was meant—and that was
Christ. 17 My point is this—An agreement already confirmed by
God cannot be cancelled by the Law, which came four hundred and
thirty years later, so as to cause the promise to be set aside. 18 If our
heritage is the result of Law, then it has ceased to be the result of a
promise. Yet God conferred it on Abraham by a promise.

19 What, then, you ask, was the use of the Law? It was a
later addition, to make men conscious of their wrong-doings, and
intended to last only till the coming of that 'offspring' to whom the
promise had been made; and it was delivered through angels by
a mediator. 20 Now mediation implies more than one person, but
God is one only. 21 Does that set the Law in opposition to God's
promises? Heaven forbid! For, if a Law had been given capable of
bestowing Life, then righteousness would have actually owed its
existence to Law. 22 But the words of Scripture represent the whole
world as being in bondage to sin, so that the promised blessing,

dependent, as it is, upon faith in Jesus Christ, may be given to those
who have faith in him. 23 Before the coming of faith, we were kept
under the guard of the Law, in bondage, awaiting the Faith that was
destined to be revealed. 24 Thus the Law has proved a guide to lead
us to Christ, in order that we may be pronounced righteous as the
result of faith. 25 But now that faith has come we no longer need a
guide. 26 For you are all Sons of God, through your faith in Christ
Jesus. 27 For all of you who were baptized into union with Christ
clothed yourselves with Christ. 28 All distinctions between Jew and
Greek, slave and freeman, male and female, have vanished; for in
union with Christ Jesus you are all one. 29 And, since you belong to
Christ, it follows that you are Abraham's offspring and, under the
promise, sharers in the inheritance.

Chapter 4

1 My point is this—As long as the heir is under age, there
is no difference between him and a slave, though he is master of
the whole estate. 2 He is subject to the control of guardians and
stewards, during the period for which his father has power to
appoint them. 3 And so is it with us; when we were under age, as
it were, we were slaves to the puerile teaching of this world; 4 But,
when the full time came, God sent his Son—born a woman's child,
born subject to Law— 5 To ransom those who were subject to Law,
so that we might take our position as sons. 6 And it is because you
are sons that God sent into our hearts the Spirit of his Son, with the
cry—'Abba, our Father.' 7 You, therefore, are no longer a slave, but a
son; and, if a son, then an heir also, by God's appointment.

8 Yet formerly, in your ignorance of God, you became
slaves to 'gods' which were no gods. 9 But now that you have found
God—or, rather, have been found by him—how is it that you are
turning back to that poor and feeble puerile teaching, to which yet
once again you are wanting to become slaves? 10 You are scrupulous
in keeping Days and Months and Seasons and Years! 11 You make
me fear that the labour which I have spent on you may have been
wasted.

12 I entreat you, Brothers, to become like me, as I became like
you. You have never done me any wrong. 13 You remember that it
was owing to bodily infirmity that on the first occasion I told you the
Good News. 14 And as for what must have tried you in my condition,

it did not inspire you with scorn or disgust, but you welcomed me as if I had been an angel of God—or Christ Jesus himself! 15 What has become then, of your blessings? For I can bear witness that, had it been possible, you would have torn out your eyes and given them to me! 16 Am I to think, then, that I have become your enemy by telling you the truth?

17 Certain people are seeking your favour, but with no honourable object. No, indeed, they want to isolate you, so that you will have to seek their favour. 18 It is always honourable to have your favour sought in an honourable cause, and not only when I am with you, my dear children—

19 You for whom I am again enduring a mother's pains, till a likeness to Christ shall have been formed in you. 20 But I could wish to be with you now and speak in a different tone, for I am perplexed about you.

21 Tell me, you who want to be still subject to Law—Why do not you listen to the Law? 22 Scripture says that Abraham had two sons, one the child of the slave-woman and the other the child of the free woman. 23 But the child of the slave-woman was born in the course of nature, while the child of the free woman was born in fulfilment of a promise. 24 This story may be taken as an allegory. The women stand for two Covenants. One Covenant, given from Mount Sinai, produces a race of slaves and is represented by Hagar 25 (The word Hagar meaning in Arabia Mount Sinai) and it ranks with the Jerusalem of to-day, for she and her children are in slavery. 26 But the Jerusalem above is free, and she it is who is our mother. 27 For Scripture says—'Rejoice, thou barren one, who dost never bear, Break into shouts, thou who art never in labour, For many are the children of her who is desolate—aye, more than of her who has a husband.' 28 As for ourselves, brothers, we, like Isaac, are children born in fulfilment of a promise. 29 Yet at that time the child born in the course of nature persecuted the child born by the power of the Spirit; and it is the same now. 30 But what does the passage of Scripture say? 'Send away the slave-woman and her son; for the slave's son shall not be co-heir with the son of the free woman.' 31 And so, Brothers, we are not children of a slave, but of her who is free.

Chapter 5

1 It is for freedom that Christ set us free; stand firm therefore, and do not again be held under the yoke of slavery. 2 Understand that I, Paul, myself tell you that if you allow yourselves to be circumcised, Christ will avail you nothing. 3 I again declare to every one who receives circumcision, that he binds himself to obey the whole Law. 4 You have severed yourselves from Christ—you who are seeking to be pronounced righteous through Law; you have fallen away from love. 5 For we, by the help of the Spirit, are eagerly waiting for the fulfilment of our hope—that we may be pronounced righteous as the result of faith. 6 If a man is in union with Christ Jesus, neither is circumcision nor the omission of it anything, but faith, working through love, is everything. 7 You were once making good progress! Who has hindered you from obeying the Truth? 8 The persuasion brought to bear on you does not come from him who calls you. 9 A little leaven leavens all the dough. 10 I, through my union with the Lord, am persuaded that you will learn to think with me. But the man who is disturbing your minds will have to bear his punishment, whoever he may be. 11 If I, Brothers, am still proclaiming circumcision, why am I still persecuted? It seems that the Cross has ceased to be an obstacle! 12 I could even wish that the people who are unsettling you would go further still and mutilate themselves.

13 Remember, Brothers, to you the Call came to give you freedom. Only do not make your freedom an opportunity for self-indulgence, but serve one another in a loving spirit. 14 Indeed, the whole Law has been summed up in this one precept—'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thou dost thyself.' 15 But, if you are continually wounding and preying upon one another, take care that you are not destroyed by one another. 16 This is what I have to say—Let your steps be guided by the Spirit, and then you will never gratify the cravings of your earthly nature. 17 For these cravings of our earthly nature conflict with the Spirit, and the Spirit with our earthly nature—they are two contrary principles—so that you cannot do what you wish. 18 But, if you follow the guidance of the Spirit, you are not subject to Law. 19 The sins of our earthly nature are unmistakable. They are sins like these—unchastity, impurity, indecency, 20 Idolatry, sorcery, quarrels, strife, jealousy, outbursts

of passion, rivalries, dissensions, divisions, [21] Feelings of envy, drunkenness, revelry, and the like. And I warn you, as I warned you before, that those who indulge in such things will have no place in the Kingdom of God. [22] But the fruit produced by the Spirit is love, joy, peace, forbearance, kindliness, generosity, trustfulness, gentleness, self-control. [23] Against such things there is no law! [24] And those who belong to Jesus, the Christ, have already crucified their earthly nature, with its passions and its cravings. [25] Since our Life is due to the Spirit, let us rule our conduct also by the Spirit. [26] Do not let us grow vain, and provoke or envy one another.

Chapter 6

[1] Brothers, even if a man should be caught committing a sin, you who are spiritually minded should, in a gentle spirit, help him to recover himself, taking care lest any one of you also should be tempted. [2] Bear one another's burdens, and so carry out the Law of the Christ. [3] If a man imagines himself to be somebody, when he is really nobody, he deceives himself. [4] Let every one test his own work, and then his cause for satisfaction will be in himself and not in a comparison of himself with his neighbour; [5] For every one must bear his own load. [6] He, however, who is being instructed in the Message ought always to share his blessings with the man who instructs him. [7] Do not be deceived. God cannot be mocked. What a man sows that he will reap. [8] For he who sows the field of his earthly nature will from that earthly nature reap corruption; while he who sows the field of the spirit will from that spirit reap Immortal Life. [9] Let us never tire of doing right, for at the proper season we shall reap our harvest, if we do not grow weary. [10] Therefore, I say, as the opportunity occurs, let us treat every one with kindness, and especially members of the Household of the Faith.

[11] See in what large letters I am writing with my own hand. [12] Those who wish to appear to advantage in regard to outward observances are the very people who are trying to compel you to be circumcised; and they do it only to avoid being persecuted for the cross of Jesus, the Christ. [13] Even these men who are circumcised do not themselves keep the Law; yet they want you to be circumcised, so that they may boast of your observance of the rite. [14] But, for my part, may I never boast of anything except the cross of Jesus Christ, our Master, through whom the world has been crucified to me, and

I to the world. [15] For neither is circumcision nor the omission of it anything; but a new nature is everything. [16] May all who rule their conduct by this principle find peace and mercy—they who are the Israel of God. [17] For the future let no one trouble me; for I bear the marks of Jesus branded on my body. [18] May the blessing of Jesus Christ, our Lord, rest on your souls, Brothers. Amen.

The Letter of Paul to the Ephesians

Chapter 1

1 To Christ's People AT EPHESUS who are faithful to him,
from Paul, an Apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God. 2 May
God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you
peace.

3 Blessed is the God and Father of Jesus Christ, our Lord,
who has blessed us on high with every spiritual blessing, in Christ.
4 For he chose us in our union with Christ before the creation of the
universe, that we might be holy and blameless in his sight, living
in the spirit of love. 5 From the first he destined us, in his good-will
towards us, to be adopted as Sons through Jesus Christ, 6 And so to
enhance that glorious manifestation of his loving-kindness which
he gave us in The Beloved; 7 For in him, and through the shedding of
his blood, we have found redemption in the pardon of our offences.
8 All this accords with the loving-kindness which God lavished upon
us, accompanied by countless gifts of wisdom and discernment, 9
When he made known to us his hidden purpose. And it also accords
with the good-will which God purposed to exhibit in Christ, 10 In
view of that Divine Order which was to mark the completion of
the ages, when he should make everything, both in Heaven and on
earth, centre in him. 11 In him, I say, for by our union with him we
became God's Heritage, having from the first been destined for this
in the intention of him who, in all that happens, is carrying out his
own fixed purpose; 12 That we should enhance his glory—we who
have been the first to rest our hopes on the Christ. 13 And you, too, by
your union with him, after you had heard the Message of the Truth,
the Good News of your Salvation—you believed in him and were
sealed as his by receiving the holy Spirit, which he had promised. 14
And the Spirit is a pledge of our future heritage, fore-shadowing the
full redemption of God's own People—to enhance his Glory.

15 And therefore I, ever since I heard of the faith in the
Lord Jesus which prevails among you, and of your confidence in
all Christ's People, 16 Have never omitted to thank God on your
behalf, whenever I make mention of you in my prayers. 17 My prayer

is that the God of Jesus Christ our Lord, the all-glorious Father, may inspire you with wisdom and true insight through a fuller knowledge of himself; 18 That your minds may be so enlightened that you may realize the hope given by God's Call, the wealth of the glory of his heritage among Christ's People, 19 And the transcendent greatness of the power which he is able to exercise in dealing with us who believe in him. 20 The same mighty power was exerted upon the Christ, when he raised the Christ from the dead and 'caused him to sit at his right hand' on high, exalting him above all Angels and Archangels of every rank, 21 And above every name that can be named, whether in the present age, or in the age to come. 22 And God placed 'all things under Christ's feet,' and gave him to the Church as its supreme Head; 23 For the Church is Christ's Body, and is filled by him who fills all things everywhere with his presence.

Chapter 2

1 You yourselves were once dead because of your offences and sins. 2 For at one time you lived in sin, following the ways of the world, in subjection to the Ruler of the Powers of the air—the Spirit who is still at work among the disobedient. 3 And it was among them that we all once lived our lives, indulging the cravings of our earthly nature, and carrying out the desires prompted by that earthly nature and by our own thoughts. Our very nature exposed us to the Divine Wrath, like the rest of mankind.

4 Yet God, in his abundant compassion, and because of the great love with which he loved us, 5 Even though we were 'dead' because of our offences, gave Life to us in giving Life to the Christ. (By God's loving-kindness you have been saved.) 6 And, through our union with Christ Jesus, God raised us with him, and caused us to sit with him on high, 7 In order that, by his goodness to us in Christ Jesus, he might display in the ages to come the boundless wealth of his loving-kindness. 8 For it is by God's loving-kindness that you have been saved, through your faith. It is not due to yourselves; the gift is God's. 9 It is not due to obedience to Law, lest any one should boast. 10 For we are God's handiwork, created, by our union with Christ Jesus, for the good actions in doing which God had pre-arranged that we should spend our lives.

11 Remember, therefore, that you were once Gentiles yourselves, as your bodies showed; you were called 'The

Uncircumcised' by those who were called 'The Circumcised'—circumcised only by the hand of man! 12 Remember that you were at that time far from Christ; you were shut out from the citizenship of Israel; you were strangers to the Covenants founded on God's Promise; you were in the world without hope and without God. 13 But now, through your union with Christ Jesus, you who once were 'far off' have, by the shedding of the blood of the Christ, been brought 'near.'

14 He it is who is our Peace. He made the two divisions of mankind one, broke down the barrier that separated them, 15 And in his human nature put an end to the cause of enmity between them—the Law with its injunctions and ordinances—in order to create, through union with himself, from Jew and Gentile, one New Man and thus make peace. 16 And when, upon the cross, he had destroyed their mutual enmity, he sought by means of his cross to reconcile them both to God, united in one Body. 17 He came with the Good News of peace for you who were 'far off,' and of peace for those who were 'near'; 18 For it is through him that we, the Jews and the Gentiles, united in the one Spirit, are now able to approach the Father. 19 It follows, then, that you are no longer strangers and aliens, but are fellow-citizens with Christ's People and members of God's Household. 20 You have been built up upon the foundation laid by the Apostles and Prophets, Christ Jesus himself being 'the corner-stone.' 21 United in him, every part of the building, closely joined together, will grow into a Temple, consecrated by its union with the Lord. 22 And, through union in him, you also are being built up together, to be a dwelling-place for God through the Spirit.

Chapter 3

1 For this reason I, Paul, the prisoner of Jesus, the Christ, for the sake of you Gentiles— 2 For you have heard, I suppose, of the responsible charge with which God entrusted me for your benefit, 3 And also that it was by direct revelation that the hidden purpose of God was made known to me, as I have already briefly told you. 4 And, by reading what I have written, you will be able to judge how far I understand this hidden purpose of God in Christ. 5 In former generations it was not made known to mankind, as fully as it has now been revealed by the Spirit to the Apostles and Prophets among Christ's People— 6 That, by union with Christ Jesus and through the

Good News, the Gentiles are co-heirs with us and members of one Body, and that they share with us in God's Promise. 7 Of this Good News I became a minister, in virtue of the charge with which God entrusted me in the exercise of his power— 8 Yes, to me, who am less than the least of all Christ's People, was this charge entrusted!—to tell the Gentiles the Good News of the boundless wealth to be found in the Christ, 9 And to make clear what is God's way of working out that hidden purpose which from the first has been concealed in the mind of the Creator of all things; 10 So that now to the Archangels and to all the Powers on high should be made known, through the Church, the all-embracing wisdom of God, 11 In accordance with that purpose which runs through all the ages and which he has now accomplished in Jesus, the Christ, our Master. 12 And in union with him, and through our trust in him, we find courage to approach God with confidence. 13 Therefore I beg you not to be disheartened at the sufferings that I am undergoing for your sakes; for they redound to your honour.

14 For this reason, then, I kneel before the Father— 15 From whom all 'fatherhood' in Heaven and on earth derives its name— 16 And pray that, in proportion to the wealth of his glory, he will strengthen you with his power by breathing his Spirit into your inmost soul, 17 So that the Christ, through your faith, may make his home within your hearts in love; And I pray that you, now firmly rooted and established,[10] may, with all Christ's People, 18 Have the power to comprehend in all its width and length and height and depth, 19 And to understand—though it surpasses all understanding—the love of the Christ; and so be filled to the full with God himself. 20 To him who, through his power which is at work within us, is able to do far more than anything that we can ask or conceive— 21 To him be all glory through the Church and through Christ Jesus, for all generations, age after age. Amen.

[10] *Verses 16 and 17 (in part) literally* ...in order that he might give to you according to the riches of the glory of him to power to be made mighty through the spirit of him into the inward man, the Christ to dwell through the faith in the hearts of you in love; having been rooted and having been founded...

Chapter 4

1 I urge you, then—I who am a prisoner in the Master's cause—to live lives worthy of the Call that you have received;

2 Always humble and gentle, patient, bearing lovingly with one another, 3 And striving to maintain in the bond of peace the unity given by the Spirit. 4 There is but one Body and one Spirit, just as there was but one hope set before you when you received your Call. 5 There is but one Lord, one Faith, one Baptism. 6 There is but one God and Father of all—the God who is over all, pervades all, and is in all. 7 Every one of us, however, has been entrusted with some charge, each in accordance with the extent of the gift of the Christ. 8 That is why it is said—'When he went up on high, he led his captives into captivity. And gave gifts to mankind.' 9 Now surely this 'going up' must imply that he had already gone down into the world beneath. 10 He who went down is the same as he who went up—up beyond the highest Heaven, that he might fill all things with his presence. 11 And he it is who gave to the Church Apostles, Prophets, Missionaries, Pastors, and Teachers, 12 To fit his People for the work of the ministry, for the building up of the Body of the Christ. 13 And this shall continue, until we all attain to that unity which is given by faith and by a fuller knowledge of the Son of God; until we reach the ideal man—the full standard of the perfection of the Christ. 14 Then we shall no longer be like infants, tossed backward and forward, blown about by every breath of human teaching, through the trickery and the craftiness of men, towards the snares of error; 15 But holding the truth in a spirit of love, we shall grow into complete union with him who is our Head—Christ himself. 16 For from him the whole Body, closely joined and knit together by the contact of every part with the source of its life, derives its power to grow, in proportion to the vigour of each individual part; and so is being built up in a spirit of love.

17 This, then, as one in union with the Lord, I say to you and urge upon you: Do not continue to live such purposeless lives as the Gentiles live, 18 With their powers of discernment darkened, cut off from the Life of God, owing to the ignorance that prevails among them and to the hardness of their hearts. 19 Lost to all sense of shame, they have abandoned themselves to licentiousness, in order to practice every kind of impurity without restraint. 20 But far

different is the lesson you learned from the Christ—if, that is, you really listened to him, 21 And through union with him were taught the Truth, as it is to be found in Jesus. 22 For you learned with regard to your former way of living that you must cast off your old nature, which, yielding to deluding passions, grows corrupt; 23 That the very spirit of your minds must be constantly renewed; 24 And that you must clothe yourselves in that new nature which was created to resemble God, with the righteousness and holiness springing from the Truth. 25 Since, therefore, you have cast off what is false, 'you must every one of you speak the truth to your neighbours.' For we are united to one another like the parts of a body. 26 'Be angry, yet do not sin.' Do not let the sun go down upon your anger; 27 And give no opportunity to the Devil. 28 Let the man who steals steal no longer, but rather let him toil with his hands at honest work, so that he may have something to share with any one in want. 29 Never let any foul word pass your lips, but only such good words as the occasion demands, that they may be a help to those who hear them. 30 And do not grieve God's Holy Spirit; for it was through that Spirit that God sealed you as his, against the Day of Redemption. 31 Let all bitterness, passion, anger, brawling, and abusive language be banished from among you, as well as all malice. 32 Be kind to one another, tenderhearted, ready to forgive one another, just as God, in Christ, forgave you.

Chapter 5

1 Therefore imitate God, as his dear children, 2 And live a life of love, following the example of the Christ, who loved you and gave himself for you as 'an offering and a sacrifice to God, that should be fragrant and acceptable.'

3 As for unchastity and every kind of impurity, or greed, do not let them even be mentioned among you, as befits Christ's People, 4 Nor shameful conduct, nor foolish talk or jesting, for they are wholly out of place among you; but rather thanksgiving. 5 For of this you may be sure—that no one who is unchaste or impure or greedy of gain (for to be greedy of gain is idolatry) has any place awaiting him in the kingdom of the Christ and God. 6 Do not let any one deceive you with specious arguments. Those are the sins that bring down the Wrath of God upon the disobedient. 7 Therefore have nothing to do with such people. 8 For, although you were

once in Darkness, now, by your union with the Lord, you are in the Light. Live as 'Children of Light'— 9 For the outcome of life in the Light may be seen in every form of goodness, righteousness, and sincerity— 10 Always trying to find out what is pleasing to the Lord. 11 Take no part in deeds of Darkness, from which no good can come; on the contrary, expose them. 12 It is degrading even to speak of the things continually done by them in secret. 13 All such actions, when exposed, have their true character made manifest by the Light. 14 For everything that has its true character made manifest is clear as light. And that is why it is said—'Sleeper, awake! Arise from the dead, and the Christ shall give thee light!' 15 Take great care, then, how you live—not unwisely but wisely, 16 Making the most of every opportunity; for these are evil days. 17 Therefore do not grow thoughtless, but try to understand what the Lord's will is. 18 Do not drink wine to excess, for that leads to profligacy; but seek to be filled with the Spirit of God, and speak to one another in psalms and hymns and sacred songs. 19 Sing and make music in your hearts to the Lord. 20 Always give thanks for everything to our God and Father, in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ;

21 And submit to one another from reverence for him. 22 Wives should submit to their husbands as submitting to the Lord. 23 For a man is the Head of his wife, as the Christ is the Head of the Church—being indeed himself the Saviour of his Body. 24 But as the Church submits to the Christ, so also should wives submit to their husbands in everything. 25 Husbands, love your wives, just as the Christ loved the Church, and gave himself for her, 26 To make her holy, after purifying her by the Washing with the Water, according to his promise; 27 So that he might himself bring the Church, in all her beauty, into his own presence, with no spot or wrinkle or blemish of any kind, but that she might be holy and faultless. 28 That is how husbands ought to love their wives—as if they were their own bodies. A man who loves his wife is really loving himself; 29 For no one ever yet hated his own body. But every one feeds his body and cares for it, just as the Christ for the Church; 30 For we are members of his Body. 31 'For this cause a man shall leave his father and mother, and be united to his wife; and the man and his wife shall become one.' 32 In this there is a profound truth—I am speaking of Christ and his Church. 33 However, for you individually, let each love his wife as if she were himself; and the wife be careful

to respect her husband.

Chapter 6

1 Children, obey your parents, as children of the Lord;
for that is but right. 2 'Honour thy father and mother'—this is
the first Commandment with a promise—' 3 So that thou mayest
prosper and have a long life on earth.' 4 And fathers, do not irritate
your children, but bring them up with Christian discipline and
instruction. 5 Slaves, obey your earthly masters, with anxious care,
giving them ungrudging service, as if obeying the Christ; 6 Not only
when their eyes are on you, as if you had merely to please men,
but as slaves of Christ, who are trying to carry out the will of God. 7
Give your service heartily and cheerfully, as working for the Master
and not for men; 8 For you know that every one will be rewarded
by the Master for any honest work that he has done, whether he is
a slave or a freeman. 9 And masters, treat your slaves in the same
spirit. Give up threatening them; for you know that he who is both
their Master and yours is in Heaven, and that before him there is no
distinction of rank.

10 For the future, find strength in your union with the Lord,
and in the power which comes from his might. 11 Put on the full
armour of God, so that you may be able to stand your ground
against the stratagems of the Devil. 12 For ours is no struggle against
enemies of flesh and blood, but against all the various Powers of
Evil that hold sway in the Darkness around us, against the Spirits
of Wickedness on high. 13 Therefore take up the full armour of God,
that, when the evil day comes, you may be able to withstand the
attack, and, having fought to the end, still to stand your ground.
14 Stand your ground, then, 'with truth for your belt,' and 'with
righteousness for your breast-plate,' 15 And with the readiness to
serve the Good News of Peace as shoes for your feet. 16 At every
onslaught take up faith for your shield; for with it you will be able
to extinguish all the flaming darts of the Evil One. 17 And receive
'the helmet of Salvation,' and 'the sword of the Spirit'—which
is the Message of God—always with prayer and supplication. 18
Pray in spirit at all times. Be intent upon this, with unwearying
perseverance and supplication for all Christ's People—

19 And on my behalf also, that, when I begin to speak, words
may be given me, so that I may fearlessly make known the inmost

truth of the Good News, 20 On behalf of which I am an Ambassador—
in chains! Pray that, in telling it, I may speak fearlessly as I ought. 21
To enable you, as well as others, to know all that concerns me and
what I am doing, Tychicus, our dear Brother and faithful helper in
the Master's Cause, will tell you everything. 22 I am sending him to
you on purpose that you may learn all about us, and that he may
cheer your hearts. 23 May God, the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ
give our Brothers peace, and love linked with faith. 24 May God's
blessing be with all who love our Lord Jesus Christ with an undying
love.

The Letter of Paul to the Philippians

Chapter 1

1 To all Christ's People at Philippi, with the Presiding
Officers and Assistants, from Paul and Timothy, servants of Christ
Jesus. 2 May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you,
and give you peace.

3 Every recollection that I have of you is a cause of
thankfulness to God, 4 Always, in every prayer that I offer for you
all—my prayers are full of joy— 5 Because of the share that you
have had in spreading the Good News, from the first day that you
received it until now. 6 For of this I am confident, that he who began
a good work in you will complete it in readiness for the Day of Jesus
Christ.

7 And, indeed, I am justified in feeling thus about you all;
because you have a warm place in my heart—you who all, both in
my imprisonment and in the work of defending and establishing
the Good News, shared my privilege with me. 8 God will bear me
witness how I yearn over you all with the tenderness of Christ
Jesus.

9 And what I pray for is this—that your love may grow
yet stronger and stronger, with increasing knowledge and
all discernment, 10 Until you are able to appreciate all moral
distinctions. And I pray, too, that you may be kept pure and
blameless against the Day of Christ, 11 Bearing a rich harvest of that
righteousness which comes through Jesus Christ, to the glory and
praise of God.

12 Brothers, I want you to realize that what has happened
to me has actually served to forward the Good News. 13 It has even
become evident, not only to all the Imperial Guard, but to every one
else, that it is for Christ's sake that I am in chains. 14 And besides
this, most of our Brothers have gained confidence in the Lord
through my chains, and now venture with far greater freedom to
speak of God's Message fearlessly. 15 It is true that some do proclaim
the Christ out of Jealousy and opposition; but there are others who
proclaim him from good-will. 16 The latter do it from love for me,

knowing that I have been appointed to plead the cause of the Good News. 17 The former spread the news of the Christ in a factious spirit, and not sincerely, thinking to add to the pain of my chains. 18 But what of that? Only that in some way or other, either with assumed or with real earnestness, Christ is being made known; and at that I rejoice. 19 Yes, and I will rejoice, for I know that, through your prayers and through a rich supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ, 'all this will make for my Salvation.' 20 And this will fulfil my earnest expectation and hope that I shall have no cause for shame, but that, with unfailing courage, now as hitherto, Christ will be honoured in my body, whether by my life or by my death,

21 For to me life is Christ, and death is gain. 22 But what if the life here in the body—if this brings me fruit from my labours? Then which to choose I cannot tell! I am sorely perplexed either way! 23 My own desire is to depart and be with Christ, for this would be far better. 24 But, for your sakes, it may be more needful that I should still remain here in the body. 25 Yes, I am confident that this is so, and therefore I am sure that I shall stay, and stay near you all, to promote your progress and joy in the Faith; 26 So that, when you once more have me among you, you, in your union with Christ Jesus, may find in me fresh cause for exultation.

27 Under all circumstances let your lives be worthy of the Good News of the Christ: so that, whether I come and see you, or whether I hear of your affairs at a distance, I may know that you are standing firm, animated by one spirit, and joining with one heart in a common struggle for the Faith taught by the Good News, 28 Without ever shrinking from your opponents. To them this will be a sign of their Destruction and of your Salvation—a sign from God. 29 For, on behalf of Christ, you have had the privilege granted you, not only of trusting in him, but also of suffering on his behalf. 30 You will be engaged in the same hard struggle as that which you once saw me waging, and which you hear that I am waging still.

Chapter 2

1 If, then, any encouragement comes through union with Christ, if there is any persuasive power in love, if there is any communion with the Spirit, if there is any tenderness or pity, 2 I entreat you to make my happiness complete—Live together animated by the same spirit and in mutual love, one in heart, animated by one

Spirit. 3 Nothing should be done in a factious spirit or from vanity, but each of you should with all humility regard others as of more account than himself, 4 And one and all should consider, not only their own interests, but also the interests of others. 5 Let the spirit of Christ Jesus be yours also. 6 Though the divine nature was his from the beginning, yet he did not look upon equality with God as above all things to be clung to, 7 But impoverished himself by taking the nature of a servant and becoming like men; 8 He appeared among us as a man, and still further humbled himself by submitting even to death—to death on a cross! 9 And that is why God raised him to the very highest place, and gave him the Name which stands above all other names, 10 So that in adoration of the Name of Jesus every knee should bend, in Heaven, on earth, and under the earth, 11 And that every tongue should acknowledge JESUS CHRIST as LORD—to the glory of God the Father.

12 Therefore, my dear friends, as you have always been obedient in the past, so now work out your own Salvation with anxious care, not only when I am with you, but all the more now that I am absent. 13 Remember it is God who, in his kindness, is at work within you, enabling you both to will and to work.

14 In all that you do, avoid murmuring and dissension, 15 So as to prove yourselves blameless and innocent— 'faultless children of God, in the midst of an evil-disposed and perverse generation,' in which you are seen shining like stars in a dark world, 16 Offering to men the Message of Life; and then I shall be able at the Day of Christ to boast that I did not run my course for nothing, or toil for nothing. 17 And yet, even if, when your faith is offered as a sacrifice to God, my life-blood must be poured out in addition, still I shall rejoice and share the joy of you all; 18 And do you also rejoice and share my joy.

19 I hope, however, as one who trusts in the Lord Jesus, to send Timothy to you before long, so that I may myself be cheered by receiving news of you. 20 For I have no one but him to send—no one of kindred spirit who would take the same genuine interest in your welfare. 21 They are all pursuing their own aims and not those of Christ Jesus. 22 But you know what Timothy has proved himself to be, and how, like a child working for his father, he worked hard with me in spreading the Good News. 23 It is Timothy, then, whom I hope to send, as soon as ever I can foresee how it will go with me. 24 And I

am confident, as one who trusts in the Lord Jesus, that before long I myself shall follow. 25 Still I think it necessary to send Epaphroditus to you now, for he is my brother, fellow-worker, and fellow-soldier, and he was also your messenger to help me in my need. 26 For he has been longing to see you all, and has been distressed because you heard of his illness. 27 And I can assure you that his illness very nearly proved fatal. But God had pity on him, and not on him only but also on me, that I might not have sorrow upon sorrow. 28 I am all the more ready, therefore, to send him, so that the sight of him may revive your spirits and my own sorrow be lightened. 29 Give him, then, the heartiest of Christian welcomes, and hold such men in great honour. 30 For it was owing to his devotion to the Master's work that he was at the point of death, having risked his own life in the effort to supply what was wanting in the help that you sent me.

Chapter 3

1 In conclusion, my Brothers, all joy be yours in your union with the Lord. To repeat what I have already written does not weary me, and is the safe course for you. 2 Beware of those 'dogs'! Beware of those mischievous workers! Beware of the men who mutilate themselves! 3 For it is we who are the circumcised—we whose worship is prompted by the Spirit of God, who exult in Christ Jesus, and who do not rely upon external privileges;

4 Though I, if any man, have cause to rely even upon them. If any one thinks he can rely upon external privileges, far more can I! 5 I was circumcised when eight days old; I am an Israelite by race, and of the tribe of Benjamin; I am a Hebrew, and the child of Hebrews. As to the Law, I was a Pharisee; 6 As to zeal, I was a persecutor of the Church; as to such righteousness as is due to Law, I proved myself blameless. 7 But all the things which I once held to be gains I have now, for the Christ's sake, come to count as loss. 8 More than that, I count everything as loss, for the sake of the exceeding value of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord. And for his sake I have lost everything, and count it as refuse, if I may but gain Christ and be found in union with him;

9 Any righteousness that I have being, not the righteousness that results from Law, but the righteousness which comes through faith in Christ—the righteousness which is derived from God and is founded on faith. 10 Then indeed I shall know Christ, and the power

of his resurrection, and all that it means to share his sufferings, 11 In the hope that, if I become like him in death, I may possibly attain to the resurrection from the dead. 12 Not that I have already laid hold of it, or that I am already made perfect. But I press on, in the hope of actually laying hold of that for which indeed I was laid hold of by Christ Jesus. 13 For I, Brothers, do not regard myself as having yet laid hold of it. But this one thing I do—forgetting what lies behind, and straining every nerve for that which lies in front, 14 I press on to the goal, to gain the prize of that heavenward Call which God gave me through Christ Jesus.

15 Let all of us, then, whose faith is mature, think thus. Then, if on any matter you think otherwise, God will make that also plain to you. 16 Only we are bound to order our lives by what we have already attained.

17 Brothers, unite in following my example, and fix your eyes on those who are living by the pattern which we have set you. 18 For there are many—of whom I have often told you, and now tell you even with tears—who are living in enmity to the cross of the Christ. 19 The end of such men is Ruin; for their appetites are their God, and they glory in their shame; their minds are given up to earthly things. 20 But the State of which we are citizens is in Heaven; and it is from Heaven that we are eagerly looking for a Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, 21 Who, by the exercise of his power to bring everything into subjection to himself, will make this body that we have in our humiliation like to that body which he has in his Glory.

Chapter 4

1 So then, my dear Brothers, whom I am longing to see—you who are my joy and my crown, stand fast in union with the Lord, dear friends. 2 I entreat Euodia, and I entreat Syntyche, to live in harmony, in union with the Lord; 3 Yes, and I ask you, my true comrade, to help them, remembering that they toiled by my side in spreading the Good News; and so, too, did Clement and my other fellow-workers, whose names are 'in the Book of Life.' 4 All joy be yours at all times in your union with the Lord. Again I repeat—All joy be yours. 5 Let your forbearing spirit be plain to every one. The Lord is near. 6 Do not be anxious about anything; but under all circumstances, by prayer and entreaty joined with thanksgiving, make your needs known to God. 7 Then the Peace of God, which is

beyond all human understanding, will stand guard over your hearts and thoughts, through your union with Christ Jesus. [8] In conclusion, Brothers, wherever you find anything true or honourable, righteous or pure, lovable or praiseworthy, or if 'virtue' and 'honour' have any meaning, there let your thoughts dwell. [9] All that you learned and received and heard and saw in me put into practice continually; and then God, the giver of peace, will be with you.

[10] It was a matter of great joy to me, as one in union with the Lord, that at length your interest in me had revived. The interest indeed you had, but not the opportunity. [11] Do not think that I am saying this under the pressure of want. For I, however I am placed, have learned to be independent of circumstances. [12] I know how to face humble circumstances, and I know how to face prosperity. Into all and every human experience I have been initiated—into plenty and hunger, into prosperity and want. [13] I can do everything in the strength of him who makes me strong! [14] Yet you have acted nobly in sharing my troubles. [15] And you at Philippi know, as well as I, that in the early days of the Good News—at the time when I had just left Macedonia—no Church, with the one exception of yourselves, had anything to do with me as far as giving and receiving are concerned. [16] Indeed, even while I was still in Thessalonica, you sent more than once to relieve my wants. [17] It is not that I am anxious for your gifts, but I am anxious to see the abundant return that will be placed to your account. I have enough of everything, and to spare. [18] My wants are fully satisfied, now that I have received from Epaphroditus the gifts which you sent me—the sweet fragrance of a sacrifice acceptable and pleasing to God. [19] And my God, out of the greatness of his wealth, will, in glory, fully satisfy your every need, through your union with Christ Jesus.

[20] To him, our God and Father, be ascribed all glory for every and ever. Amen. [21] Give my greeting to every one of the People of Christ Jesus. The Brothers who are with me send your their greetings. [22] All Christ's People here, and especially those who belong to the Emperor's household, send theirs. [23] May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ rest on your souls.

The Letter of Paul to the Colossians

Chapter 1

[1] From Paul, an Apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God, and from Timothy, our Brother. [2] To Christ's People at Colossae—the Brothers who are faithful to him: May God, our Father, bless you and give you peace.

[3] Whenever we pray, we never fail to thank God, the Father of our Lord, Jesus Christ, about you, [4] Now that we have heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and of the love that you have for all his People, [5] On account of the hope which awaits its fulfilment in Heaven. Of this hope you heard long ago in the true Message of the Good News which reached you— [6] Bearing fruit and growing, as it does, through all the world, just as it did among you, from the very day that you heard of God's loving-kindness, and understood what that loving-kindness really is. [7] It is just what you learned from Epaphras, our dear fellow-servant, who, as a minister of the Christ, faithfully represents us, [8] And who told us of the love with which the Spirit has inspired you.

[9] And therefore we, from the very day that we heard this, have never ceased praying for you, or asking that you may possess that deeper knowledge of the will of God, which comes through all true spiritual wisdom and insight. [10] Then you will live lives worthy of the Master, and so please God in every way. Your lives will be fruitful in every kind of good action, and your characters will grow through a fuller knowledge of God; [11] You will be made strong at all points with a strength worthy of the power manifested in his Glory—strong to endure with patience, and even with gladness, whatever may befall you;

[12] And you will give thanks to the Father who made you fit to share the lot which awaits Christ's People in the realms of Light. [13] For God has rescued us from the tyranny of Darkness, and has removed us into the Kingdom of his Son, who is the embodiment of his love, [14] And through whom we have found deliverance in the forgiveness of our sins. [15] For Christ is the very incarnation of the invisible God—First-born and Head of all creation; [16] For in him

was created all that is in Heaven and on earth, the visible and the invisible—Angels and Archangels and all the Powers of Heaven.[11] [17] All has been created through him and for him. He was before all things, and all things unite in him; [18] And he is the Head of the Church, which is his Body. The First-born from the dead, he is to the Church the Source of its Life, that he, in all things, may stand first. [19] For it pleased the Father that in him the divine nature in all its fullness should dwell, [20] And through him to reconcile all things to himself (making peace by the shedding of Christ's blood offered upon the cross)—whether on earth or in Heaven. [21] And it pleased God that you, once estranged from him and hostile towards him in your thoughts, intent only on wickedness— [22] But now he has reconciled you to himself by the sacrifice of Christ's earthly body in death—it has pleased God that you should stand in his presence holy, pure, and blameless, [23] If only you remain true to your Faith, firm and immovable, never abandoning the hope held out in the Good News to which you listened, which has been proclaimed among all created things under Heaven, and of which I, Paul, was made a minister. [24] Now at last I can rejoice in my sufferings on your behalf, and in my own person I supplement the afflictions endured by the Christ, for the sake of his Body, the Church; [25] Of which I myself became a minister in virtue of the office with which God entrusted me for your benefit, to declare the Message of God in all its fullness— [26] That Truth which has been hidden from former ages and generations. But now it has been revealed to God's People, [27] To whom it was his pleasure to make known the surpassing glory of that hidden Truth when proclaimed among the Gentiles—'Christ among you! Your Hope of glory!' [28] This is the Christ whom we proclaim, warning every one, and instructing every one, with all the wisdom that we possess, in the hope of bringing every one into God's presence perfected by union with Christ. [29] It is for that I toil, struggling with all the energy which he inspires and which works powerfully within me.

[11] *Verses 16 and 17 literally* who (Christ) is image of the God the invisible, firstborn of all creation, because in him it was created the all (things) visible and the (things) invisible, whether thrones or lordships or governments or authorities; the all (things) through him and into him it has been created.

Chapter 2

[1] I want you to know in how great a struggle I am engaged for you and for Christ's People at Laodicea, and for all who have not yet seen me; [2] In the hope that they, being bound to one another by love, and keeping in view the full blessedness of a firm conviction, may be encouraged to strive for a perfect knowledge of God's hidden Truth, [3] Even Christ himself, in whom all treasures of wisdom and knowledge lie hidden.

[4] I say this to prevent any one from deceiving you by plausible arguments. [5] It is true that I am not with you in person, but I am with you in spirit, and am glad to see the good order and the unbroken front resulting from your faith in Christ. [6] Since, therefore, you have received Jesus, the Christ, as your Lord, live your lives in union with him— [7] Rooted in him, building up your characters through union with him, growing stronger through your faith, as you were taught, overflowing with faith and thanksgiving. [8] Take care there is not some one who will carry you away by his 'philosophy'—a hollow sham!—following, as it does, mere human traditions, and dealing with puerile questions of this world, and not with Christ. [9] For in Christ the Godhead in all its fullness dwells incarnate;[12] [10] And, by your union with him, you also are filled with it. He is the Head of all Archangels and Powers of Heaven. [11] By your union with him you received a circumcision that was not performed by human hands, when you threw off the tyranny of the earthly body, and received the circumcision of the Christ. [12] For in baptism you were buried with Christ; and in baptism you were also raised to Life with him, through your faith in the omnipotence of God, who raised him from the dead.

[13] And to you, who once were 'dead,' by reason of your sins and your uncircumcised nature—to you God gave Life in giving life to Christ! He pardoned all our sins! [14] He cancelled the bond which stood against us—the bond that consisted of ordinances—and which was directly hostile to us! He has taken it out of our way by nailing it to the cross! [15] He rid himself of all the Powers of Evil, and held them up to open contempt, when he celebrated his triumph over them on the cross!

[12] *Literally* because in him is dwelling down all the fullness of the divinity bodily

16 Do not, then, allow any one to take you to task on
questions of eating or drinking, or in the matter of annual or
monthly or weekly festivals. 17 These things are only the shadow of
what is to come; the substance is in the Christ. 18 Do not let any one
defraud you of the reality by affecting delight in so-called 'humility'
and angel-worship. Such a man busies himself with his visions,
and without reason is rendered conceited by his merely human
intellect. 19 He fails to maintain union with the Head, to whom
it is due that the whole body, nourished and knit together by the
contact and Keynesian[13] of every part, grows with a divine growth.
20 Since, with Christ, you became dead to the puerile teaching of
this world, why do you submit, as though your life were still that
of the world, 21 To such ordinances as 'Do not handle, or taste, or
touch'? 22 For all the things referred to in them cease to exist when
used. You are following mere human directions and instructions.
23 Such prohibitions appear reasonable where there is a desire for
self-imposed service, and so-called 'humility,' and harsh treatment
of the body, but are of no real value against the indulgence of our
earthly nature.

Chapter 3

1 Since, therefore, you were raised to Life with the Christ,
seek for the things that are above; for it is there that the Christ
is 'seated at the right hand of God.' 2 Fix your thoughts upon the
things that are above, not upon those that are on earth. 3 For you
died, and your Life now lies hidden, with the Christ, in God. 4 When
the Christ, who is our Life, appears, then you also will appear with
him in glory.

5 Therefore destroy all that is earthly in you—immorality,
uncleanness, passions, evil desires, and that greed which is idolatry.
6 These are the things on account of which the Wrath of God comes,
7 And to which you, like others, once devoted your lives, when you
lived for them.

8 You, however, must now lay aside all such things—anger,
passion, malice, slander, abuse. 9 Never lie to one another. Get
rid of your old self and its habits, 10 And clothe yourselves with
that new self, which, as it gains in knowledge, is being constantly

[13] *Alternately* connection

renewed 'in resemblance to him who made it.' 11 In that new life
there is no distinction between Greek and Jew, circumcised and
uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave, freeman; but Christ is
all!—and in all!

12 Therefore, as God's People, consecrated and dear to him,
clothe yourselves with tenderness of heart, kindliness, humility,
gentleness, forbearance; 13 Bearing with one another, and, when
there is any ground for complaint, forgiving one another freely. As
the Master freely forgave you, so you must forgive one another. 14
Over all these virtues put on love; for that is the girdle which makes
all complete. 15 Let the Peace that the Christ gives decide all doubts
within your hearts; for you also were called to the enjoyment of
peace as members of one Body. And show yourselves thankful. 16
Let the Message of the Christ dwell in your minds in all its wealth,
bringing all wisdom with it. Teach and admonish one another with
psalms, and hymns, and sacred songs, full of the loving-kindness of
God, lifting your hearts in song to him. 17 And, whatever you say or
do, do everything in the Name of the Lord Jesus; and through him
offer thanksgiving to God the father.

18 Wives, submit to your husbands, as befits those who
belong to the Lord. 19 Husbands, love your wives, and never treat
them harshly. 20 Children, always obey your parents; for that is
pleasant to see in those who belong to the Lord. 21 Fathers, never
irritate your children, lest they should become disheartened. 22
Slaves, always obey your earthly masters, not only when their
eyes are on you, as if you had but to please men, but giving them
ungrudging service, in your reverence for the Master. 23 Whatever
you do, do it with all your heart, as if working for the Master and
not for men, 24 Since you know that it is from the Master that you
will receive the inheritance which will be your recompense. You
are serving Christ, the Master. 25 Those who do wrong will reap the
wrong they have done; and there will be no partiality.

Chapter 4

1 Masters, do what is right and fair by your slaves, for you
know that you also have a Master—in Heaven.

2 Devote yourselves to prayer. Give your whole mind to it,
and also offer thanksgiving; 3 And at the same time pray for us, that
God may give us an opening for our Message, so that we may speak

of the truths hidden in the Christ—the truths for which I am in chains! 4 Then I shall make them known, as I ought to do.

5 Show tact in your behaviour to the outside world, making the most of every opportunity. 6 Let your conversation always be kindly, and seasoned, as it were, with salt; that you may know in each case what answer you ought to give.

7 Our dear Brother, Tychicus, will tell you all about me. He is a faithful minister, and a fellow-servant in the Master's cause. 8 I send him to you expressly that you may learn our circumstances, and that he may give you encouragement. 9 With him will be Onesimus, our dear faithful Brother, who is one of yourselves. They will tell you all that is going on here. 10 My fellow-prisoner, Aristarchus, sends you his greeting, and Barnabas's cousin, Mark, sends his. (You have received directions about him. If he comes to you, make him welcome.) 11 Joshua, who is called Justus, also sends his greeting. These are the only converts from Judaism who have worked with me for the kingdom of God; I have found them a great comfort. 12 Epaphras, who is one of yourselves, sends you his greeting. He is a servant of Christ Jesus, and is always most earnest in your behalf in his prayers, praying that you may stand firm, with a matured faith and with a sure conviction of all that is in accordance with God's will. 13 I can bear testimony to the deep interest he takes in you, as well as in the Brethren at Laodicea and at Hierapolis. 14 Luke, our dear doctor, sends you his greeting, and Demas sends his. 15 Give my greeting to the Brethren at Laodicea, and to Nymphe, and to the Church that meets at her house. 16 And when this letter has been read to you, see that it is also read before the Church at Laodicea, and that you yourselves read the letter which will be forwarded from there. 17 Give this message to Archippus—'Take care to discharge to the best of your ability the office to which you were appointed in the Master's Cause.' 18 I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. Remember these chains of mine. God's blessing be with you.

The First Letter of Paul to the Thessalonians

Chapter 1

1 To the Thessalonian Church in union with God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ, from Paul, Silas, and Timothy. May God bless you and give you peace.

2 We always mention you in our prayers and thank God for you all; 3 Recalling continually before our God and Father the efforts that have resulted from your faith, the toil prompted by your love, and the patient endurance sustained by your hope in our Lord Jesus Christ. 4 Brothers, whom God loves, we know that he has chosen you, 5 Because the Good News that we brought came home to you, not merely as so many words, but with a power and a fullness of conviction due to the Holy Spirit. For you know the life that we lived among you for your good.

6 And you yourselves began to follow, not only our example, but the Master's also; and, in spite of much suffering, you welcomed the Message with a joy inspired by the Holy Spirit, 7 And so became a pattern to all who believed in Christ throughout Macedonia and Greece. 8 For it was from you that the Lord's Message resounded throughout Macedonia and Greece; and, more than that, your faith in God has become known far and wide; so that there is no need for us to say another word. 9 Indeed, in speaking about us, the people themselves tell of the reception you gave us, and how, turning to God from your idols, you became servants of the true and living God, 10 And are now awaiting the return from Heaven of his Son whom he raised from the dead—Jesus, our deliverer from the Coming Wrath.

Chapter 2

1 Yes, Brothers, you yourselves know that your reception of us was not without result. 2 For, although we had experienced suffering and ill-treatment, as you know, at Philippi, we had the courage, by the help of our God, to tell you God's Good News in spite of great opposition. 3 Our appeal to you was not based on a

delusion, nor was it made from unworthy motives, or with any intention of misleading you. 4 But, having been found worthy by God to be entrusted with the Good News, therefore we tell it; with a view to please, not men, but God who proves our hearts. 5 Never at any time, as you know, did we use the language of flattery, or make false professions in order to hide selfish aims. God will bear witness to that. 6 Nor did we seek to win honour from men, whether from you or from others, although, as Apostles of Christ, we might have burdened you with our support.

7 But we lived among you with the simplicity of a child; we were like a woman nursing her own children. 8 In our strong affection for you, that seemed to us the best way of sharing with you, not only God's Good news, but our very lives as well—so dear had you become to us. 9 You will not have forgotten, Brothers, our labour and toil. Night and day we used to work at our trades, so as not be a burden to any of you, while we proclaimed to you God's Good News. 10 You will bear witness, and God also, that our relations with you who believed in Christ were pure, and upright, and beyond reproach. 11 Indeed, you know that, like a father with his own children, we used to encourage and comfort every one of you, and solemnly plead with you; 12 So that you should make your daily lives worthy of God who is calling you into the glory of his Kingdom.

13 This, too, is a reason why we, on our part, are continually thanking God—because, in receiving the teaching that you had from us, you accepted it, not as the teaching of man, but as what it really is—the teaching of God, which is even now doing its work within you who believe in Christ. 14 For you, Brothers, began to follow the example of the Churches of God in Judea which are in union with Jesus Christ; you, in your turn, suffering at the hands of your fellow-citizens, in the same way as those Churches did at the hands of the Jews— 15 The men who killed both the Lord Jesus and the Prophets, and persecuted us also. They do not try to please God, and they are enemies to all mankind, 16 For they would prevent us from speaking to the Gentiles with a view to their Salvation, and thus are always 'filling up the measure of their iniquity.' But the Wrath of God has come upon them to the full!

17 As for ourselves, Brothers, our having been bereaved of you even for a short time—though in body only, and not in spirit—

made us all the more eager to see your faces again; and the longing to do so was strong upon us. 18 That was why we made up our minds to go and see you—at least I, Paul, did, more than once—but Satan put difficulties in our way. 19 For what hope or joy will be ours, or what crown shall we have to boast of, in the presence of our Lord Jesus, at his Coming, if it be not you? 20 You are our pride and our delight!

Chapter 3

1 And so, as we could bear it no longer, we made up our minds to remain behind alone at Athens, 2 And sent Timothy, our Brother and God's minister of the Good News of the Christ, to strengthen you, and to encourage you in your faith, 3 So that none of you should be shaken by the troubles through which you are passing. You yourselves know that we are destined to meet with such things. 4 For, even while we were with you, we warned you beforehand that we were certain to encounter trouble. And so it proved, as you know. 5 Therefore, since I could no longer endure the uncertainty, I sent to make inquiries about your faith, fearing that the Tempter had tempted you, and that our toil might prove to have been in vain.

6 But, when Timothy recently returned to us from you with good news of your faith and love, and told us how kindly you think of us—always longing, he said, to see us, just as we are longing to see you— 7 On hearing his, we felt encouraged about you, Brothers, in the midst of all our difficulties and troubles, by your faith. 8 For it is new life to us to know that you are holding fast to the Lord. 9 How can we thank God enough for all the happiness that you are giving us in the sight of our God? 10 Night and day we pray most earnestly that we may see you face to face, and make good any deficiency in your faith.

11 May our God and Father himself, and Jesus, our Lord, make the way plain for us to come to you. 12 And for you, may the Lord fill you to overflowing with love for one another and for every one, just as we are filled with love for you; 13 And so make your hearts strong, and your lives pure beyond reproach, in the sight of our God and Father, at the Coming of our Lord Jesus, with all his Holy Ones.

Chapter 4

1 Further, Brothers, we beg and exhort you in the name of
our Lord Jesus to carry out more fully than ever—as indeed you
are already doing—all that you have heard from us as to what your
daily life must be, if it is to please God. 2 For you have not forgotten
the directions that we gave you on the authority of our Lord Jesus. 3
For this is God's purpose—that you should be pure; abstaining from
all immorality; 4 Each of you recognizing the duty of taking one
woman for his wife, purely and honourably, 5 And not for the mere
gratification of his passions, like the Gentiles who know nothing of
God; 6 None of you over-reaching or taking advantage of his Brother
in such matters. 'The Lord takes vengeance' upon all who do such
things, as we have already warned you and solemnly declared. 7 For
God's Call to us does not permit of an impure life, but demands
purity. 8 Therefore he who disregards this warning disregards, not
man, but God who gives you his Holy Spirit.

9 As to love for the Brethren there is no need to write to you;
for you have yourselves been taught by God to love one another;
10 And indeed you do act in this spirit towards all the Brethren
throughout Macedonia. Yet, Brothers, we urge you to still further
efforts. 11 Make it your ambition to live quietly, and to attend to
your own business, and to work with your hands, as we directed
you; 12 So that your conduct may win respect from those outside the
Church, and that you may not want for anything.

13 We do not wish you to remain in ignorance, Brothers, with
regard to those who have passed to their rest, that your grief may
not be like that of others, who have no hope. 14 For, as we believe
that Jesus died and rose again, so also we believe that God will
bring, with Jesus, those who through him have passed to their rest.
15 This we tell you on the authority of the Lord—that those of us who
are still living at the Coming of the Lord will not anticipate those
who have passed to their rest. 16 For, with a loud summons, with
the shout of an archangel, and with the trumpet-call of God, the
Lord himself will come down from Heaven. 17 Then those who died
in union with Christ shall rise first; and afterwards we who are still
living shall be caught up in the clouds, with them, to meet the Lord
in the air; and so we shall be for ever with the Lord. 18 Therefore,
comfort one another with what I have told you.

Chapter 5

1 But as to the times and the moments, there is no need,
Brothers, for any one to write to you. 2 You yourselves know well
that the Day of the Lord will come just as a thief comes in the night.
3 When people are saying 'All is quiet and safe,' it is then that, like
birth-pains upon a woman with child, Ruin comes suddenly upon
them, and there will be no escape! 4 You, however, Brothers, are not
in darkness, that the daylight should take you by surprise as if you
were thieves. 5 For you all are 'Sons of Light' and 'Sons of the Day.'
We have nothing to do with night, or darkness.

6 Therefore let us not sleep as others do. No, let us be
watchful and self-controlled. 7 It is at night that men sleep, and at
night that drunkards get drunk. 8 But let us, who belong to the Day,
control ourselves, and put on faith and love as a breast plate, and
the hope of Salvation as a helmet. 9 For God destined us, not for
Wrath, but to win Salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, who
died for us, 10 That, whether we are still watching or have fallen
asleep, we may live with him.

11 Therefore encourage one another, and try to build up
one another's characters, as indeed you are doing. 12 We beg you,
Brothers, to value those who toil among you, and are your leaders
in the Lord's service, and give you counsel. 13 Hold them in the
very greatest esteem and affection for the sake of their work. Live
at peace with one another. 14 We entreat you also, Brothers—warn
the disorderly, comfort the faint-hearted, give a helping hand to
the weak, and be patient with every one. 15 Take care that none of
you ever pays back wrong for wrong, but always follow the kindest
course with one another and with every one.

16 Always be joyful; 17 Never cease to pray; 18 Under all
circumstances give thanks to God. For this is his will for you as
made known in Christ Jesus. 19 Do not quench the Spirit; 20 Do not
make light of preaching. 21 Bring everything to the test; cling to what
is good; 22 Shun every form of evil.

23 May God himself, the giver of peace, make you altogether
holy; and may your spirits, souls, and bodies be kept altogether
faultless until the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. 24 He who calls
you will not fail you; he will complete his work. 25 Brothers, pray for
us. 26 Greet all the Brothers with a sacred kiss. 27 I adjure you in the

Lord's name to have this letter read to all the Brethren. [28] May the blessing of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

The Second Letter of Paul to the Thessalonians

Chapter 1

[1] To the Thessalonian Church in union with God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ, From Paul, Silas, and Timothy. [2] May God, the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace. [3] Brothers, it is our duty always to thank God about you, as is but right, considering the wonderful growth of your faith, and because, without exception, your love for one another is continually increasing. [4] So much is this the case that we ourselves speak with pride, before the Churches of God, of the patience and faith which you have shown, in spite of all the persecutions and troubles that you are enduring.

[5] These persecutions will vindicate the justice of God's judgement, and will result in your being reckoned worthy of God's Kingdom, for the sake of which you are now afflicted; [6] Since God deems it just to inflict suffering upon those who are now inflicting suffering upon you, [7] And to give relief to you who are suffering, as well as to us, at the Appearing of the Lord Jesus from Heaven with his mighty angels, 'in flaming fire.' [8] Then he will 'inflict punishment upon those who refuse to know God, and upon those who turn a deaf ear' to the Good News of Jesus, our Lord. [9] These men will pay the penalty of unutterable Ruin—banished 'from the presence of the Lord and from the glorious manifestation of his might, [10] When he comes to be honour ed in his People,' and to be revered in all who have learned to believe in him (for you also believed our testimony)—as he will be on 'That Day.'

[11] With this in view, our constant prayer for you is that our God may count you worthy of the Call that you have received, and by his power make perfect your delight in all goodness and the efforts that have resulted from your faith. [12] Then, in the loving-kindness of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ, will the name of Jesus, our Lord, be honoured in you, and you in him.

Chapter 2

1 As to the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and our being
gathered to meet him, we beg you, Brothers, 2 Not lightly to let your
minds become unsettled, nor yet to be disturbed by any revelation,
or by any message, or by any letter, purporting to come from us, to
the effect that the Day of the Lord is come.

3 Do not let any one deceive you, whatever he may do. For
it will not come until after the Great Apostasy, and the appearing
of that Incarnation of Wickedness, that the Lost soul, 4 Who so
opposes himself to every one that is spoken of as a God or as an
object of worship, and so exalts himself above them, that he seats
himself in the Temple of God, and displays himself as God! 5 Do not
you remember how, when I was with you, I used to speak to you of
all this? 6 And you know now what the restraining influence is which
prevents his appearing before his appointed time. 7 Wickedness,
indeed, is already at work in secret; but only until he who at present
restrains it is removed out of the way. 8 Then will 'Wickedness
Incarnate' appear, but the Lord Jesus will destroy him with the
breath of his lips, and annihilate him by the splendour of his
Coming. 9 For at the Coming of the Lord there will be great activity
on the part of Satan, in the form of all kinds of deceptive miracles,
signs, and marvels, as well as of wicked attempts to delude— 10 to
the ruin of those who are on the path to destruction, because they
have never received and loved the Truth to their own Salvation. 11
That is why God places them under the influence of a delusion, to
cause them to believe a lie; 12 So that sentence may be passed on all
those who refuse to believe the Truth, but delight in wickedness.

13 But, Brothers, whom the Lord loves, it is our duty always
to thank God about you, for, from the first, God chose you for
Salvation through the purifying influence of the Spirit, and your
belief in the Truth. 14 To this you were called by the Good News
which we brought you, to attain to the glory of our Lord Jesus
Christ. 15 Stand firm then, Brothers, and hold fast to the truths that
we taught you, whether by word or by letter.

16 And may our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God our
Father, who loved us and, in his loving-kindness, gave us unfailing
consolation and good ground for hope, 17 Console your hearts, and
strengthen you to do and to say all that is right.

Chapter 3

1 In conclusion, Brothers, pray for us—pray that the Lord's
Message may spread rapidly, and be received everywhere with
honour, as it was among you; 2 And that we may be preserved from
wrong-headed and wicked men—for it is not every one who believes
in Christ. 3 But the Lord will not fail you; he will give you strength,
and guard you from Evil. 4 Yes, and the confidence that our union
with the Lord enables us to place in you leads us to believe that you
are doing, and will do, what we direct you. 5 May the Lord bring you
to the love of God, and to the patience of the Christ.

6 We urge you, Brothers, in the name of the Lord Jesus
Christ, to avoid any Brother who is living an ill-ordered life, which
is not in agreement with the teaching that you received from us. 7
For you know well that you ought to follow our example. When we
were with you, our life was not ill-ordered, 8 Nor did we eat any
one's bread without paying for it. Night and day, labouring and
toiling, we used to work at our trades, so as not to be a burden upon
any of you. 9 This was not because we had not a right to receive
support, but our object was to give you a pattern for you to copy. 10
Indeed, when we were with you, what we urged upon you was—'If
a man does not choose to work, then he shall not eat.' 11 We hear
that there are among you people who are living ill-ordered lives,
and who, instead of attending to their own business, are mere busy-
bodies. 12 All such people we urge, and entreat, in the name of the
Lord Jesus Christ, to attend quietly to their business, and earn their
own living. 13 You, Brothers, must not grow weary of doing what is
right. 14 If any one disregards what we have said in this letter, mark
that man and avoid his company, that he may feel ashamed. 15 Yet
do not think of him as an enemy, but caution him as you would a
Brother.

16 May the Lord, from whom all peace comes, himself give
you his peace at all times and in all ways. May he be with you all. 17
I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. It is my signature
to every letter. This is how I write. 18 May the blessing of our Lord
Jesus Christ be with you all.

The First Letter of Paul to Timothy

Chapter 1

1 From Paul, an Apostle of Christ Jesus by the appointment
of God, our Saviour, and Christ Jesus, our Hope. 2 To Timothy, my
true Child in the Faith: May God, the Father, and Christ Jesus, our
Lord, bless you, and be merciful to you, and give you peace. 3 I beg
you, as I did when I was on my way into Macedonia, to remain at
Ephesus; that you may instruct certain people there not to teach
new and strange doctrines, 4 nor to devote their attention to legends
and interminable genealogies, which tend to give rise to argument
rather than to further that divine plan which is revealed in the
Faith.

5 The object of all instruction is to call forth that love which
comes from a pure heart, a clear conscience, and a sincere faith. 6 And
it is because they have not aimed at these things that the attention
of certain people has been diverted to unprofitable subjects. 7
They want to be Teachers of the Law, and yet do not understand
either the words they use, or the subjects on which they speak so
confidently. 8 We know, of course, that the Law is excellent, when
used legitimately, 9 by one who recognizes that laws were not made
for good men, but for the lawless and disorderly, for irreligious
and wicked people, for those who are irreverent and profane, for
those who ill-treat their fathers or mothers, for murderers, 10 for the
immoral, for people guilty of sodomy, for slave-dealers, for liars,
for perjurers, and for whatever else is opposed to sound Christian
teaching— 11 as is taught in the glorious Good News of the ever-
blessed God, with which I was entrusted.

12 I am thankful to Christ Jesus, our Lord, who has been
my strength, for showing that he thought me worthy of trust by
appointing me to his ministry, 13 though I once used to blaspheme,
and to persecute, and to insult. Yet mercy was shown me, because
I acted in ignorance, while still an unbeliever; 14 and the loving-
kindness of our Lord was boundless, and filled me with that faith
and love which come from union with Christ Jesus. 15 How true
the saying is, and worthy of the fullest acceptance, that 'Christ

Jesus came into the world to save sinners'! And there is no greater sinner than I! 16 Yet mercy was shown me for the express purpose that Christ Jesus might exhibit in my case, beyond all others, his exhaustless patience, as an example for those who were afterwards to believe on him and attain Immortal Life. 17 To the Immortal King, ever-living, invisible, the one God, be ascribed honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This, then, is the charge that I lay upon you, Timothy, my Child, in accordance with what was predicted of you—Fight the good fight in the spirit of those predictions, 19 with faith, and with a clear conscience; and it is because they have thrust this aside, that, as regards the Faith, some have wrecked their lives. 20 Hymenaeus and Alexander are instances—the men whom I delivered over to Satan, that they might be taught not to blaspheme.

Chapter 2

1 First of all, then, I urge that petitions, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings should be offered for every one, 2 especially for kings and all who are in high positions, in order that we may lead a quiet and peaceful life in a deeply religious and reverent spirit. 3 This will be good and acceptable in the eyes of God, our Saviour, 4 whose will is that every one should be saved, and attain to a full knowledge of the Truth. 5 There is but one God, and one mediator between God and men—the man, Christ Jesus, 6 who gave himself as a ransom on behalf of all men. This must be our testimony, as opportunities present themselves; 7 and it was for this that I was myself appointed a Herald and an Apostle (I am telling the simple truth and no lie)—a Teacher of the Gentiles in the Faith and Truth. 8 My desire, then, is that it should be the custom everywhere for the men to lead the prayers, with hands reverently uplifted, avoiding heated controversy.

9 I also desire that women should adorn themselves with appropriate dress, worn quietly and modestly, and not with wreaths or gold ornaments for the hair, or pearls, or costly clothing, 10 but—as is proper for women who profess to be religious—with good actions. 11 A woman should listen silently to her teachers, and show them all deference. 12 I do not consent to a woman's becoming a teacher, or exercising authority over a man; she ought to be silent. 13 Adam was formed first, not Eve. 14 And it was not Adam who was

deceived; it was the woman who was entirely deceived and fell into sin. 15 But women will find their salvation in motherhood, if they never abandon faith, love, or holiness, and behave with modesty.

Chapter 3

1 How true is that saying! When a man aspires to be a Presiding-Officer in the Church, he is ambitious for a noble task. 2 The Presiding-Officer should be a man of blameless character; a faithful husband; living a temperate, discreet, and well-ordered life; hospitable, and a skilful teacher, 3 not addicted to drink or brawling, but of a forbearing and peaceable disposition, and not a lover of money; 4 he should be a man who rules his own household well, and whose children are kept under control and are well-behaved. 5 If a man does not know how to rule his own household, how can he take charge of the Church of God? 6 The Presiding-Officer should not be a recent convert, that he may not be blinded by pride and fall under the same condemnation as the Devil. 7 He should also be well spoken of by outsiders, that he may not incur censure and so fall into the snares of the Devil.

8 So, too, Assistant-Officers should be serious and straightforward men, not given to taking much drink or to questionable money-making, 9 but men who hold the deep truths of the Faith and have a clear conscience. 10 They should be tested first, and only appointed to their Office if no objection is raised against them. 11 It should be the same with the women. They should be serious, not gossips, sober, and trustworthy in all respects. 12 Assistant-Officers should be faithful husbands, and men who rule their children and their households well. 13 Those who have filled that post with honour gain for themselves an honourable position, as well as great confidence through the faith that they place in Christ Jesus.

14 I am writing this to you, though I hope that I shall come to see you before long; 15 but in case I should be delayed, I want you to know what your conduct ought to be in the Household of God, which is the Church of the Living God—the pillar and stay of the Truth. 16 Yes, and confessedly wonderful are the deep truths of our religion; for—'He was revealed in our nature, pronounced righteous in spirit, seen by angels, proclaimed among the Gentiles, believed on in the world, taken up into glory.'

Chapter 4

1 But the Spirit distinctly says that in later times there will be
some who will fall away from the Faith, and devote their attention to
misleading spirits, and to the teaching of demons, 2 who will make
use of the hypocrisy of lying teachers. These men's consciences
are seared, 3 and they discourage marriage and enjoin abstinence
from certain kinds of food; though God created these foods to be
enjoyed thankfully by those who hold the Faith and have attained
a full knowledge of the Truth. 4 Everything created by God is good,
and there in nothing that need be rejected—provided only that it is
received thankfully; 5 for it is consecrated by God's blessing and by
prayer.

6 Put all this before the Brethren, and you will be a good
servant of Christ Jesus, sustained by the precepts of the Faith and
of that Good Teaching by which you have guided your life. 7 As
for profane legends and old wives' tales, leave them alone. Train
yourself to lead a religious life; 8 for while the training of the body
is of service in some respects, religion is of service in all, carrying
with it, as it does, a promise of Life both here and hereafter. 9 How
true that saying is and worthy of the fullest acceptance! 10 With that
aim we toil and struggle, for we have set our hopes on the Living
God, who is the Saviour of all men, and especially of those who
hold the Faith. 11 Dwell upon these things in your teaching. 12 Do
not let any one look down on you because you are young, but, by
your conversation, your conduct, your love, your faith, and your
purity, be an example to those who hold the Faith. 13 Till I come,
apply yourself to public reading, preaching, and teaching. 14 Do not
neglect the divine gift within you, which was given you, amid many
a prediction, when the hands of the Officers of the Church were laid
on your head. 15 Practice these things, devote yourself to them, so
that your progress may be plain to every one. 16 Look to yourself
as well as to your teaching. Persevere in this, for your doing so will
mean Salvation for yourself as well as for your hearers.

Chapter 5

1 Do not reprimand an older man, but plead with him as if
he were your father. Treat the young men as brothers, 2 the older
women as mothers, and the younger women as sisters—with all

purity.

3 Show consideration for widows—I mean those who are
really widowed. 4 but, if a widow has children or grand-children,
let them learn to show proper regard for the members of their own
family first, and to make some return to their parents; for that is
pleasing in God's sight. 5 As for the woman who is really widowed
and left quite alone, her hopes are fixed on God, and she devotes
herself to prayers and supplications night and day. 6 But the life of
a widow who is devoted to pleasure is a living death. 7 Those are the
points on which you should dwell, that there may be no call for your
censure. 8 Any one who fails to provide for his own relations, and
especially for those under his own roof, has disowned the Faith, and
is worse than an unbeliever. 9 A widow, when her name is added
to the list, should not be less than sixty years old; she should have
been a faithful wife, 10 and be well spoken of for her kind actions.
She should have brought up children, have shown hospitality
to strangers, have washed the feet of her fellow Christians, have
relieved those who were in distress, and devoted herself to every
kind of good action. 11 But you should exclude the younger widows
from the list; for, when they grow restive under the yoke of the
Christ, they want to marry, 12 and so they bring condemnation upon
themselves for having broken their previous promise. 13 And not
only that, but they learn to be idle as they go about from house to
house. Nor are they merely idle, but they also become gossips and
busy-bodies, and talk of what they ought not. 14 Therefore I advise
young widows to marry, bear children, and attend to their homes,
and so avoid giving the enemy an opportunity for scandal. 15 There
are some who have already left us, to follow Satan. 16 Any Christian
woman, who has relations who are widows, ought to relieve them
and not allow them to become a burden to the Church, so that the
Church may relieve those widows who are really widowed.

17 Those Officers of the Church who fill their office well
should be held deserving of especial consideration, particularly
those whose work lies in preaching and teaching. 18 The words of
Scripture are—'Thou shalt not muzzle the ox while it is treading
out the grain.' and again— 'The worker is worth his wages.' 19 Do
not receive a charge against an Officer of the Church, unless it
is supported by two or three witnesses; 20 but rebuke offenders
publicly, so that others may take warning. 21 I charge you solemnly,

before God and Christ Jesus and the Chosen Angels, to carry out these directions, unswayed by prejudice, never acting with partiality. 22 Never ordain any one hastily, and take no part in the wrong-doing of others. Keep your life pure. 23 Do not continue to drink water only, but take a little wine on account of the weakness of your stomach, and your frequent ailments. 24 There are some men whose sins are conspicuous and lead on to judgement, while there are others whose sins dog their steps. 25 In the same way noble deeds become conspicuous, and those which are otherwise cannot be concealed.

Chapter 6

1 All who are in the position of slaves should regard their masters as deserving of the greatest respect, so that the Name of God, and our Teaching, may not be maligned. 2 Those who have Christian masters should not think less of them because they are their Brothers, but on the contrary they should serve them all the better, because those who are to benefit by their good work are dear to them as their fellow Christians. Those are the things to insist upon in your teaching. 3 Any one who teaches otherwise, and refuses his assent to sound instruction—the instruction of our Lord Jesus Christ—and to the teaching of religion, 4 is puffed up with conceit, not really knowing anything, but having a morbid craving for discussions and arguments. Such things only give rise to envy, quarrelling, recriminations, base suspicions, 5 and incessant wrangling on the part of these corrupt-minded people who have lost all hold on the Truth, and who think of religion only as a source of gain.

6 And a great source of gain religion is, when it brings contentment with it! 7 For we brought nothing into the world, because we cannot even carry anything out of it. 8 So, with food and shelter, we will be content. 9 Those who want to be rich fall into the snares of temptation, and become the prey of many foolish and harmful ambitions, which plunge people into Destruction and Ruin. 10 Love of money is a source of all kinds of evil; and in their eagerness to be rich some have wandered away from the Faith, and have been pierced to the heart by many a regret. 11 But do you, Servant of God, avoid all this. Aim at righteousness, piety, faith, love, endurance, gentleness. 12 Run the great race of the Faith, and win the Immortal

Life. It was for this that you received the Call, and, in the presence of many witnesses, made the great profession of Faith.

13 I urge you, as in the sight of God, the source of all life, and of Christ Jesus who before Pontius Pilate made the great profession of Faith— 14 I urge you to keep his Command free from stain or reproach, until the Appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ. 15 This will be brought about in his own time by the one ever-blessed Potentate, the King of all kings and Lord of all lords, 16 who alone is possessed of immortality and dwells in unapproachable light, whom no man has ever seen or ever can see—to whom be ascribed honour and power for ever. Amen. 17 Urge upon those who are wealthy in this life not to pride themselves, or fix their hopes, on so uncertain a thing as wealth, but on God, who gives us a wealth of enjoyment on every side. 18 Urge upon them to show kindness, to exhibit a wealth of good actions, to be open-handed and generous, 19 storing up for themselves what in the future will prove to be a good foundation, that they may gain the only true Life. 20 Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to you. Avoid the profane prattle and contradictions of what some miscall ‘theology,’ 21 for there are those who, while asserting their proficiency in it, have yet, as regards the Faith, gone altogether astray. God bless you all.

The Second Letter of Paul to Timothy

Chapter 1

1 To Timothy, my dear Child, from Paul who, by the will of
God, is an Apostle of Christ Jesus, charged to proclaim the Life that
comes from union with Christ Jesus. 2 May God, the Father, and
Christ Jesus, our Lord, bless you, and be merciful to you, and give
you peace. 3 I am thankful to God, whom I serve, as my ancestors
did, with a clear conscience, when I remember you, as I never fail
to do, in my prayers—night and day alike, 4 as I think of your tears,
longing to see you, that my happiness may be completed, 5 now
that I have been reminded of the sincere faith that you have shown.
That faith was seen first in your grandmother Lois and your mother
Eunice, and is now, I am convinced, in you also.

6 And that is my reason for reminding you to stir into flame
that gift of God, which is yours through your ordination at my hands.
7 For the Spirit which God gave us was not a spirit of cowardice,
but a spirit of power, love, and self-control. 8 Do not, therefore, be
ashamed of the testimony which we have to bear to our Lord, nor yet
of me who am a prisoner for him; but join with me in suffering for
the Good News, as far as God enables you. 9 It was God who saved
us, and from him we received our solemn Call—not as a reward
for anything that we had done, but in fulfilment of his own loving
purpose. For that love was extended to us, through Christ Jesus,
before time began, 10 and has now been made apparent through the
Appearing of our Saviour, Christ Jesus; who has made an end of
Death, and has brought Life and Immortality to light by that Good
News, 11 of which I was myself appointed a Herald and Apostle,
and Teacher. 12 That is why I am undergoing these sufferings; yet
I feel no shame, for I know in whom I have put my faith, and am
convinced that he is able to guard what I have entrusted to him until
'That Day.' 13 Keep before you, as an example of sound teaching,
all that you learnt from me as you listened with that faith and love
which come from union with Christ Jesus. 14 Guard by the help of
the Holy Spirit, who is within us, the glorious trust that has been
committed to you.

15 You know, of course, that all our friends in Roman
Asia turned their backs on me, and among them Phygellus and
Hermogenes. 16 May the Lord show mercy to the household of
Onesiphorus; for he often cheered me and was not ashamed of
my chains. 17 On the contrary, when he arrived in Rome, he sought
eagerly for me till he found me. 18 The Lord grant that he may find
mercy at the hands of the Lord on 'That Day.' The many services
that he rendered at Ephesus you have the best means of knowing.

Chapter 2

1 Do you, then, my Child, find strength in the help which
comes from the union with Christ Jesus; 2 and what you learnt from
me, in the presence of many listeners, entrust to reliable men, who
will be able in their turn to teach others. 3 Share hardships with
me, as a true soldier of Christ Jesus. 4 A soldier on active service,
to please his superior officer, always avoids entangling himself in
the affairs of ordinary life. 5 No athlete is ever awarded the wreath
of victory unless he has kept the rules. 6 The labourer who does
the work should be the first to receive a share of the fruits of the
earth. 7 Reflect upon what I say; the Lord will always help you to
understand.

8 Keep before your mind Jesus Christ, raised from the dead,
a descendant of David, as told in the Good News entrusted to me; 9
in the service of which I am suffering hardships, even to being put
in fetters as a criminal. But the Message of God is not fettered; 10
and that is why I submit to anything for the sake of God's People,
that they also may obtain the Salvation which comes from union
with Christ Jesus, and imperishable glory. 11 How true this saying
is—'If we have shared his death, we shall also share his life. 12 If we
continue to endure, we shall also share his throne. If we should ever
disown him, he, too, will disown us. 13 If we lose our trust, he is still
to be trusted, for he cannot be false to himself!'

14 Remind people of all this; urge them solemnly, as in the
sight of God, to avoid controversy, a useless thing and the ruin
of those who listen to it. 15 Do your utmost to show yourself true
to God, a workman with no reason to be ashamed, accurate in
delivering the Message of the Truth. 16 Avoid profane prattle. Those
who indulge in it only get deeper into irreligious ways, 17 and their
teaching will spread like a cancer. Hymenaeus and Philetus are

instances of this. 18 They have gone completely astray as regards the
Truth; they say that a resurrection has already taken place, and so
upset some people's faith.

19 Yet God's firm foundation still stands unmoved, and it
bears this inscription—'THE LORD KNOWS THOSE WHO ARE
HIS'; and this—'LET ALL THOSE WHO USE THE NAME OF THE
LORD TURN AWAY FROM WICKEDNESS.' 20 Now in a large
house there are not only things of gold and silver, but also others of
wood and earthenware, some for better and some for common use.
21 If, then, a man has escaped from the pollution of such errors as I
have mentioned, he will be like a thing kept for better use, set apart,
serviceable to its owner, ready for any good purpose.

22 Flee from the passions of youth, but pursue righteousness,
faith, love, and peace, in the company of those who, with a pure
heart, invoke the Lord. 23 Shun foolish and ignorant discussions, for
you know that they only breed quarrels; 24 and a Servant of the Lord
should never quarrel. He ought, on the contrary, to be courteous to
every one, a skilful teacher, and forbearing. 25 He should instruct
his opponents in a gentle spirit; for, possibly, God may give them a
repentance that will lead to a fuller knowledge of Truth, 26 and they
may yet come to a sober mind, and escape from the snares of the
Devil, when captured by the Lord's Servant to do the will of God.

Chapter 3

1 Be sure of this, that in the last days difficult times will
come. 2 Men will be selfish, mercenary, boastful, haughty, and
blasphemous; disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, impure,
3 incapable of affection, merciless, slanderous, wanting in self-
control, brutal, careless of the right, 4 treacherous, reckless, and
puffed up with pride; they will love pleasure more than they love
God; 5 and while they retain the outward form of religion, they will
not allow it to influence them. Turn your back on such men as these.
6 For among them are to be found those who creep into homes and
captivate weak women—women who, loaded with sins, and slaves
to all kinds of passions, 7 are always learning, and yet never able
to attain to a real knowledge of the Truth. 8 Just as Jannes and
Jambres opposed Moses, so do these people, in their turn, oppose
the Truth. Their minds are corrupted, and, as regards the Faith,
they are utterly worthless. 9 They will not, however, make further

progress; for their wicked folly will be plain to every one, just as that of Jannes and Jambres was.

10 But you, Timothy, were a close observer of my teaching,
my conduct, my purposes, my faith, my forbearance, my love, and
my patient endurance, 11 as well as of my persecutions, and of the
sufferings which I met with at Antioch, Iconium, and Lystra. You
know what persecutions I underwent; and yet the Lord brought
me safe out of all! 12 Yes, and all who aim at living a religious life
in union with Christ Jesus will have to suffer persecution; 13 but
wicked people and impostors will go from bad to worse, deceiving
others and deceived themselves. 14 You, however, must stand by
what you learnt and accepted as true. You know who they were
from whom you learnt it; 15 and that, from your childhood, you
have known the Sacred Writings, which can give you the wisdom
that, through belief in Christ Jesus, leads to Salvation. 16 Everything
that is written under divine inspiration[14] is helpful for teaching,
for refuting error, for giving guidance, and for training others in
righteousness; 17 so that the Servant of God may be perfect himself,
and perfectly equipped for every good action.

Chapter 4

1 I solemnly charge you, in the sight of God and of Christ
Jesus, who will one day judge the living and the dead—I charge you
by his Appearing and by his Kingdom:— 2 Proclaim the Message,
be ready in season and out of season, convince, rebuke, encourage,
never failing to instruct with forbearance. 3 For a time will come
when people will not tolerate sound teaching. They will follow their
own wishes, and, in their itching for novelty, procure themselves
a crowd of teachers. 4 They will turn a deaf ear to the Truth, and
give their attention to legends instead. 5 But you, Timothy, must
always be temperate. Face hardships; do the work of a Missionary;
discharge all the duties of your Office. 6 As for me, my life blood is
already being poured out; the time of my departure is close at hand.
7 I have run the great Race; I have finished the Course; I have kept
the Faith. 8 And now the crown of righteousness awaits me, which
the Lord, the just Judge, will give me on 'That Day'—and not only to
me, but to all who have loved his Appearing.

[14] *Literally* God-breathed.

9 Do your utmost to come to me soon; 10 for Demas, in his
love for the world, has deserted me. He has gone to Thessalonica,
Crescens to Galatia, and Titus to Dalmatia. 11 There is no one but
Luke with me. Pick up Mark on your way, and bring him with you,
for he is useful to me in my work. 12 I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus.
13 Bring with you, when you come, the cloak which I left at Troas with
Carpus, and the books, especially the parchments. 14 Alexander, the
coppersmith, showed much ill-feeling towards me. 'The Lord will
give him what his actions deserve.' 15 Do you also, be on your guard
against him, for he is strongly opposed to our teaching.

16 At my first trial no one stood by me. They all deserted
me. May it never be counted against them! 17 But the Lord came
to my help and strengthened me, in order that, through me, the
proclamation should be made so widely that all the Gentiles should
hear it; and I was rescued 'out of the Lion's mouth.' 18 The Lord
will rescue me from all evil, and bring me safe into his Heavenly
Kingdom. All glory to him for ever and ever! Amen. 19 Give my
greeting to Prisca and Aquila, and to the household of Onesiphorus.
20 Erastus remained at Corinth, and I left Thophimus ill at Miletus.
21 Do your utmost to come before winter. Eubulus, Pudens, Linus
and Claudia send you their greetings, and so do all our Brothers. 22
May the Lord be with your soul. God bless you all.

The Letter of Paul to Titus

Chapter 1

1 From Paul, a servant of God, and an Apostle of Jesus
Christ, charged to strengthen the faith of God's Chosen People,
and their knowledge of that Truth which makes for godliness, 2 and
is based on the hope of Immortal Life, which God, who never lies,
promised before the ages began, 3 and has revealed at his own time
in his Message, with the proclamation of which I was entrusted by
the command of God our Saviour. 4 To Titus, my true Child in our
one Faith: May God, the Father, and Christ Jesus, our Saviour,
bless you and give you peace.

5 My reason for leaving you in Crete was that you might put
in order what had been left unsettled, and appoint Officers of the
Church in the various towns, as I myself directed you.

6 They are to be men of irreproachable character, who
are faithful husbands, whose children are Christians and have
never been charged with dissolute conduct or have been unruly.
7 For a Presiding-Officer, as God's steward, ought to be a man of
irreproachable character; not self-willed or quick-tempered, nor
addicted to drink or to brawling or to questionable money-making.
8 On the contrary, he should be hospitable, eager for the right
discreet, upright, a man of holy life and capable of self-restraint,
9 who holds doctrine that can be relied on as being in accordance
with the accepted Teaching; so that he may be able to encourage
others by sound teaching, as well as to refute our opponents. 10
There are, indeed, many unruly persons—great talkers who deceive
themselves, principally converts from Judaism, 11 whose mouths
ought to be stopped; for they upset whole households by teaching
what they ought not to teach, merely to make questionable gains. 12
It was a Cretan—one of their own teachers—who said: 'Cretans are
always liars, base brutes, and gluttonous idlers'; and his statement
is true. 13 Therefore rebuke them sharply, so that they may be sound
in the Faith, 14 and may pay no attention to Jewish legends, or to
the directions of those who turn their backs upon the Truth. 15
Everything is pure to the pure-minded, but to those whose minds
are polluted and who are unbelievers nothing is pure. Their minds

and consciences are alike polluted. 16 They profess to know God,
but by their actions they disown him. They are degraded and self-
willed; and, as far as anything good is concerned, they are utterly
worthless.

Chapter 2

1 Do you, however, speak of such subjects as properly have
a place in sound Christian teaching. 2 Teach that the older men
should be temperate, serious, and discreet; strong in faith, love, and
endurance. 3 So, too, that the older women should be reverent in
their demeanour, and that they should avoid scandal, and beware of
becoming slaves to drink; 4 that they should teach what is right, so
as to train the younger women to love their husbands and children,
5 and to be discreet, pure-minded, domesticated, good women,
ready to submit to their husbands, in order that God's Message may
not be maligned. 6 And so again with the younger men—impress
upon them the need of discretion. 7 Above all, set an example of
doing good. Show sincerity in your teaching, and a serious spirit;
8 let the instruction that you give be sound and above reproach, so
that the enemy may be ashamed when he fails to find anything bad
to say about us. 9 Urge slaves to be submissive to their owners in all
circumstances, and to try their best to please them. 10 Teach them
not to contradict or to pilfer, but to show such praiseworthy fidelity
in everything, as to recommend the teaching about God our Saviour
by all that they do.

11 For the loving-kindness of God has been revealed,
bringing Salvation for all; 12 leading us to renounce irreligious ways
and worldly ambitions, and to live discreet, upright, and religious
lives here in this present world, 13 while we are awaiting our Blessed
Hope—the Appearing in glory of our great God and Saviour, Christ
Jesus. 14 For he gave himself on our behalf, to deliver us from all
wickedness, and to purify for himself a People who should be
peculiarly his own and eager to do good.

15 Speak of all this, and encourage and rebuke with all
authority. Do not let any one despise you.

Chapter 3

1 Remind your hearers to respect and obey the Powers that

be, to be ready for every kind of good work, to speak ill of no one, to
avoid quarrelling, 2 to be forbearing, and under all circumstances to
show a gentle spirit in dealing with others, whoever they may be. 3
There was, you remember, a time when we ourselves were foolish,
disobedient, misled, slaves to all kinds of passions and vices, living
in a spirit of malice and envy, detested ourselves and hating one
another. 4 But, when the kindness of God our Saviour and his
love for man were revealed, he saved us, 5 not as the result of any
righteous actions that we had done, but in fulfilment of his merciful
purposes. He saved us by that Washing which was a New Birth to
us, and by the renewing power of the Holy Spirit, 6 which he poured
out upon us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; 7 that,
having been pronounced righteous through his loving-kindness, we
might enter on our inheritance with the hope of Immortal Life. 8
How true that saying is! And it is on these subjects that I desire you
to lay especial stress, so that those who have learned to trust in God
may be careful to devote themselves to doing good. Such subjects
are excellent in themselves, and of real use to mankind.

9 But have nothing to do with foolish discussions, or with
genealogies, or with controversy, or disputes about the Law. They
are useless and futile. 10 If a man is causing divisions among you,
after warning him once or twice, have nothing more to say to him.
11 You may be sure that such a man has forsaken the Truth and is in
the wrong; he stands self-condemned. 12 As soon as I send Artemas
or Tychicus to you, join me as quickly as possible at Nicopolis, for
I have arranged to spend the winter there. 13 Do your best to help
Zenas, the Teacher of the Law, and Apollos, on their way, and see
that they want for nothing. 14 Let all our People learn to devote
themselves to doing good, so as to meet the most pressing needs,
and that their lives may not be unfruitful. 15 All who are with me
here send you their greeting. Give my greeting to our friends in the
Faith. God bless you all.

The Letter of Paul to Philemon

Chapter 1

1 From Paul, now a prisoner for Christ Jesus, and from
Timothy, a Brother. 2 To our dear friend and fellow-worker
Philemon, to our sister Apphia, to our fellow-soldier Archippus;
and to the Church that meets at Philemon's house; 3 May God, our
Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace. 4 I
always mention you in my prayers and thank God for you, 5 Because
I hear of the love and the faith which you show, not only to the Lord
Jesus, but also to all his People; 6 And I pray that your participation
in the Faith may result in action, as you come to a fuller realization
of everything that is good and Christlike in us. 7 I have indeed found
great joy and encouragement in your love, knowing, as I do, how the
hearts of Christ's People have been cheered, brother, by you.

8 And so, though my union with Christ enables me, with
all confidence, to dictate the course that you should adopt, 9 Yet
the claims of love make me prefer to plead with you—yes, even
me, Paul, though I am an ambassador for Christ Jesus and, now a
prisoner for him as well. 10 I plead with you for this Child of mine,
Onesimus, to whom, in my parson, I have become a Father. 11 Once
he was of little service to you, but now he has become of great
service, not only to you, but to me as well; 12 And I am sending him
back to you with this letter—though it is like tearing out of my very
heart. 13 For my own sake I should like to keep him with me, so
that, while I am in prison for the Good News, he might attend to my
wants on your behalf. 14 But I do not wish to do anything without
your consent, because I want your generosity to be voluntary and
not, as it were, compulsory. 15 It may be that he was separated from
you for an hour, for this very reason, that you might have him back
for ever, 16 No longer as a slave, but as something better—a dearly
loved Brother, especially dear to me, and how much more so to you,
not only as your fellow man, but as your fellow Christian! 17 If, then,
you count me your friend, receive him as you would me. 18 If he has
caused you any loss, or owes you anything, charge it to me. 19 I, Paul,
put my own hand to it—I will repay you myself. I say nothing about
your owing me your very self. 20 Yes, Brother, let me gain something

from you because of your union with the Lord. Cheer my heart by your Christlike spirit. 21 Even as I write, I have such confidence in your compliance with my wishes, that I am sure that you will do even more than I am asking. 22 Please also get a lodging ready for me, for I hope that I shall be given back to you all in answer to your prayers. 23 Epaphras, who is my fellow-prisoner for Christ Jesus, sends you his greeting; 24 And Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke, my fellow-workers, send theirs. 25 May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ rest on your souls.

The Letter to the Hebrews

Chapter 1

1 God, who, of old, at many times and in many ways, spoke
to our ancestors, by the Prophets, 2 has in these latter days spoken
to us by the Son, whom he appointed the heir of all things, and
through whom he made the universe. 3 For he is the radiance of
the Glory of God and the very expression of his Being, upholding
all creation by the power of his word; and, when he had made an
expiation for the sins of men, he 'took his seat at the right hand' of
God's Majesty on high,

4 having shown himself as much greater than the angels
as the Name that he has inherited surpasses theirs. 5 For to which
of the angels did God ever say—'Thou art my Son; this day I have
become thy Father'? or again—'I will be to him a Father, and he
shall be to me a Son'? 6 And again, when God brought the First-
born into the world, he said—'Let all the angels of God bow down
before him.' 7 Speaking of the angels, he said—'He makes the winds
his angels and the fiery flames his servants'; 8 while of the Son
he said—'God is thy throne for ever and ever; The sceptre of his
Kingdom is the sceptre of Justice;[15] 9 Thou lovest righteousness and
hatest iniquity; Therefore God, thy God, has anointed thee with the
festal oil more abundantly than thy peers.' 10 Again—'Thou, Lord, in
the beginning didst lay the foundation of the earth, and the heavens
are the work of thy hands.[16] 11 They shall perish, but thou remainest;
As a garment they shall all grow old; 12 As a mantle thou wilt fold
them up, And as a garment they shall be changed, But thou art the
same, and thy years shall know no end.' 13 To which of the angels has
God ever said—'Sit thou at my right hand until I put thy enemies as
a stool for thy feet'? 14 Are not all the angels spirits in the service of
God, sent out to minister for the sake of those who are destined to
obtain Salvation?

[15] *Literally* toward but the Son The throne of you the God into the age of the age, and the staff of the straightness staff of the kingdom of him
[16] *Literally* and you according to the beginnings, Lord, the earth you founded, and works of the hands of you are the heavens.

Chapter 2

1 Therefore we must give still more heed to what we were
taught, for fear we should drift away. 2 For, if the Message which
was delivered by angels had its authority confirmed, so that every
offence against it, or neglect of it, met with a fitting requital, 3 how
can we, of all people, expect to escape, if we disregard so great
a Salvation? It was the Master who at the outset spoke of this
Salvation, and its authority was confirmed for us by those who
heard him, 4 while God himself added his testimony to it by signs,
and marvels, and many different miracles, as well as by imparting
the Holy Spirit as he saw fit.

5 God has not given to angels the control of that Future World
of which we are speaking! 6 No; a writer has declared somewhere—
'What is Man that thou shouldst remember him? Or a Son of Man
that thou shouldst regard him? 7 Thou hast made him, for a while,
lower than angels; With glory and honour thou hast crowned him;
Thou hast set him over all that thy hands have made; 8 Thou hast
placed all things beneath his feet.' This 'placing of everything' under
man means that there was nothing which was not placed under
him. As yet, however, we do not see everything placed under man.
9 What our eyes do see is Jesus, who was made for a while lower
than angels, now, because of his sufferings and death, crowned with
glory and honour; so that his tasting the bitterness of death should,
in God's loving-kindness, be on behalf of all mankind.

10 It was, indeed, fitting that God, for whom and through
whom all things exist, should, when leading many sons to glory,
make the author of their Salvation perfect through suffering. 11
For he who purifies, and those whom he purifies, all spring from
One; and therefore he is not ashamed to call them 'Brothers.' 12
He says—'I will tell of thy Name to my Brothers, In the midst of
the congregation I will sing thy praise.' 13 And again—'As for me,
I will put my trust in God.' And yet again—'See, here am I and the
children whom God gave me.'

14 Therefore, since human nature is the common heritage
of 'the Children,' Jesus also shared it, in order that by death he
might render powerless him whose power lies in death—that is, the
Devil— 15 and so might deliver all those who, from fear of death, had
all their lives been living in slavery. 16 It was not, surely, to the help

of the angels that Jesus came, but 'to the help of the descendants of
Abraham.' 17 And consequently it was necessary that he should in
all points be made like 'his Brothers,' in order that he might prove
a merciful as well as a faithful High Priest in man's relations with
God, for the purpose of expiating the sins of his People. 18 The fact
that he himself suffered under temptation enables him to help
those who are tempted.

Chapter 3

1 Therefore, Christian Brothers, you who, all alike, have
received the Call from Heaven, fix your attention on Jesus, the
Apostle and High Priest of our Religion. 2 See how faithful he was
to the God who appointed him, as Moses was in the whole House
of God. 3 He has been deemed worthy of far higher honour than
Moses, just as the founder of the House is held in greater regard
than the House itself. 4 For every House has its founder, and the
founder of the universe is God. 5 While the faithful service of Moses
in the whole House of God was that of a servant, whose duty was
to bear testimony to a Message still to come, 6 the faithfulness of
Christ was that of a Son set over the House of God. And we are his
House—if only we retain, unshaken to the end, the courage and
confidence inspired by our hope.

7 Therefore, as the Holy Spirit says—'If to-day you hear
God's voice, 8 Harden not your hearts, as when Israel provoked
me on the day when they tried my patience in the desert, 9 Where
your ancestors tried my forbearance, And saw my mighty deeds for
forty years. 10 Therefore I was sorely vexed with that generation,
And I said—"Their hearts are always straying; They have never
learned my ways"; 11 While in my wrath I swore—"They shall never
enter upon my Rest."' 12 Be careful, Brothers, that there is never
found in any one of you a wicked and faithless heart, shown by his
separating himself from the Living God. 13 Rather encourage one
another daily—while there is a 'To-day'—to prevent any one among
you from being hardened by the deceitfulness of Sin. 14 For we now
all share in the Christ, if indeed we retain, unshaken to the end, the
confidence that we had at the first. 15 To use the words of Scripture—
'If to-day you hear God's voice, harden not your hearts, as when
Israel provoked me.' 16 Who were they who heard God speak and
yet provoked him? Were not they all those who left Egypt under the

leadership of Moses? 17 And with whom was it that God was sorely
vexed for forty years? Was not it with those who had sinned, and
who fell dead in the desert? 18 And who were they to whom God
swore that they should not enter upon his rest, if not those who had
proved faithless? 19 We see, then, that they failed to enter upon it
because of their want of faith.

Chapter 4

1 We must, therefore, be very careful, though there is a
promise still standing that we shall enter upon God's Rest, that
none of you even appear to have missed it. 2 For we have had the
Good News told us just as they had. But the Message which they
heard did them no good, since they did not share the faith of those
who were attentive to it. 3 Upon that Rest we who have believed are
now entering. As God has said—'In my wrath I swore—"They shall
never enter upon my Rest;"' Although God's work was finished at
the creation of the world; 4 for, in a passage referring to the seventh
day, you will find these words—'God rested upon the seventh day
after all his work.' 5 On the other hand, we read in that passage—'
They shall never enter upon my Rest.' 6 Since, then, there is still a
promise that some shall enter upon this Rest, and since those who
were first told the Good News did not enter upon it, because of their
disbelief, 7 again God fixed a day. 'To-day,' he said, speaking after
a long interval through the mouth of David, in the passage already
quoted—'If to-day you hear God's voice harden not your hearts.' 8
Now if Joshua had given 'Rest' to the people, God would not have
spoken of another and later day. 9 There is, then, a Sabbath-Rest
still awaiting God's People. 10 For he who enters upon God's Rest
does himself rest after his work, just as God did.

11 Let us, therefore, make every effort to enter upon that
Rest, so that none of us fall through such disbelief as that of
which we have had an example. 12 God's Message is a living and
active power, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing its
way till it penetrates soul and spirit—not the joints only but the
very marrow—and detecting the inmost thoughts and purposes
of the mind. 13 There is no created thing that can hide itself from
the sight of God. Everything is exposed and laid bare before the
eyes of him to whom we have to give account. 14 We have, then, in
Jesus, the Son of God, a great High Priest who has passed into the

highest Heaven; let us, therefore, hold fast to the Faith which we
have professed. 15 Our High Priest is not one unable to sympathize
with our weaknesses, but one who has in every way been tempted,
exactly as we have been, but without sinning. 16 Therefore, let us
draw near boldly to the Throne of Love, to find pity and love for the
hour of need.

Chapter 5

1 Every High Priest, taken from among men, is appointed
as a representative of his fellow-men in their relations with God, to
offer both gifts and sacrifices in expiation of sins. 2 And he is able
to sympathize with the ignorant and deluded, since he is himself
subject to weakness, 3 and is therefore bound to offer sacrifices for
sins, not only for the People, but equally so for himself. 4 Nor does
any one take that high office upon himself, till he has been called to
do so by God, as Aaron was. 5 In the same way, even the Christ did
not take the honour of the High Priesthood upon himself, but he
was appointed by him who said to him—'Thou art my Son; this day I
have become thy Father'; 6 and on another occasion also—'Thou art
a priest for all time of the order of Melchizedek.' 7 Jesus, in the days
of his earthly life, offered prayers and supplications, with earnest
cries and with tears, to him who was able to save him from death;
and he was heard because of his devout submission. 8 Son though
he was, he learned obedience from his sufferings; 9 and, being made
perfect, he became to all those who obey him the source of eternal
Salvation,

10 while God himself pronounced him a High Priest of the
order of Melchizedek. 11 Now on this subject I have much to say,
but it is difficult to explain it to you, because you have shown
yourselves so slow to learn. 12 For whereas, considering the time
that has elapsed, you ought to be teaching others, you still need
some one to teach you the very alphabet of the Divine Revelation,
and need again to be fed with 'milk' instead of with 'solid food.'
13 For every one who still has to take 'milk' knows nothing of the
Teaching of Righteousness; he is a mere infant. 14 But 'solid food'
is for Christians of mature faith—those whose faculties have been
trained by practice to distinguish right from wrong.

Chapter 6

1 Therefore, let us leave behind the elementary teaching
about the Christ and press on to perfection, not always laying over
again a foundation of repentance for a lifeless formality, of faith in
God— 2 teaching concerning baptisms and the laying on of hands,
the resurrection of the dead and a final judgement. 3 Yes and, with
God's help, we will. 4 For if those who were once for all brought
into the Light, and learned to appreciate the gift from Heaven, and
came to share in the Holy Spirit, 5 and learned to appreciate the
beauty of the Divine Message, and the new powers of the Coming
Age— 6 if those, I say, fell away, it would be impossible to bring
them again to repentance; they would be crucifying the Son of God
over again for themselves, and exposing him to open contempt. 7
Ground that drinks in the showers that from time to time fall upon
it, and produces vegetation useful to those for whom it is tilled,
receives a blessing from God; 8 but, if it 'bears thorns and thistles,'
it is regarded as worthless, it is in danger of being 'cursed,' and its
end will be the fire.

9 But about you, dear friends, even though we speak in this
way, we are confident of better things—of things that point to your
Salvation. 10 For God is not unjust; he will not forget the work that
you did, and the love that you showed for his Name, in sending help
to your fellow Christians—as you are still doing. 11 But our great
desire is that every one of you should be equally earnest to attain to
a full conviction that our hope will be fulfilled, and that you should
keep that hope to the end. 12 Then you will not show yourselves
slow to learn, but you will copy those who, through faith and
patience, are now entering upon the enjoyment of God's promises.
13 When God gave his promise to Abraham, since there was no one
greater by whom he could swear, he swore by himself. 14 His words
were—'I will assuredly bless thee and increase thy numbers.' 15
And so, after patiently waiting, Abraham obtained the fulfilment
of God's promise. 16 Men, of course, swear by what is greater than
themselves, and with them an oath is accepted as putting a matter
beyond all dispute. 17 And therefore God, in his desire to show,
with unmistakable plainness, to those who were to enter on the
enjoyment of what he had promised, the unchangeableness of his
purpose, bound himself with an oath. 18 For he intended us to find

great encouragement in these two unchangeable things, which
make it impossible for God to prove false—we, I mean, who fled
for safety where we might lay hold on the hope set before us. 19
This hope is a very anchor for our souls, secure and strong, and it
'reaches into the Sanctuary that lies behind the Curtain,' 20 where
Jesus, our Forerunner, has entered on our behalf, after being made
for all time a High Priest of the order of Melchizedek.

Chapter 7

1 It was this Melchizedek, King of Salem and Priest of the
Most High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of
the kings, and gave him his blessing; 2 and it was to him that Abraham
allotted a tithe of all the spoil. The meaning of his name is 'King of
Righteousness,' and besides that, he was also King of Salem, which
means 'King of Peace.' 3 There is no record of his father, or mother,
or lineage, nor again of any beginning of his days, or end of his life.
In this he resembles the Son of God, and stands before us as a priest
whose priesthood is continuous. 4 Consider, then the importance
of this Melchizedek, to whom even the Patriarch Abraham himself
gave a tithe of the choicest spoils. 5 Those descendants of Levi, who
are from time to time appointed to the priesthood, are directed to
collect tithes from the people in accordance with the Law—that is
from their own Brothers, although they also are descended from
Abraham. 6 But Melchizedek, although not of this lineage, received
tithes from Abraham, and gave his blessing to the very man who
had God's promises. 7 Now no one can dispute that it is the superior
who blesses the inferior. 8 In the one case the tithes are received
by mortal men; in the other case by one about whom there is the
statement that his life still continues. 9 Moreover, in a sense, even
Levi, who is the receiver of the tithes, has, through Abraham,
paid tithes; 10 for Levi was still in the body of his ancestor when
Melchizedek met Abraham.

11 If, then, Perfection had been attainable through the
Levitical priesthood—and it was under this priesthood that the
people received the Law—why was it still necessary that a priest of
a different order should appear, a priest of the order of Melchizedek
and not of the order of Aaron? 12 With the change of the priesthood
a change of the Law became a necessity. 13 And he of whom all this
is said belonged to quite a different tribe, no member of which has

ever served at the altar. 14 For it is plain that our Lord ad sprung
from the tribe of Judah, though of that tribe Moses said nothing
about their being priests. 15 All this becomes even yet plainer
when we remember that a new priest has appeared, resembling
Melchizedek, 16 and that he was appointed, not under a Law
regulating only earthly matters, but by virtue of a life beyond the
reach of death; 17 for that is the meaning of the declaration—'Thou
art for all time a priest of the order of Melchizedek.' 18 On the one
hand, we have the abolition of a previous regulation as being both
inefficient and useless 19 (for the Law never brought anything to
perfection); and, on the other hand, we have the introduction of a
better hope, which enables us to draw near to God. 20 Then again,
the appointment of this new priest was ratified by an oath, which is
not so with the Levitical priests, 21 but his appointment was ratified
by an oath, when God said to him—'The Lord has sworn, and will
not change, "Thou art a priest for all time."' 22 And the oath shows
the corresponding superiority of the Covenant of which Jesus is
appointed the surety. 23 Again, new Levitical priests are continually
being appointed, because death prevents their remaining in office;
24 but Jesus remains for all time, and therefore the priesthood that
he holds is never liable to pass to another. 25 And that is why he is
able to save perfectly those who come to God through him, living
for ever, as he does, to intercede of their behalf. 26 This was the High
Priest that we needed—holy, innocent, spotless, withdrawn from
sinners, exalted above the highest Heaven, 27 one who has no need
to offer sacrifices daily as those High Priests have, first for their own
sins, and then for those of the People. For this he did once and for
all, when he offered himself as the sacrifice. 28 The Law appoints as
High Priests men who are liable to infirmity, but the words of God's
oath, which was later than the Law, name the Son as, for all time,
the perfect Priest.

Chapter 8

1 To sum up what I have been saying:—Such is the High
Priest that we have, one who 'has taken his seat at the right hand'
of the throne of God's Majesty in Heaven, 2 where he ministers in
the Sanctuary, in that true Tabernacle set up by the Lord and not
by man. 3 Every High Priest is appointed for the purpose of offering
gifts and sacrifices to God; it follows, therefore, that this High

Priest must have some offering to make. 4 If he were, however, still
upon earth, he would not even be a priest, since there are already
priests who offer the gifts as the Law directs. 5 (These priests, it is
true, are engaged in a service which is only a copy and shadow of
the heavenly realities, as is shown by the directions given to Moses
when he was about to construct the Tabernacle. 'Look to it,' are the
words, 'that thou make every part in accordance with the pattern
shown thee on the mountain.')

6 But Jesus, as we see, has obtained a ministry as far excelling
theirs, as the Covenant of which he is the intermediary, based, as it
is, on better promises, excels the former Covenant. 7 If that first
Covenant had been faultless, there would have been no occasion for
a second. 8 But, finding fault with the people, God says— '"Behold,
a time is coming," says the Lord, "when I will ratify a new Covenant
with the People of Israel and with the People of Judah— 9 Not such
a Covenant as I made with their ancestors on the day when I took
them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt. For they did
not abide by their Covenant with me, And therefore I disregarded
them," says the Lord. 10 "This is the Covenant that I will make with
the People of Israel After those days," says the Lord. "I will impress
my laws on their minds, and will inscribe them on their hearts; And
I will be their God, and they shall be my People. 11 There shall be
no need for every man to instruct his fellow-citizen, or for a man
to say to his Brother 'Learn to know the Lord'; For every one will
know me, From the lowest to the highest. 12 For I will be merciful
to their wrong-doings, And I will no longer remember their sins."'
13 By speaking of a 'new' Covenant, God at once renders the former
Covenant obsolete; and whatever becomes obsolete and loses its
force is virtually annulled.

Chapter 9

1 It is true that even the first Covenant had its regulations for
divine worship, and its Sanctuary—though only a material one. 2 For
a Tabernacle was constructed, with an outer part which contained
the stand for the lamps, and the table, and the consecrated bread.
This is called the Sanctuary. 3 The part of the Tabernacle behind
the second Curtain is called the Inner Sanctuary. 4 In it is the gold
incense-altar, and the Ark containing the Covenant, completely
covered with gold. In the Ark is a gold casket containing the manna,

Aaron's rod that budded, and the tablets on which the Covenant was written; 5 while above it, and overshadowing the Cover on which atonement was made, are the Cherubim of the Presence. But I must not now dwell on these things in detail. 6 Such, then, was the arrangement of the Tabernacle. Into the outer part priests are constantly going, in the discharge of their sacred duties; 7 but into the inner only the High Priest goes, and that but once a year, and never without taking the blood of a victim, which he offers on his own behalf, and on behalf of the errors of the People.

8 By this the Holy Spirit is teaching that the way into the Sanctuary was hidden, as long as the outer part of the Tabernacle still remained. 9 For that was only a type, to continue down to the present time; and, in keeping with it, both gifts and sacrifices are offered, though incapable of satisfying the conscience of the worshiper; 10 the whole system being concerned only with food and drink and various ablutions—external ceremonials imposed until the coming of the New Order. 11 But, when Christ came, he appeared as High Priest of that Better System which was established; and he entered through that nobler and more perfect 'Tabernacle,' not made by human hands—that is to say, not a part of this present creation. 12 Nor was it with the blood of goats and calves, but with his own blood, that he entered, once and for all, into the Sanctuary, and obtained our eternal deliverance. 13 For, if the blood of goats and bulls, and the sprinkling of the ashes of a heifer, purify those who have been defiled (as far as ceremonial purification goes), 14 how much more will the blood of the Christ, who, through his eternal Spirit, offered himself up to God, as a victim without blemish, purify our consciences from a lifeless formality, and fit us for the service of the Living God!

15 And that is why he is the intermediary of a new Covenant; in order that, as a death has taken place to effect a deliverance from the offences committed under the first Covenant, those who have received the Call may obtain the eternal inheritance promised to them. 16 Whenever such a Covenant as a will is in question, the death of the testator must of necessity be alleged. 17 For such a Covenant takes effect only upon death, it does not come into force as long as the testator is alive. 18 This explains why even the first Covenant was not ratified without the shedding of blood. 19 For, when every command had been announced to all the people by

Moses in accordance with the Law, he took the blood of the calves and of the goats, with water, scarlet wool, and a bunch of hyssop, and sprinkled even the Book of the Law, as well as all the people, 20 saying, as he did so—"This is the blood that renders valid the Covenant which God has commanded to be made with you." 21 And in the same way he also sprinkled with the blood the Tabernacle and all the things that were used in public worship. 22 Indeed, under the Law, almost everything is purified with blood; and, unless blood is shed, no forgiveness is to be obtained.

23 While, then, it was necessary for the copies of the heavenly realities to be purified by such means as these, the heavenly realities themselves required better sacrifices. 24 For it was not into a Sanctuary made by human hands, which merely foreshadowed the true one, that Christ entered, but into Heaven itself, that he might now appear in the presence of God on our behalf. 25 Nor yet was it to offer himself may times, as year after year the High Priest entered the Sanctuary with an offering of blood—but not his own blood; 26 for then Christ would have had to undergo death many times since the creation of the world. But now, once and for all, at the close of the age, he has appeared, in order to abolish sin by the sacrifice of himself. 27 And, as it is ordained for men to die but once (death being followed by judgement), 28 so it is with the Christ. He was offered up once and for all, to 'bear away the sins of many'; and the second time he will appear—but without any burden of sin—to those who are waiting for him, to bring Salvation.

Chapter 10

1 The Law, though able to foreshadow the Better System which was coming, never had its actual substance. Its priests, with those sacrifices which they offer continuously year after year, can never make those who come to worship perfect. 2 Otherwise, would not the offering of these sacrifices have been abandoned, as the worshipers, having been once purified, would have had their consciences clear from sins? 3 But, on the contrary, these sacrifices recall their sins to mind year after year. 4 For the blood of bulls and goats is powerless to remove sins. 5 That is why, when he was coming into the world, the Christ declared—'Sacrifice and offering thou dost not desire, but thou dost provide for me a body; 6 Thou dost take no pleasure in burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin.

7 So I said, "See, I have come" (as is written of me in the pages
of the Book), "To do thy will, O God."' 8 First come the words—'Thou
dost not desire, nor dost thou take pleasure in, sacrifices, offerings,
burnt offerings, and sacrifices for sin' (offerings regularly made
under the Law), 9 and then there is added—'See, I have come to do
thy will.' The former sacrifices are set aside to be replaced by the
latter. 10 And it is in the fulfilment of the will of God that we have
been purified by the sacrifice, once and for all, of the body of Jesus
Christ. 11 Every other priest stands day after day at his ministrations,
and offers the same sacrifices over and over again—sacrifices that
can never take sins away. 12 But, this priest, after he had offered one
sacrifice for sins, which should serve for all time, 'took his seat at
the right hand of God,' 13 and has since then been waiting 'for his
enemies to be put as a stool for his feet.' 14 By a single offering he has
made perfect for all time those who are being purified. 15 We have
also the testimony of the Holy Spirit. For, after saying— 16 ""This is
the Covenant that I will make with them after those days," says the
Lord; "I will impress my laws on their hearts, and will inscribe them
on their minds,"' 17 then we have—'And their sins and their iniquities
I will no longer remember.' 18 And, when these are forgiven, there is
no further need of an offering for sin.

19 Therefore, Brothers, since we may enter the Sanctuary
with confidence, in virtue of the blood of Jesus, 20 by the way which
he inaugurated for us—a new and living way, a way through the
Sanctuary Curtain (that is, his human nature); 21 and, since we have
in him 'a great priest set over the House of God,' 22 let us draw near
to God in all sincerity of heart and in perfect faith, with our hearts
purified by the sprinkled blood from all consciousness of wrong,
and with our bodies washed with pure water. 23 Let us maintain
the confession of our hope unshaken, for he who has given us his
promise will not fail us. 24 Let us vie with one another in a rivalry of
love and noble actions. 25 And let us not, as some do, cease to meet
together; but, on the contrary, let us encourage one another, and all
the more, now that you see the Day drawing near. 26 Remember, if
we sin wilfully after we have gained a full knowledge of the Truth,
there can be no further sacrifice for sin; 27 there is only a fearful
anticipation of judgement, and a burning indignation which will
destroy all opponents. 28 When a man disregarded the Law of
Moses, he was, on the evidence of two or three witnesses, put to

death without pity. 29 How much worse then, think you, will be the
punishment deserved by those who have trampled underfoot the
Son of God, who have treated the blood that rendered the Covenant
valid—the very blood by which they were purified—as of no account,
and who have outraged the Spirit of Love? 30 We know who it was
that said—'It is for me to avenge, I will requite'; and again—'The Lord
will judge his people.' 31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of
the Living God. 32 Call to mind those early days in which, after you
had received the Light, you patiently underwent a long and painful
conflict. 33 Sometimes, in consequence of the taunts and injuries
heaped upon you, you became a public spectacle; and sometimes
you suffered through having shown yourselves to be the friends of
men who were in the very position in which you had been. 34 For you
not only sympathized with those who were in prison, but you even
took the confiscation of your possessions joyfully, knowing, as you
did, that you had in yourselves a greater possession and a lasting
one. 35 Do not, therefore, abandon the confidence that you have
gained, for it has a great reward awaiting it. 36 You still have need
of patient endurance, in order that, when you have done God's will,
you may obtain the fulfilment of his promise. 37 'For there is indeed
but a very little while ere He who is coming will have come, without
delay; 38 And through faith the Righteous man shall find his Life,
But, if a man draws back, my heart can find no pleasure in him.' 39
But we do not belong to those who draw back, to their Ruin, but to
those who have faith, to the saving of their souls.

Chapter 11

1 Faith is the realization of things hoped for—the proof of
things not seen. 2 And it was for faith that the men of old were
renowned. 3 Faith enables us to perceive that the universe was
created at the bidding of God—so that we know that what we see
was not made out of visible things.

4 Faith made the sacrifice which Abel offered to God a better
sacrifice than Cain's, and won him renown as a righteous man, God
himself establishing his renown by accepting his gifts; and it is by
the example of his faith that Abel, though dead, still speaks. 5 Faith
led to Enoch's removal from earth, that he might not experience
death. 'He could not be found because God had removed him.' For,
before his removal, he was renowned as having pleased God; 6 But

without faith it is impossible to please him, for he who comes to
God must believe that God exists, and that he rewards those who
seek for him. 7 It was faith that enabled Noah, after he had received
the divine warning about what could not then be foreseen, to
build, in reverent obedience, an ark in which to save his family. By
his faith he condemned the world, and became possessed of that
righteousness which follows upon faith. 8 It was faith that enabled
Abraham to obey the Call that he received, and to set out for the
place which he was afterwards to obtain as his own; and he set
out not knowing where he was going. 9 It was faith that made him
go to live as an emigrant in the Promised Land—as in a strange
country—living there in tents with Isaac and Jacob, who shared the
promise with him. 10 For he was looking for the City with the sure
foundations, whose architect and builder is God. 11 Again, it was
faith that enabled Sarah to conceive (though she was past the age
for child-bearing), because she felt sure that he who had given her
the promise would not fail her. 12 And so from one man—and that
when his powers were dead—there sprang a people as numerous
'as the stars in the heavens or the countless grains of sand upon
the shore.' 13 All these died sustained by faith. They did not obtain
the promised blessings, but they saw them from a distance and
welcomed the sight, and they acknowledged themselves to be
only aliens and strangers on the earth. 14 Those who speak thus
show plainly that they are seeking their fatherland. 15 If they had
been thinking of the land that they had left, they could have found
opportunities to return. 16 But no, they were longing for a better, a
heavenly, land! And therefore God was not ashamed to be called
their God; indeed he had already prepared them a city. 17 It was
faith that enabled Abraham, when put to the test, to offer Isaac as
a sacrifice—he who had received the promises offering up his only
son, 18 of whom it had been said—'It is through Isaac that there shall
be descendants to bear thy name.' 19 For he argued that God was
able even to raise a man from the dead—and indeed, figuratively
speaking, Abraham did receive Isaac back from the dead. 20 It was
faith that enabled Isaac to bless Jacob and Esau, even with regard to
the future. 21 Faith enabled Jacob, when dying, to give his blessing
to each of the sons of Joseph, and 'to bow himself in worship as he
leant upon the top of his staff.' 22 Faith caused Joseph, when his
end was near, to speak of the future migration of the Israelites,

and to give instructions with regard to his bones. 23 Faith caused
the parents of Moses to hide the child for three months after his
birth, for they saw that he was a beautiful child; and they would not
respect the King's order. 24 It was faith that caused Moses, when he
was grown up, to refuse the title of 'Son of a Daughter of Pharaoh.'
25 He preferred sharing the hardships of God's People to enjoying
the short-lived pleasures of sin. 26 For he counted 'the reproaches
that are heaped upon the Christ' of greater value than the treasures
of Egypt, looking forward, as he did, to the reward awaiting him. 27
Faith caused him to leave Egypt, though undaunted by the King's
anger, for he was strengthened in his endurance by the vision of
the invisible God. 28 Faith led him to institute the Passover and the
Sprinkling of the Blood, so that the Destroyer might not touch the
eldest children of the Israelites. 29 Faith enabled the people to cross
the Red Sea, as if it had been dry land, while the Egyptians, when
they attempted to do so, were drowned. 30 Faith caused the walls
of Jericho to fall after being encircled for seven days. 31 Faith saved
Rahab, the prostitute, from perishing with the unbelievers, after
she had entertained the spies with friendliness.

32 Need I add anything more? Time would fail me if I
attempted to relate the stories of Gideon, Barak, Samson, and
Jephthah, and those of David, Samuel, and the Prophets. 33 By
their faith they subdued kingdoms, ruled righteously, gained the
fulfilment of God's promises, 'shut the mouths of lions,' 34 quelled
the fury of the flames, escaped the edge of the sword, found strength
in the hour of weakness, displayed their prowess in war, and routed
hostile armies. 35 Women received back their dead raised to life.
Some were tortured on the wheel, and refused release in order
that they might rise to a better life. 36 Others had to face taunts and
blows, and even chains and imprisonment. 37 They were stoned to
death, they were tortured, they were swan asunder, they were put
to the sword; they wandered about clothed in the skins of sheep or
goats, destitute, persecuted, ill-used— 38 men of whom the world
was not worthy—roaming in lonely places, and on the mountains,
and in caves and holes in the ground. 39 Yet, though they all won
renown by their faith, they did not obtain the final fulfilment of
God's promise; 40 since God had in view some better thing for us,
that they, apart from us, should not attain perfection.

Chapter 12

1 Seeing, therefore, that there is on every side of us such a
throng of witnesses, let us also lay aside everything that hinders us,
and the sin that clings about us, and run with patient endurance
the race that lies before us, 2 our eyes fixed upon Jesus, the Leader
and perfect Example of our faith, who, for the joy that lay before
him, endured the cross, heedless of its shame, and now 'has taken
his seat at the right hand' of the throne of God. 3 Weigh well the
example of him who had to endure such opposition from 'men
who were sinning against themselves,' so that you should not grow
weary or faint-hearted.

4 You have not yet, in your struggle with sin, resisted to the
death; 5 and you have forgotten the encouraging words which are
addressed to you as God's Children—'My child, think not lightly of
the Lord's discipline, do not despond when he rebukes you; 6 for it is
him whom he loves that he disciplines, and he chastises every child
whom he acknowledges.' 7 It is for your discipline that you have to
endure all this. God is dealing with you as his Children. For where
is there a child whom his father does not discipline? 8 If you are left
without that discipline, in which all children share, it shows that
you are bastards, and not true Children. 9 Further, when our earthly
fathers disciplined us, we respected them. Shall we not, then, much
rather yield submission to the Father of souls, and live? 10 Our
fathers disciplined us for only a short time and as seemed best to
them; but God disciplines us for our true good, to enable us to share
his holiness. 11 No discipline is pleasant at the time; on the contrary,
it is painful. But afterwards its fruit is seen in the peacefulness of a
righteous life which is the lot of those who have been trained under
it. 12 Therefore 'lift again the down-dropped hands and straighten
the weakened knees; 13 make straight paths for your feet,' so that
the lame limb may not be put out of joint, but rather be cured. 14
Try earnestly to live at peace with every one, and to attain to that
purity without which no one will see the Lord. 15 Take care that no
one fails to use the loving help of God, 'that no bitterness is allowed
to take root and spring up, and cause trouble,' and so poison the
whole community. 16 Take care that no one becomes immoral, or
irreligious like Esau, who sold his birthright for a single meal. 17 For
you know that even afterwards, when he wished to claim his father's

blessing, he was rejected—for he never found an opportunity to
repair his error—though he begged for the blessing with tears.

18 It is not to tangible 'flaming fire' that you have drawn near,
nor to 'gloom, and darkness, and storm, 19 and the blast of a trumpet,
and an audible voice.' Those who heard that voice entreated that
they might hear no more, 20 for they could not bear to think of the
command—'If even an animal touches the mountain, it is to be
stoned to death;' 21 and so fearful was the sight that Moses said—'I
tremble with fear.' 22 No, but it is to Mount Zion that you have
drawn near, the City of the Living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, to
countless hosts of angels, 23 to the festal gathering and assemblage
of God's Eldest Sons whose names are enrolled in Heaven, to
God the Judge of all men, to the spirits of the righteous who have
attained perfection, 24 to Jesus, the intermediary of a new Covenant,
and to the Sprinkled Blood that tells of better things than the blood
of Abel. 25 Beware how you refuse to hear him who is speaking. For,
if the Israelites did not escape punishment, when they refused to
listen to him who taught them on earth the divine will, far worse
will it be for us, if we turn away from him who is teaching us from
Heaven. 26 Then his voice shook the earth, but now his declaration
is—'Still once more I will cause not only the earth to tremble, but
also the heavens.' 27 And those words 'still once more' indicate the
passing away of all that is shaken—that is, of all created things—in
order that only what is unshaken may remain. 28 Therefore, let us,
who have received a kingdom that cannot be shaken, be thankful,
and so offer acceptable worship to God, with awe and reverence. 29
For our God is 'a consuming fire.'

Chapter 13

1 Let your love for the Brethren continue. 2 Do not neglect
to show hospitality; for, through being hospitable, men have all
unawares entertained angels. 3 Remember the prisoners, as if
you were their fellow-prisoners, and the oppressed, not forgetting
that you also are still in the body. 4 Let marriage be honoured by
all and the married life be pure; for God will judge those who
are immoral and those who commit adultery. 5 Do not let your
conduct be ruled by the love of money. Be content with what you
have, for God himself has said—'I will never forsake you, nor will I
ever abandon you.' 6 Therefore we may say with confidence—'The

Lord is my helper, I will not be afraid. What can man do to me?' [7] Do not forget your Leaders, the men who told you God's Message. Recall the close of their lives, and imitate their faith. [8] Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and to-day—yes, and for ever! [9] Do not let yourselves be carried away by the various novel forms of teaching. It is better to rely for spiritual strength upon the divine help, than upon regulations regarding food; for those whose lives are guided by such regulations have not found them of service. [10] We are not without an altar; but it is one at which those who still worship in the Tabernacle have no right to eat. [11] The bodies of those animals whose blood is brought by the High Priest into the Sanctuary, as an offering for sin, are burnt outside the camp. [12] And so Jesus, also, to purify the People by his own blood, suffered outside the gate. [13] Therefore let us go out to him 'outside the camp,' bearing the same reproaches as he; [14] for here we have no permanent city, but are looking for the City that is to be. [15] Through him let us offer, as our sacrifice, continual praise to God—an offering from lips that glorify his Name. [16] Never forget to do kindly acts and to share what you have with others, for such sacrifices are acceptable to God. [17] Obey your Leaders, and submit to their control, for they are watching over your souls, as men who will have to render an account, so that they may do it with joy, and not in sorrow. That would not be to your advantage.

[18] Pray for us, for we are sure that our consciences are clear, since our wish is to be occupied with what is good. [19] And I the more earnestly ask for your prayers, that I may be restored to you the sooner. [20] May God, the source of all peace, who brought back from the dead him who, 'by virtue of the blood that rendered valid the unchangeable Covenant, is the Great Shepherd of God's Sheep,' Jesus, our Lord— [21] may God make you perfect in everything that is good, so that you may be able to do his will. May he bring out in us all that is pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be all glory for ever and ever. Amen. [22] I beg you, Brothers, to bear with these words of advice. For I have written only very briefly to you. [23] You will be glad to hear that our Brother, Timothy, has been set free. If he comes here soon, we will visit you together. [24] Give our greeting to all your Leaders, and to all Christ's People. Our friends from Italy send their greetings to you. [25] May God bless you all.

The Letter of James

Chapter 1

[1] James, a Servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, greets The Twelve Tribes that are living abroad.

[2] My Brothers, whatever may be the temptations that beset you from time to time, always regard them as a reason for rejoicing, [3] Knowing, as you do, that the testing of your faith develops endurance. [4] And let endurance do its work perfectly, so that you may be altogether perfect, and in no respect deficient. [5] If one of you is deficient in wisdom, let him ask wisdom from the God who gives freely to every one without reproaches, and it will be given to him. [6] But let him ask with confidence, never doubting; for the man who doubts is like a wave of the sea driven hither and thither at the mercy of the wind— [7] Such a man must not expect that he will receive anything from the Lord, [8] Vacillating as he is, irresolute at every turn. [9] Let a Brother in humble circumstances be proud of his exalted position, but a rich Brother of his humiliation; [10] For the rich man will pass away 'like the flower of the grass.' [11] As the sun rises, and the hot wind blows, 'the grass withers, its flower fades,' and all its beauty is gone. So is it with the rich man. In the midst of his pursuits he will come to an untimely end. [12] Blessed is the man who remains firm under temptation, for, when he has stood the test, he will receive the crown of Life, which the Lord has promised to those who love him.

[13] Let no one say, when he is tempted, "It is God who is tempting me!" For God, who cannot be tempted to do wrong, does not himself tempt any one. [14] A man is in every case tempted by his own passions—allured and enticed by them. [15] Then Passion conceives and gives birth to Sin, and Sin, on reaching maturity, brings forth Death. [16] Do not be deceived, my dear Brothers. [17] Every good thing given us, and every perfect gift, is from above, and comes down to us from the Maker of the Lights in the heavens, who is himself never subject to change or to eclipse. [18] Because he so willed, he gave us Life, through the Message of the Truth, so that we should be, as it were, an earnest of still further creations.

[19] Mark this, my dear Brothers—Let every one be quick to

listen, slow to speak, and slow to get angry; [20] For the anger of man
does not forward the righteous purpose of God. [21] Therefore, have
done with all filthiness and whatever wickedness still remains, and
in a humble spirit receive that Message which has been planted in
your hearts and is able to save your souls. [22] Put that Message into
practice, and do not merely listen to it—deceiving yourselves. [23] For,
when any one listens to it and does not practice it, he is like a man
looking at his own face in a mirror. [24] He looks at himself, then goes
on his way, [25] But he who looks carefully into the perfect Law, the
Law of Freedom, and continues to do so, not listening to it and then
forgetting it, but putting it into practice—that man will be blessed
in what he does. [26] When a man appears to be religious, yet does not
bridle his tongue, but imposes upon his own conscience, that man's
religious observances are valueless. [27] That religious observance
which is pure and spotless in the eyes of God our Father is this—to
visit orphans and widows in their trouble, and to keep oneself
uncontaminated by the world.

Chapter 2

[1] My Brothers, are you really trying to combine faith in Jesus
Christ, our glorified Lord, with the worship of rank? [2] Suppose a
man should enter your Synagogue, with gold rings and in grand
clothes, and suppose a poor man should come in also, in shabby
clothes, [3] And you are deferential to the man who is wearing grand
clothes, and say—"There is a good seat for you here," but to the poor
man—"You must stand; or sit down there by my footstool," [4] Is not
that to make distinctions among yourselves, and show yourselves
prejudiced judges? [5] Listen, my dear Brothers. Has not God chosen
those who are poor in the things of this world to be rich through
their faith, and to possess the Kingdom which he has promised to
those who love him? [6] But you—you insult the poor man! Is not
it the rich who oppress you? Is not it they who drag you into law-
courts? [7] Is not it they who malign that honourable Name which has
been bestowed upon you?

[8] Yet, if you keep the royal law which runs—'Thou shalt love
thy neighbour as thou dost thyself,' you are doing right; [9] But, if you
worship rank, you commit a sin, and stand convicted by that same
law of being offenders against it. [10] For a man who has laid the Law,
as a whole, to heart, but has failed in one particular, is liable for

breaking all its provisions. [11] He who said 'Thou shalt not commit
adultery' also said 'Thou shalt not murder.' If, then, you commit
murder but not adultery, you are still an offender against the Law.
[12] Therefore, speak and act as men who are to be judged by the 'Law
of Freedom.' [13] For there will be justice without mercy for him who
has not acted mercifully. Mercy triumphs over Justice.

[14] My Brothers, what is the good of a man's saying that he
has faith, if he does not prove it by actions? Can such faith save
him? [15] Suppose some Brother or Sister should be in want of clothes
and of daily bread, [16] And one of you were to say to them—"Go, and
peace be with you; find warmth and food for yourselves," and yet
you were not to give them the necessaries of life, what good would it
be to them? [17] In just the same way faith, if not followed by actions,
is, by itself, a lifeless thing. [18] Some one, indeed, may say—"You are
a man of faith, and I am a man of action." "Then show me your
faith," I reply, "apart from any actions, and I will show you my faith
by my actions." [19] It is a part of your Faith, is it not, that there is one
God? Good; yet even the demons have that faith, and tremble at the
thought. [20] Now do you really want to understand, you foolish man,
how it is that faith without actions leads to nothing? [21] Look at our
ancestor, Abraham. Was not it the result of his actions that he was
pronounced righteous after he had offered his son, Isaac, on the
altar? [22] You see how, in his case, faith and actions went together;
that his faith was perfected as the result of his actions; [23] And that
in this way the words of Scripture came true—"Abraham believed
God, and that was regarded by God as righteousness," and "He was
called the friend of God." [24] You see, then, that it is as the result of
his actions that a man is pronounced righteous, and not of his faith
only. [25] Was not it the same with the prostitute, Rahab? Was not it
as the result of her actions that she was pronounced righteous, after
she had welcomed the messengers and hastened them away by a
different road? [26] Exactly as a body is dead without a spirit, so faith
is dead without actions.

Chapter 3

[1] I do not want many of you, my Brothers, to become
teachers, knowing, as you do, that we who teach shall be judged by a
more severe standard than others. [2] We often make mistakes, every
one of us. Any one who does not make mistakes when speaking is

indeed a perfect man, able to bridle his whole body as well. 3 When
we put bits into horses' mouths, to make them obey us, we control
the rest of their bodies so. 4 Again, think of ships. Large as they are,
and even when driven by fierce winds, they are controlled by a very
small rudder and steered in whatever direction the man at the helm
may determine. 5 So is it with the tongue. Small as it is, it is a great
boaster. Think how tiny a spark may set the largest forest ablaze!
6 And the tongue is like a spark. Among the members of our body
it proves itself a very world of mischief; it contaminates the whole
body; it sets the wheels of life on fire, and is itself set on fire by the
flames of the Pit. 7 For while all sorts of beasts and birds, and of
reptiles and creatures in the sea, are tameable, and actually have
been tamed by man, 8 No human being can tame the tongue. It is a
restless plague! It is charged with deadly poison! 9 With it we bless
our Lord and Father, and with it we curse men who are made 'in
God's likeness.' 10 From the very same mouth come blessings and
curses! My Brothers, it is not right that this should be so. 11 Does a
spring give both good and bad water from the same source? 12 Can a
fig tree, my Brothers, bear olives? or a vine bear figs? No, nor can a
brackish well give good water.

13 Who among you claims to be wise and intelligent? Let
him show that his actions are the outcome of a good life lived in
the humility of true wisdom. 14 But, while you harbour envy and
bitterness and a spirit of rivalry in your hearts, do not boast or
lie to the detriment of the Truth. 15 That is not the wisdom which
comes from above; no, it is earthly, animal, devilish. 16 For, where
envy and rivalry exist, there you will also find disorder and all
kinds of base actions. 17 But the wisdom from above is, before every
thing else, pure; then peace-loving, gentle, open to conviction,
rich in compassion and good deeds, and free from partiality and
insincerity. 18 And righteousness, its fruit, is sown in peace by those
who work for peace.

Chapter 4

1 What is the cause of the fighting and quarrelling that goes
on among you? Is not it to be found in the desires which are always
at war within you? 2 You crave, yet do not obtain. You murder
and rage, yet cannot gain your end. You quarrel and fight. You do
not obtain, because you do not ask. 3 You ask, yet do not receive,

because you ask for a wrong purpose—to spend what you get upon
your pleasures. 4 Unfaithful people! Do not you know that to be
friends with the world means to be at enmity with God? Therefore
whoever chooses to be friends with the world makes himself an
enemy to God. 5 Do you suppose there is no meaning in the passage
of Scripture which asks—'Is envy to result from the longings of the
Spirit which God has implanted within you?' 6 No; the gift that God
gives is for a nobler end; and that is why it is said—'God is opposed
to the haughty, but gives help to the humble.' 7 Therefore submit
to God; but resist the Devil, and he will flee from you. 8 Draw near
to God, and he will draw near to you. Make your hands clean, you
sinners; and your hearts pure, you vacillating men! 9 Grieve, mourn,
and lament! Let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your
happiness to gloom! 10 Humble yourselves before the Lord, and he
will exalt you.

11 Do not disparage one another, Brothers. He who disparages
his Brother, or passes judgement on his Brother, disparages the
Law and passes judgement on the Law. But, if you pass judgement
on the Law, you are not obeying it, but judging it. 12 There is only
one Lawgiver and Judge—he who has the power both to save and to
destroy. But who are you that pass judgement on your neighbour? 13
Listen to me, you who say 'To-day or to-morrow we will go to such
and such a town, spend a year there, and trade, and make money,' 14
And yet you do not know what your life will be like to-morrow! For
you are but a mist appearing for a little while and then disappearing.
15 You ought, rather, to say 'If the Lord wills, we shall live and do this
or that.' 16 But, as it is, you are constantly boasting presumptuously!
All such boasting is wicked. 17 He, then, who knows what is right but
fails to do it—that is sin in him.

Chapter 5

1 Listen to me, you rich men, weep and wail for the miseries
that are coming upon you! 2 Your riches have wasted away, and your
clothes have become moth-eaten. 3 Your gold and silver are rusted;
and the rust on them shall be evidence against you, and shall eat
into your very flesh. It was fire, so to speak, that you stored up for
yourselves in these last days. 4 I tell you, the wages of the labourers
who mowed your fields, which you have been fraudulently keeping
back, are crying out against you, and the outcries of your reapers

have reached the ears of the Lord of Hosts! 5 You have lived on earth
a life of extravagance and luxury; you have indulged your fancies in
a time of bloodshed. 6 You have condemned, you have murdered,
the Righteous One! Must not God be opposed to you? 7 Be patient,
then, Brothers, till the Coming of the Lord. Even the farmer has to
wait for the precious fruit of the earth, watching over it patiently, till
it has had the spring and summer rains. 8 And you must be patient
also, and not be discouraged; for the Lord's Coming is near. 9 Do
not make complaints against one another, Brothers, or judgement
will be passed upon you. The Judge is already standing at the door!
10 Brothers, as an example of the patient endurance of suffering,
take the Prophets who spoke in the name of the Lord. 11 We count
those who displayed such endurance blessed! You have heard, too,
of Job's endurance, and have seen what the Lord's purpose was, for
'the Lord is full of pity and compassion.'

12 Above all things, my Brothers, never take an oath, either
by heaven, or by earth, or by anything else. With you let 'Yes' suffice
for yes, and 'No' for no, so that you may escape condemnation. 13 If
any of you is in trouble, let him pray; if any one is happy, let him
sing hymns. 14 If any one of you is ill, let him send for the Officers of
the Church, and let them pray over him, after anointing him with
oil in the name of the lord. 15 The prayer offered in faith will save
the man who is sick, and the Lord will raise him from his bed; and
if he has committed sins, he will be forgiven. 16 Therefore, confess
your sins to one another and pray for one another, that you may be
cured. Great is the power of a good man's fervent prayer. 17 Elijah
was only a man like ourselves, but, when he prayed fervently that it
might not rain, no rain fell upon the land for three years and a half.
18 And, when he prayed again, the clouds brought rain, and the land
bore crops. 19 My Brothers, should one of you be led astray from the
Truth, and some one bring him back again, 20 Be sure that he who
brings a sinner back from his mistaken ways will save that man's
soul from Death, and throw a veil over countless sins.

The First Letter of Peter

Chapter 1

1 To the People of God who are living abroad, dispersed
throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Roman Asia, and Bithynia,
2 and who were chosen in accordance with the foreknowledge of
God the Father, through the consecration of the Spirit, to learn
obedience, and to be purified by the sprinkling of the Blood of Jesus
Christ, from Peter, an Apostle of Jesus Christ. May blessing and
peace be yours in ever-increasing measure.

3 Blessed is the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,
who has, in his great mercy, through the resurrection of Jesus
Christ from the dead, 4 given us the new Life of undying hope, that
promises an inheritance, imperishable, stainless, unfading, which
has been reserved for you in Heaven— 5 for you who, through faith,
are being guarded by the power of God, awaiting a Salvation that is
ready to be revealed in the last days.

6 At the thought of this you are full of exultation, though (if
it has been necessary) you have suffered for the moment somewhat
from various trials; 7 that the genuineness of your faith—a thing far
more precious than gold, which is perishable, yet has to be tested
by fire—may win praise and glory and honour at the Appearing of
Jesus Christ. 8 Though you have never seen him, yet you love him;
though you do not even now see him, yet you believe in him, and
exalt with a triumphant happiness too great for words, 9 as you
receive the reward of your faith in the Salvation of your souls!

10 It was this Salvation that the Prophets, who spoke long ago
of the blessing intended for you, sought, and strove to comprehend;
11 as they strove to discern what that time could be, to which the
Spirit of Christ within them was pointing, when foretelling the
sufferings that would befall Christ, and the glories that would
follow. 12 And it was revealed to them that it was not for themselves,
but for you, that they were acting as Ministers of the truths which
have now been told to you, by those who, with the help of the Holy
Spirit sent from Heaven, have brought you the Good News—truths
into which even angels long to look.

13 Therefore concentrate your minds, with the strictest self-

control, and fix your hopes on the blessing that is coming for you at the Appearing of Jesus Christ. 14 Be like obedient children; do not let your lives be shaped by the passions which once swayed you in the days of your ignorance, 15 but in your whole life show yourselves to be holy, after the pattern of the Holy One from whom you received your Call. 16 For Scripture says—'You shall be holy, because I am holy.' 17 And since you call upon him as 'Father,' who judges every one impartially by what he has done, let reverence be the spirit of your lives during the time of your stay upon earth. 18 For you know that it was not by perishable things, such as silver and gold, that you were Ransomed from the aimless way of living which was handed down to you from your ancestors, 19 but by precious blood, as it were of a lamb, unblemished and spotless, the Blood of Christ. 20 Destined for this before the beginning of the world, he has been revealed in these last days for your sakes, 21 who, through him, are faithful to God who raised him from the dead and gave him honour, so that your faith and hope are now in God. 22 Now that, by your obedience to the Truth, you have purified your lives, so that there is growing up among you a genuine brotherly affection, love one another earnestly with all your hearts; 23 since your new Life has come, not from perishable, but imperishable, seed, through the Message of the Everliving God.

24 For—'All earthly life is but as grass, And all its splendour as the flower of grass. The grass fades, Its flower falls, 25 But the teaching of the Lord remains for ever.' And that is the Teaching of the Good News which has been told to you.

Chapter 2

1 Now that you have done with all malice, all deceitfulness, insincerity, jealous feelings, and all back-biting, 2 like newly born infants, crave pure spiritual milk, so that you may be enabled by it to grow till you attain Salvation— 3 since 'you have found by experience that the Lord is kind.'

4 Come to Him, then, as to a living stone, rejected, indeed, by men, but in God's eyes choice and precious; 5 and, as living stones, form yourselves into a spiritual House, to be a consecrated Priesthood, for the offering of spiritual sacrifices that will be acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. 6 For there is a passage of Scripture that runs— 'See, I am placing in Zion a choice and

precious corner-stone; And he who believes in him shall have no cause for shame.' 7 It is to you, then, who believe in him that he is precious, but to those who do not believe he is 'a stone which, though rejected by the builders, has now itself become the corner-stone,' 8 and 'a stumbling-block, and a rock which shall prove a hindrance.' They stumble because they do not accept the Message. This was the fate destined for them. 9 But you are 'a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a consecrated nation, God's own People,' entrusted with the proclamation of the goodness of him who called you out of Darkness into his wonderful Light. 10 Once you were 'not a people,' but now you are 'God's People'; once you 'had not found mercy,' but now you 'have found mercy.' 11 Dear friends, I urge you, as pilgrims and strangers upon earth, to refrain from indulging the cravings of your earthly nature, for they make war upon the soul. 12 Let your daily life among the Gentiles be so upright, that, whenever they malign you as evil-doers, they may learn, as they watch, from the uprightness of your conduct, to praise God 'at the time when he shall visit them.'

13 Submit to all human institutions for the Lord's sake, alike to the emperor as the supreme authority, 14 and to governors as the men sent by him to punish evil-doers and to commend those who do right. 15 For God's will is this—that you should silence the ignorance of foolish people by doing what is right. 16 Act as free men, yet not using your freedom as those do who make it a cloak for wickedness, but as Servants of God. 17 Show honour to every one, Love the Brotherhood, 'revere God, honour the emperor.' 18 Those of you who are domestic servants should always be submissive and respectful to their masters, not only to those who are good and considerate, but also to those who are arbitrary. 19 For this wins God's approval when, because conscious of God's presence, a man who is suffering unjustly bears his troubles patiently. 20 What credit can you claim when, after doing wrong, you take your punishment for it patiently? But, on the other hand, if, after doing right, you take your sufferings patiently, that does win the approval of God. 21 For it was to this that you were called! For Christ, too, suffered—on your behalf—and left you an example, that you should follow in his steps. 22 He 'never sinned, nor was anything deceitful ever heard from his lips.' 23 He was abused, but he did not answer with abuse; he suffered, but he did not threaten; he entrusted himself to him

whose judgements are just. 24 And he 'himself carried our sins' in
his own body to the cross, so that we might die to our sins, and live
for righteousness. 'His bruising was your healing.' 25 Once you were
straying like sheep, but now you have returned to the Shepherd and
Guardian of your souls.

Chapter 3

1 Again, you married women should submit to your
husbands, so that if any of them reject the Message, they may, apart
from the Message, be won over, by the conduct of their wives, 2 as
they watch your submissive and blameless conduct. 3 Yours should
be, not the external adornment of the arrangement of the hair, the
wearing of jewellery, or the putting on of dresses, 4 but the inner
life with the imperishable beauty of a quiet and gentle spirit; for
this is very precious in God's sight. 5 It was by this that the holy
women of old, who rested their hopes on God, adorned themselves;
submitting to their husbands, 6 as Sarah did, who obeyed Abraham,
and called him master. And you are her true children, as long as
you live good lives, and let nothing terrify you. 7 Again, those of you
who are married men should live considerately with their wives,
showing due regard to their sex, as weaker than their own, and not
forgetting that they share with you in the gift of Life. Then you will
be able to pray without hindrance.

8 Lastly, you should all be united, sympathetic, full of
brotherly love, kind-hearted, humble-minded; 9 never returning
evil for evil, or abuse for abuse, but, on the contrary, blessing. It was
to this that you were called—to obtain a blessing! 10 'He who would
enjoy life And see happy days— let him keep his tongue from evil
And his lips from deceitful words, 11 Let him turn from evil and do
good, Let him seek for peace and follow after it; 12 For the eyes of the
Lord are on the righteous, And his ears are attentive to their prayers,
But the face of the Lord is set against those who do wrong.' 13 Who,
indeed, is there to harm you, if you prove yourselves to be eager for
what is good? 14 Even if you should suffer for righteousness, count
yourselves blessed! 'Do not let men terrify you, or allow yourselves
to be dismayed.' 15 Revere the Christ as Lord in your hearts; always
ready to give an answer to any one who asks your reason for the
hope that you cherish, but giving it humbly and in all reverence,

16 and keeping your consciences clear, so that, whenever you

are maligned, those who vilify your good and Christian conduct
may be put to shame. 17 It is better that you should suffer, if that
should be God's will, for doing right, than for doing wrong.

18 For Christ himself died to atone for sins once for all—the
good on behalf of the bad—that he might bring you to God; his body
being put to death, but his spirit entering upon new Life. 19 And it
was then that he went and preached to the imprisoned spirits, 20
who once were disobedient, at the time when God patiently waited,
in the days of Noah, while the ark was being prepared; in which
some few lives, eight in all, were saved by means of water.

21 And baptism, which this foreshadowed, now saves
you—not the mere cleansing of the body, but the search of a clear
conscience after God—through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, 22
who has gone into Heaven, and is at God's right hand, where Angels
and Archangels and the Powers of Heaven now yield submission to
him.

Chapter 4

1 Since, then, Christ suffered in body, arm yourselves with
the same resolve as he; for he who has suffered in body has ceased
to sin, 2 and so will live the rest of his earthly life guided, not by
human passions, but by the will of God. 3 Surely in the past you
have spent time enough living as the Gentiles delight to live. For
your path has lain among scenes of debauchery, licentiousness,
drunkenness, revelry, hard-drinking, and profane idolatry.

4 And, because you do not run to the same extremes of
profligacy as others, they are astonished, and malign you. 5 But they
will have to answer for their conduct to him who is ready to judge
both the living and the dead. 6 For that was why the Good News was
told to the dead also—that, after they have been judged in the body,
as men are judged, they might live in the spirit, as God lives.

7 But the end of all things is near. Therefore exercise self-
restraint and be calm, that you may be able to pray. 8 Above all
things, let your love for one another be earnest, for 'Love throws a
veil over countless sins.' 9 Never grudge hospitality to one another.
10 Whatever the gift that each has received, use it in the service of
others, as good stewards of the varied bounty of God. 11 When any
one speaks, let him speak as one who is delivering the oracles of
God. When any one is endeavouring to serve others, let him do so in

reliance on the strength which God supplies; so that in everything God may be honour ed through Jesus Christ—to whom be ascribed all honour and might for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Dear friends, do not be astonished at the fiery trials that you are passing through, to test you, as though something strange were happening to you. 13 No, the more you share the sufferings of the Christ, the more may you rejoice, that, when the time comes for the manifestation of his Glory, you may rejoice and exult. 14 If you are reviled for bearing the name of Christ, count yourselves blessed; because the divine Glory and the Spirit of God are resting upon you. 15 I need hardly say that no one among you must suffer as a murderer, or a thief, or a criminal, or for interfering in matters which do not concern Christians. 16 But, if a man suffers as a Christian, do not let him be ashamed of it; let him bring honour to God even though he bears that name. 17 For the time has come for judgement to begin with the House of God; and, if it begins with us, what will be the end of those who reject God's Good News? 18 If 'a good man is saved only with difficulty, what will become of the godless and the sinful?' 19 Therefore, I say, let those who suffer, because God wills it so, commit their lives into the hands of a faithful Creator, and persevere in doing right.

Chapter 5

1 As for the older men among you, who bear office in the Church, I, their fellow-Officer, and a witness to the sufferings of the Christ, who shall also share in the glory that is to be revealed— 2 I urge you to be true shepherds of the flock of God among you, not because you are compelled, but of your own free will; not from a base love of gain, but with a ready spirit; 3 not as lords of your charges, but as examples to your flock. 4 Then, when the Chief Shepherd appears, you will win the crown of glory that never fades.

5 Again, you younger men should show deference to the older. And all of you should put on the badge of humility in mutual service, for 'God is opposed to the proud, but gives his help to the humble.' 6 Humble yourselves, therefore, under the mighty hand of God, so that he may exalt you in his good time, 7 laying all your anxieties upon him, for he makes you his care.

8 Exercise self-control, be watchful. Your adversary, the Devil, like a roaring lion, is prowling about, eager to devour you.

9 Stand firm against him, strong in your faith; knowing, as you do, that the very sufferings which you are undergoing are being endured to the full by your Brotherhood throughout the world.

10 God, from whom all help comes, and who called you, by your union with Christ, into his eternal glory, will, when you have suffered for a little while, himself perfect, establish, strengthen you. 11 To him be ascribed dominion for ever. Amen. 12 I have been writing to you briefly by the hand of Silas, our true-hearted Brother (for so I regard him), to urge upon you, and to bear my testimony, that in what I have written is to be found the true love of God. On that take your stand. 13 Your sister-Church in 'Babylon' sends you greeting, and so does Mark, who is as a son to me. 14 Greet one another with the kiss of love. May God give his peace to you all in your union with Christ.

The Second Letter of Peter

Chapter 1

[1] To those to whom, through the justice of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ, there has been granted faith equally privileged with our own, from Simon Peter, a servant and an Apostle of Jesus Christ. [2] May blessing and peace be yours in ever-increasing measure, as you advance in the knowledge of God and of Jesus, our Lord. [3] For his divine power has given us everything that is needful for a life of piety, as we advance in the knowledge of him who called us by a glorious manifestation of his goodness. [4] For it was through this that he gave us what we prize as the greatest of his promises, that through them you might participate in the divine nature, now that you have fled from the corruption in the world, resulting from human passions.

[5] Yes, and for this very reason do your best to supplement your faith by goodness, goodness by knowledge, [6] knowledge by self-control, self-control by endurance, endurance by piety, [7] piety by brotherly affection, and brotherly affection by love. [8] For, when these virtues are yours, in increasing measure, they prevent your being indifferent to, or destitute of, a fuller knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. [9] Surely the man who has not these virtues is shortsighted even to blindness, and has chosen to forget that he has been purified from his sins of the past! [10] Therefore, Brothers, do your best to put God's Call and Selection of you beyond all doubt; for, if you do this, you will never fall. [11] For thus you will be given a triumphant admission into the eternal Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ.

[12] I shall, therefore, always be ready to remind you of all this, even though you know it and are firmly established in the Truth that you now hold. [13] But I think it my duty, as long as I live in this 'tent,' to rouse you by awakening memories of the past; [14] for I know that the time for this 'tent' of mine to be put away is soon coming, as our Lord Jesus Christ himself assured me. [15] So I will do my best to enable you, at any time after my departure, to call these truths to mind.

[16] For we were not following cleverly devised stories when

we told you of the Coming in power of our Lord Jesus Christ, but we had been eye-witnesses of his majesty. 17 For he received honour and glory from God the Father, when from the Glory of the Divine Majesty there were borne to his ears words such as these— 'This is my Son, my Beloved, in whom I delight.' 18 These were the words that we heard, borne to our ears from Heaven, when we were with him on that Sacred Mountain.

19 And still stronger is the assurance that we have in the teaching of the Prophets; to which you will do well to pay attention (as if it were a lamp shining in a gloomy place), until the Day dawns and the Morning Star rises in your hearts. 20 But first be assured of this:—There is no prophetic teaching found in Scripture that can be interpreted by man's unaided reason; 21 for no prophetic teaching ever came in the old days at the mere wish of man, but men, moved by the Holy Spirit, spoke direct from God.

Chapter 2

1 But there were false prophets also in the nation, just as there will be false teachers among you, men who will secretly introduce ruinous divisions, disowning even the Lord who bought them, and bringing speedy Ruin upon themselves. 2 There will be many, too, who will follow their licentious courses, and cause the Way of the Truth to be maligned.

3 In their covetousness they will try to make you a source of profit by their fabrications; but for a long time past their Sentence has not been standing idle, nor their Ruin slumbering. 4 Remember, God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them down to Tartarus, and committed them to caverns of darkness, to be kept under guard for judgement. 5 Nor did he spare the world of old; though he preserved Noah, the Preacher of Righteousness, and seven others, when he brought a flood upon the godless world. 6 He condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah and reduced them to ashes, holding them up as a warning to the godless of what was in store for them;

7 but he rescued righteous Lot, whose heart was vexed by the wanton licentiousness of his neighbours; 8 for, seeing and hearing what he did, as he lived his righteous life among them, day after day, Lot's righteous soul was tortured by their wicked doings. 9 The Lord, therefore, knows how to deliver the pious from temptation,

and to keep the wicked, who are even now suffering punishment, in readiness for 'the Day of Judgement'—

10 especially those who, following the promptings of their lower nature, indulge their polluting passions and despise all control. Audacious and self-willed, they feel no awe of the Mighty, maligning them, 11 even where angels, though excelling them in strength and power, do not bring against them a malignant charge before the Lord. 12 These men, however, like animals without reason, intended by nature to be caught and killed—these men, I say, malign those of whom they know nothing, and will assuredly perish through their own corruption, 13 suffering themselves, as the penalty for the suffering that they have inflicted. They think that pleasure consists in the self-indulgence of the moment. They are a stain and a disgrace, indulging, as they do, in their wanton revelry, even while joining you at your feasts. 14 They have eyes only for adulteresses, eyes never tired of sin; they entice weak souls; their minds are trained to covet; they live under a curse. 15 Leaving the straight road, they have gone astray and followed in the steps of Balaam, the son of Beor, who set his heart on the reward for wrong-doing, 16 but was rebuked for his offence. A dumb animal spoke with the voice of a man, and checked the prophet's madness. 17 These men are like springs without water, or mists driven before a gale; and for them the blackest darkness has been reserved. 18 With boastful and foolish talk, they appeal to the passions of man's lower nature, and, by their profligacy, entice those who are just escaping from the men who live such misguided lives. 19 They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves to corrupt habits; for a man is the slave of anything to which he gives way. 20 If, after having escaped the polluting influences of the world, through knowing our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ, men are again entangled in them, and give way to them, their last state has become worse than their first. 21 It would, indeed, have been better for them not to have known the Way of Righteousness, than, after knowing it, to turn away from the holy Command delivered to them. 22 In their case is seen the truth of the proverb— 'A dog returns to what he has vomited' and 'A sow after washing to her wallowing-place in the mud.'

Chapter 3

1 This, dear friends, is my second letter to you. In both of

them I have tried, by appealing to your remembrance, to arouse your better feelings. 2 I want you to recall what was foretold by the holy Prophets, as well as the Command of our Lord and Saviour given to you through your Apostles.

3 First be assured of this, that, as the age draws to an end, scoffers, led by their own passions, 4 will come and ask scoffingly—'Where is his promised Coming? Ever since our fathers passed to their rest, everything remains just as it was when the world was first created!' 5 For they wilfully shut their eyes to the fact that long ago the heavens existed; and the earth, also—formed out of water and by the action of water, by the fiat of God; 6 and that by the same means the world which then existed was destroyed in a deluge of water. 7 But the present heavens and earth, by the same fiat, have been reserved for fire, and are being kept for the day of the judgement and destruction of the godless.

8 But you, dear friends, must never shut your eyes to the fact that, to the Lord, one day is the same as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

9 The Lord is not slow to fulfil his promise, as some count slowness; but he is forbearing with you, as it is not his will that any of you should perish, but that all should be brought to repentance. 10 The Day of the Lord will come like a thief; and on that day the heavens will pass away with a crash, the elements will be burnt up and dissolved, and the earth and all that is in it will be disclosed.

11 Now, since all these things are in the process of dissolution, think what you yourselves ought to be—what holy and pious lives you ought to lead, 12 while you await and hasten the coming of the Day of God. At its coming the heavens will be dissolved in fire, and the elements melted by heat, 13 but we look for 'new heavens and a new earth,' where righteousness shall have its home, in fulfilment of the promise of God. 14 Therefore, dear friends, in expectation of these things, make every effort to be found by him spotless, blameless, and at peace. 15 Regard our Lord's forbearance as your one hope of Salvation. This is what our dear Brother Paul wrote to you, with the wisdom that God gave him. 16 It is the same in all his letters, when he speaks in them about these subjects. There are some things in them difficult to understand, which untaught and weak people distort, just as they do all other writings, to their own Ruin. 17 Do you, therefore, dear friends, now that you know this

beforehand, be on your guard against being led away by the errors of reckless people, and so lapsing from your present steadfastness; 18 and advance in the love and knowledge of our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ. All glory be to him now and for ever.

The First Letter of John

Chapter 1

1 It is of what has been in existence from the Beginning, of
what we have heard, of what we have seen with our eyes, of what
we watched reverently and touched with our hands—it is about the
Word who is the Life that we are now writing. 2 That Life was made
visible, and we have seen it, and now bear our testimony to it, and
tell you of that Immortal Life, which was with the Father and was
made visible to us. 3 It is of what we have seen and heard that we
now tell you, so that you may have communion with us. And our
communion is with the Father and with his Son, Jesus Christ. 4 And
we are writing all this to you that our joy may be complete.

5 These, then, are the Tidings that we have heard from
him and now tell you—'God is Light, and Darkness has no place
at all in him.' 6 If we say that we have communion with him, and
yet continue to live in the Darkness, we lie, and are not living the
Truth. 7 But, if our lives are lived in the Light, as God himself is in
the Light, we have communion with one another, and the Blood of
Jesus, his Son, purifies us from all sin.

8 If we say that there is no sin in us, we are deceiving
ourselves, and the Truth has no place in us. 9 If we confess our sins,
God may be trusted, in his righteousness, to forgive us our sins and
purify us from all wickedness. 10 If we say that we have not sinned,
we are making God a liar, and his Message has no place in us.

Chapter 2

1 My children, I am writing to you to keep you from sinning;
but if any one should sin, we have one who can plead for us with
the Father—Jesus Christ, the Righteous— 2 and he is the atoning
sacrifice for our sins, and not for ours only, but for those of the
whole world besides.

3 And by this we know that we have learned to know
him—by our laying his commands to heart. 4 The man who says
'I know Jesus,' but does not lay his commands to heart, is a liar,
and the Truth has no place in him; 5 but, whenever a man lays his
Message to heart, in that man the love of God has indeed reached

its perfection. By this we know that we are in union with God— 6 He who professes to maintain union with God is himself bound to live as Christ lived.

7 Dear friends, it is no new command that I am writing to you, but an old command, which you have had from the first. That old command is the Message to which you listened. 8 Yet, again, it is a new Command that I am writing to you—manifest in Christ's life and in your own—for the Darkness is passing away and the true Light is already shining. 9 He who says that he is in the Light, and yet hates his Brother, is in the Darkness even now. 10 He who loves his Brother is always in the Light, and there is nothing within him to cause him to stumble; 11 while he who hates his Brother is in the Darkness, and is living in the Darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the Darkness prevents his seeing.

12 I am writing, Children, to you, because your sins have been forgiven you for Christ's sake. 13 I am writing, Fathers, to you, because you have learned to know him who has been from the Beginning. I am writing, Young Men, to you, because you have conquered the Evil One. I write, Children, to you, because you have learned to know the Father. 14 I write, Fathers, to you, because you have learned to know him who has been from the Beginning. I write, Young Men, to you, because you are strong, and God's Message is always in your hearts, and you have conquered the Evil One. 15 Do not love the world or what the world can offer. When any one loves the world, there is no love for the Father in him; 16 for all that the world can offer—the gratification of the earthly nature, the gratification of the eye, the pretentious life—belongs, not to the Father, but to the world. 17 And the world, and all that it gratifies, is passing away, but he who does God's will remains for ever.

18 My Children, these are the last days. You were told that an Anti-Christ was coming; and many Anti-Christ's have already arisen. By that we know that these are the last days. 19 From us, it is true, they went out, but they had never belonged to us; for, if they had belonged to us, they would have remained among us. They left us that it might be made clear that they do not, any of them, belong to us.

20 You, however, have received consecration from the Holy One. 21 You all know—But I am not writing to you because you do not know the Truth, but because you do know it, and because

nothing false can come from the Truth. 22 Who is a liar, if not the man who rejects the truth that Jesus is the Christ? He is the Anti-Christ—The man who rejects the Father and the Son. 23 No one who rejects the Son has found the Father; he who acknowledges the Son has found the Father also. 24 As for you, let what you were told at the first be always in your thoughts. If, then, what you were told at the first is always in your thoughts, you yourselves will maintain your union both with the Son and with the Father. 25 And this is what he himself promised us—The Immortal Life! 26 In writing thus to you, I have in mind those who are trying to mislead you. 27 But you—you still retain in your hears that consecration which you received from the Christ, and are not in need of any one to teach you; but, since his consecration of you teaches you about everything, and since it is a real consecration, and no lie, then, as it has taught you, maintain your union with him.

28 Yes, my Children, maintain your union with Christ, so that, whenever he appears, our confidence may not fail us, and we may not be ashamed to meet him at his coming. 29 Knowing him to be righteous, you realize that every one who lives righteously has received the new Life from him.

Chapter 3

1 Think what love the Father has shown us in allowing us to be called 'Children of God'; as indeed we are. The reason why the world does not know us is that it has not learned to know him. 2 Dear friends, we are God's Children now; what we shall be has not yet been revealed. What we do know is that, when it is revealed, we shall be like Christ; because we shall see him as he is. 3 And every one who has this hope with regard to Christ tries to make himself pure—as Christ is pure.

4 Every one who lives sinfully is living in violation of Law. Sin is violation of Law. 5 And you know that Christ appeared to take away our sins; and in him Sin has no place. 6 No one who maintains union with him lives in sin; no one who lives in sin has ever really seen him or learned to know him. 7 My Children, do not let any one mislead you. He who lives righteously is righteous—as Christ is righteous. 8 He who lives sinfully belongs to the Devil, for the Devil has sinned from the first. It was for this that the Son of God appeared, that he might undo the Devil's work. 9 No one who

has received the new Life from God lives sinfully, because the very nature of God dwells within him; and he cannot live in sin, because he has received the new Life from God. 10 By this the Children of God are distinguished from the Children of the Devil—No one who lives unrighteously comes from God, and especially the man who does not love his Brother.

11 For these are the Tidings that we heard from the first—that we are to love one another. 12 We must not be like Cain, who belonged to the Evil One and killed his brother. And why did he kill him? It was because his life was bad while his brother's was good. 13 Do not wonder, Brothers, if the world hates you.

14 We know that we have passed out of Death into Life, because we love our Brothers. The man who does not love remains in a state of Death. 15 Every one who hates his Brother is a murderer; and you know that no murderer has Immortal Life within him. 16 We have learned to know what love is from this—that Christ laid down his life on our behalf. Therefore we also ought to lay down our lives on behalf of our Brothers. 17 But, if any one has worldly possessions, and yet looks on while his Brother is in want, and steels his heart against him, how can it be said that the love of God is within him? 18 My children, do not let our love be mere words, or end in talk; let it be true and show itself in acts. 19 By that we shall know that we are on the side of the Truth; and we shall satisfy ourselves in God's sight,

20 that if our conscience condemns us, yet God is greater than our conscience and knows everything. 21 Dear friends, if our conscience does not condemn us, then we approach God with confidence, 22 and we receive from him whatever we ask, because we are laying his commands to heart, and are doing what is pleasing in his sight.

23 His Command is this—that we should put our trust in the Name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and love one another, in accordance with the Command that he gave us. 24 And he who lays his commands to heart maintains union with Christ, and Christ with him. And by this we know that Christ maintains union with us—by our possession of the Spirit which he gave us.

Chapter 4

1 Dear friends, do not trust every inspiration, but test each

inspiration, to see whether it proceeds from God; because many false Prophets have gone out into the world. 2 This is the way by which to know the inspiration of God—All inspiration that acknowledges Jesus Christ as come in our human nature is from God; 3 while all inspiration that does not acknowledge Jesus is not inspiration from God. It is the inspiration of the Anti-Christ; you have heard that it was to come, and it is now already in the world.

4 You, my Children, come from God, and you have successfully resisted such men as these, because he who is in you is greater than he who is in the world. 5 Those men belong to the world; and therefore they speak as the world speaks, and the world listens to them. 6 We come from God. He who knows God listens to us; the man who does not come from God does not listen to us. By that we may know the true inspiration from the false.

7 Dear friends, let us love one another, because Love comes from God; and every one who loves has received the new Life from God and knows God. 8 He who does not love has not learned to know God; for God is Love. 9 The love of God was revealed to us by his sending his only Son into the world, that we might find Life through him. 10 His love is seen in this—not in our having loved God, but in his loving us and sending his Son to be an atoning sacrifice for our sins. 11 Dear friends, since God loved us thus, we, surely, ought to love one another. 12 No human eyes have ever seen God, yet, if we love one another, God remains in union with us, and his love attains its perfection in us. 13 We know that we remain in union with him, and he with us, by this—by his having given us some measure of his Spirit.

14 Moreover, our eyes have seen—and we are testifying to the fact—that the Father has sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world. 15 Whoever acknowledges that Jesus Christ is the Son of God—God remains in union with that man, and he with God. 16 And, moreover, we have learned to know, and have accepted as a fact, the love which God has for us. God is Love; and he who lives in love lives in God, and God in him.

17 It is through this that love has attained its perfection in us, so that we may have confidence on the Day of Judgement, because what Christ is that we also are in this world. 18 There is no fear in love. No! Love, when perfect, drives out fear, for fear implies punishment, and the man who feels fear has not attained to perfect

love. 19 We love, because God first loved us. 20 If a man says 'I love God,' and yet hates his Brother, he is a liar; for the man who does not love his Brother, whom he has seen, cannot love God, whom he has not seen. 21 Indeed, we have this Command from God—'He who loves God must also love his Brother.'

Chapter 5

1 Every one who believes that Jesus is the Christ has received the new Life from God; and every one who loves him who gave that Life loves him who has received it. 2 By this we know that we love God's Children—when we love God and carry out his commands. 3 For to love God is to lay his commands to heart; and his commands are not burdensome, 4 because all that has received the new Life from God conquers the world. And this is the power that has conquered the world—our faith! 5 Who is he that conquers the world but the man who believes that Jesus is the Son of God?

6 He it is whose Coming was attested by means of Water and Blood—Jesus Christ himself; not by Water only, but by Water and by Blood. And there is the Spirit also to bear testimony, and the Spirit is Truth itself. 7 It is a three-fold testimony— 8 that of the Spirit, the Water, and the Blood—and these three are at one. 9 We accept the testimony of men, but God's testimony is still stronger; and there is the testimony of God—the fact that he has already borne testimony about his Son.

10 He who believes in the Son of God has that testimony within him. He who does not believe God has made God a liar, by refusing to believe in that testimony which he has borne about his Son. 11 And that testimony is that God gave us Immortal Life, and that this Life is in his Son. 12 He who finds the Son finds Life; he who does not find the Son of God does not find Life. 13 I write this to you, that you may realize that you have found Immortal Life—you who believe in the Name of the Son of God.

14 And this is the confidence with which we approach him, that whenever we ask anything that is in accordance with his will, he listens to us. 15 And if we realize that he listens to us—whatever we ask—we realize that we have what we have asked from him. 16 If any one sees his Brother committing some sin that is not a deadly sin, he will ask, and so be the means of giving Life to him—to any whose sin is not deadly. There is such a thing as deadly sin; about

that I do not say that a man should pray. 17 Every wrong action is sin, and there is sin that is not deadly.

18 We know that no one who has received the new Life from God lives in sin. No, he who has received the new Life from God keeps the thought of God in his heart, and then the Evil One does not touch him. 19 We realize that we come from God, while all the world is under the influence of the Evil One. 20 We realize, too, that the Son of God has come among us, and has given us the discernment to know the True God; and we are in union with the True God by our union with his Son, Jesus Christ. He is the True God and he is Immortal Life. 21 My Children, guard yourselves against false ideas of God.

The Second Letter of John

Chapter 1

1 To an eminent Christian Lady, and to her Children, from
the Officer of the Church. I sincerely love you all, and not I only, but
also all those who have learned to know the Truth. 2 We love you for
the sake of that Truth which is always in our hearts; yes, and it will
be ours for ever. 3 Blessing, mercy, and peace will be ours—the gift
of God, the Father, and of Jesus Christ, the Father's Son—in a life
of truth and love. 4 It was a great joy to me to find the lives of some
of your children guided by the Truth, in obedience to the command
that we received from the Father.

5 And now, I pray you, Lady—not as though I were writing
a new command for you; no, it is the command which we had from
the first—Let us love one another. 6 And this is love—to live in
obedience to the Father's commands. This is the Command as you
learned from the first, to live in a spirit of love.

7 I say this because many impostors have left us to go into
the world—men who do not acknowledge Jesus as Christ come in
our human nature. It is that which marks a man as an impostor
and an anti-Christ. 8 Take care that you do not lose the fruit of all
our work; rather, reap the benefit of it in full. 9 Every one who goes
beyond the limits of the Teaching of the Christ has failed to find
God; the man who keeps to that Teaching—he has found both the
Father and the Son.

10 If any one comes to you and does not bring this Teaching,
do not receive him into your house or welcome him; 11 for the man
who welcomes him is sharing with him in his wicked work.

12 Though I have a great deal to say to you, I would rather not
trust it to paper and ink, but I am hoping to come and see you, and
to speak with you face to face, so that your joy may be complete. 13
The children of your eminent sister send you their greetings.

The Third Letter of John

Chapter 1

[1] To his dear friend Gaius, whom he sincerely loves, From the Officer of the Church. [2] Dear friend, I pray that all may be well with you and that you may have good health—I know that all is well with your soul.

[3] For it was a great joy to me, when some Brothers came and testified to your fidelity to the Truth—I know that your own life is guided by the Truth. [4] Nothing gives me greater pleasure than to hear from time to time that the lives of my Children are guided by the Truth. [5] Dear friend, whatever you do for our Brothers is done in a Christian spirit—even when they are strangers to you. [6] They themselves have testified before the Church to your love; and you will do well to help them on their way in a manner worthy of the service of God. [7] For it was on behalf of the Name that they left their homes, and refused to take anything from the Gentiles. [8] We, therefore, ought to give such people a hearty welcome, and so take our share in their work for the Truth.

[9] I wrote a few lines to the Church; but Diotrephes, who loves to be first among them, declines to recognize us. [10] Therefore, when I come, I shall not forget his conduct in ridiculing us with his wicked tongue. Not content with that, he not only declines to recognize our Brothers himself, but actually prevents those who would, and expels them from the Church. [11] Dear friend, take what is good for your example, not what is bad. The man who does what is good is from God; the man who does what is bad has never seen God.

[12] Every one has always had a good word for Demetrius, and the Truth itself speaks for him. Yes, and we also add our good word, and you know that what we say about him is true. [13] I have a great deal to say to you, but I do not care to trust it to pen and ink in a letter. [14] I hope, however, it will not be long before I see you, and then we will speak face to face. Peace be with you. Our friends here send you their greetings. Greet each one of our friends.

The Letter of Jude

Chapter 1

[1] To those who, having received the Call, have been loved by God the Father and protected by Jesus Christ, From Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ, and the brother of James. [2] May mercy, peace, and love be yours in ever-increasing measure.

[3] Dear friends, while I was making every effort to write to you about our common Salvation, I felt that I must write to you at once to urge you to fight in defence of the Faith that has once for all been entrusted to the keeping of Christ's People. [4] For there have crept in among you certain godless people, whose sentence has long since been pronounced, and who make the mercy of God an excuse for profligacy, and disown our only lord and master, Jesus Christ. [5] Now I want to remind you—but you already know it all—that, though the Lord delivered the People from Egypt, yet he afterwards destroyed those who refused to believe in him; [6] and that even those angels, who did not keep to their appointed spheres, but left their proper homes, have been kept by him for the judgement of the Great Day in everlasting chains and black darkness. [7] Like Sodom and Gomorrah and the towns near them, which gave themselves up to fornication, and fell into unnatural vice, these angels now stand out as a warning, undergoing, as they are, the punishment of aeonian fire.

[8] Yet in the very same way these men, too, cherishing vain dreams, pollute our human nature, reject control, and malign the Mighty. [9] Yet even Michael, the Archangel, when, in his dispute with the Devil, he was arguing about the body of Moses, did not venture to charge him with maligning, but said merely 'The Lord rebuke you!' [10] But these men malign whatever they do not understand; while they use such things as they know by instinct (like the animals that have no reason) for their own corruption. [11] Alas for them! They walk in the steps of Cain; led astray by Balaam's love of gain, they plunge into sin, and meet their ruin through rebellion like that of Korah. [12] These are the men who are blots upon your 'Love-feasts,' when they feast together and provide without scruple for themselves alone. They are clouds without rain, driven before

the winds; they are leafless trees without a vestige of fruit, dead through and through, torn up by the roots; 13 They are wild sea waves, foaming with their own shame; they are 'wandering stars,' for which the blackest darkness has been reserved for ever. 14 To these men, as to others, Enoch, the seventh in descent from Adam, declared—'See! the Lord has come with his hosts of holy ones around him, 15 to execute judgement upon all men, and to convict all godless people of all their godless acts, which in their ungodliness they have committed, and of all the harsh words which they have spoken against him, godless sinners that they are!'

16 These men are always murmuring, and complaining of their lot; they follow where their passions lead them; they have arrogant words upon their lips; and they flatter men for the sake of what they can get from them. 17 But do you, dear friends, recall what was foretold by the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; 18 how they used to say to you—'As time draws to an end, there will be scoffers, who will be led by their godless passions.' 19 These are the people—animal and unspiritual—who cause divisions. 20 But do you, dear friends, build up your characters on the foundation of your most holy Faith, pray under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, 21 and keep within the love of God, while waiting for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, to bring you to Immortal Life. 22 To some show pity, because they are in doubt. 'Drag them out of the fire,' and save them. 23 To others show pity, but with caution, hating the very clothing polluted by their touch. 24 To him who is able to guard you from falling, and to bring you into his glorious presence, blameless and rejoicing- 25 to the one God, our Saviour, be ascribed, through Jesus Christ, our Lord, glory, majesty, power, and dominion, as it was before time began, is now, and shall be for all time to come. Amen.

The Revelation of John

Chapter 1

1 The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to him to make known to his servants, concerning what must shortly take place, and which he sent and revealed by his angel to his servant John, 2 who testified to the Message of God and to the testimony to Jesus Christ, omitting nothing of what he had seen.

3 Blessed is he who reads, and blessed are they who listen to, the words of this prophecy, and lay to heart what is here written; for The Time is near. 4 From John, to the seven Churches which are in Roman Asia. Blessing and peace be yours from him who is, and who was, and who shall be, and from the seven Spirits that are before his throne, 5 and from Jesus Christ, 'the faithful Witness, the First-born from the dead, and the Ruler of all the Kings of the earth.' To him who loves us and freed us from our sins by his own blood— 6 and he made us 'a Kingdom of Priests in the service of God,' his Father!—to Him be ascribed glory and dominion for ever. Amen. 7 'He is coming among the clouds!' Every eye shall see him, even those who pierced him; 'and all the nations of the earth shall wail for fear of him.' So shall it be. Amen. 8 'I am the Alpha and the Omega,' says the Lord, the God who is, and who was, and who shall be, the Almighty.

9 I, John, who am your Brother, and who share with you in the suffering and kingship and endurance of Jesus, found myself on the island called Patmos, for the sake of the Message of God and the testimony to Jesus. 10 I fell into a trance on the Lord's Day, and I heard behind me a loud voice, like the blast of a trumpet. 11 It said—' Write what you see in a book and send it to the seven Churches, to Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamus, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicaea.' 12 I turned to see what voice it was that spoke to me; and when I turned, I saw seven golden lamps, 13 and in the midst of the lamps one 'like a man, in a robe reaching to his feet,' and with a golden girdle across his breast. 14 'The hair of his head was as white as wool, as white as snow; his eyes were like flaming fire; 15 and his feet were like brass' as when molten in a furnace; 'his voice was like the sound of many streams,' 16 in his right hand he held seven stars, from his mouth came a sharp two-edged sword, and his face was like

'the sun in the fullness of its power.' [17] And, when I saw him, I fell at his feet like one dead. He laid his hand on me and said—'Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last, [18] the Everliving. I died, and I am alive for ever and ever. And I hold the keys of the Grave and of the Place of the Dead. [19] Therefore write of what you have seen and of what is happening now and of what is about to take place— [20] the mystic meaning of the seven stars which you saw in my right hand, and the seven golden lamps. The seven stars are the Angels of the seven Churches, and the seven lamps are the seven Churches.

Chapter 2

[1] To the Angel of the Church in Ephesus write:— "These are the words of him who holds the seven stars in his right hand, and walks among the seven golden lamps:— [2] I know your life, your toil and endurance, and I know that you cannot tolerate evil-doers. I know, too, how you tested those who declare that they are Apostles, though they are not, and how you proved them false. [3] You possess endurance, and have borne much for my Name, and have never grown weary. [4] But this I have against you—You have abandoned your first love. [5] Therefore remember from what you have fallen, and repent, and live the life that you lived before; or else, I will come and remove your Lamp from its place, unless you repent. [6] But this is in your favour—You hate the life lived by the Nikolaitans, and I also hate it. [7] Let him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the Churches. To him who conquers—to him I will give the right 'to eat the fruit of the Tree of life, which stands in the Paradise of God.'"

[8] To the Angel of the Church in Smyrna write:—"These are the words of him who is the First and the Last, who died, but is restored to life:— [9] I know your persecution and your poverty—yet you are rich! I know, too, the slander that come from those who declare that they are Jews, though they are not, but are a Congregation of Satan. [10] Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. The Devil is about to throw some of you into prison, that you may be tempted, and may undergo persecution for ten days. Be faithful even to death, and I will give you the Crown of Life. [11] Let him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the Churches. He who conquers shall suffer no hurt from the Second Death."

[12] To the Angel of the Church in Pergamus write:— "These

are the words of him who holds the sharp two-edged sword:— [13] I know where you dwell, where the Throne of Satan stands. And yet you hold to my Name, and you did not disown my Faith even in the days of Antipas, my faithful witness, who was put to death among you where Satan dwells. [14] Yet I have a few things against you—You have among you those who hold to the Teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to put temptations in the way of the Israelites, so that they should eat idol-offerings and commit licentious acts. [15] Again you have among you those who hold in the same way to the Teaching of the Nikolaitans. [16] Therefore repent, or else, I will come quickly and contend with such men with words that will cut like a sword. [17] Let him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the Churches. To him who conquers—to him I will give a share of the mystic manna, and I will give him a white stone; and on the stone shall be inscribed a new name, which no one knows except him who receives it."

[18] To the Angel of the Church in Thyatira write:— "These are the words of the Son of God, 'whose eyes are like flaming fire, and whose feet are like brass':— [19] I know your life, your love, faith, service, and endurance; and I know that your life of late has been better than it was at first. [20] Yet I have this against you—You tolerate the woman Jezebel, who declares that she is a Prophetess, and misleads my servants by her teaching, till they commit licentious acts and eat idol-offerings. [21] I gave her time to repent, but she is determined not to turn from her licentiousness. [22] Therefore I am laying her upon a bed of sickness, and bringing great suffering upon those who are unfaithful with her, unless they repent and turn from a life like hers. [23] I will also put her children to death; and all the Churches shall learn that I am he who 'looks into the hearts and souls of men'; and I will give to each one of you what his life deserves. [24] But I say to the rest of you at Thyatira—all who do not accept such teaching, whose who did not learn 'the secrets of Satan,' as men call them—I am not laying on you any further burden; [25] only hold fast to what you have received, until I come. [26] To him who conquers and is careful to live my life to the end—to him I will give authority over the nations, [27] and 'he shall rule them with an iron rod, as when earthen vessels are broken in pieces' (as I myself have received from my Father) [28] and I will give him the Morning Star. [29] Let him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the

Churches."

Chapter 3

1 To the Angel of the Church in Sardis write:—"These are
the words of him who has the seven Spirits of God and the seven
stars;—I know your life, and that men say of you that you are living,
though you are dead. 2 Be on the watch, and strengthen what still
survives, though once it was all but dead; for I have not found your
life perfect in the eyes of my God. 3 Therefore remember what you
have received and heard, and lay it to heart and repent. Unless you
are on the watch, I shall come like a thief, and you will not know
at what hour I am coming to you. 4 Yet there are some few among
you at Sardis who did not soil their robes; they shall walk with me,
robed in white, for they are worthy. 5 He who conquers shall be
clothed in these white robes, and I will not 'strike his name out of
the Book of Life'; but I will own him before my Father, and before
his angels. 6 Let him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to
the Churches."

7 To the Angel of the Church in Philadelphia write:— "These
are the words of him who is holy and true, who holds 'the Key of
David, who opens and no one shall shut, and shuts and no one
opens':— 8 I know your life (see, I have set a door open before you
which no one is able to shut), I know that, though you have but little
strength, you kept my teaching in mind, and did not disown my
Name. 9 Listen, I give some of the Congregation of Satan, the men
who declare that they are Jews, though they are not, but are lying—
—I will make them 'come and bow down at your feet,' and they shall
learn that I loved you. 10 Because you kept in mind the story of my
endurance, I will keep you in the hour of trial that is about to come
upon the whole world, the hour that will test all who are living upon
earth. 11 I will come quickly. Hold to what you have received, that
no one may take your crown. 12 He who conquers—I will make him
a pillar in the Temple of my God; and never more shall he leave it;
and I will write on him the name of my God and the name of the
City of my God, the New Jerusalem, which is coming down out of
Heaven from my God, and I will write on him my new name. 13 Let
him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the Churches."

14 To the Angel of the Church in Laodicaea write:— "These
are the words of the Unchanging One, 'the Witness faithful and

true, the Beginning of the Creation of God':— 15 I know your life; I
know that you are neither cold nor hot. Would that you were either
cold or hot! 16 But now, because you are lukewarm, neither hot not
cold, I am about to spit you out of my mouth. 17 You say 'I am rich
and have grown rich, and I want for nothing,' and you do not know
that you are wretched, miserable, poor, blind, naked! 18 Therefore I
counsel you to buy from me gold which has been refined by fire, that
you may grow rich; and white robes, that you may be clothed and
your shameful nakedness be hidden; and ointment to anoint your
eyes, that you may see. 19 'All whom I love I rebuke and discipline.'
Therefore be in earnest and repent. 20 I am standing at the door
and knocking! If any one hears my voice and opens the door, I will
go in, and will feast with him, and he shall feast with me. 21 To him
who conquers—to him I will give the right to sit beside me on my
throne, as I, when I conquered, took my seat beside my Father on
his throne. 22 Let him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to
the Churches."

Chapter 4

1 After this, in my vision, I saw an open door in the heavens,
and the first voice that I heard was like the blast of a trumpet
speaking to me. It said— 'Come up here and I will show you what
must take place.' 2 Immediately after this I fell into a trance. There
stood a throne in Heaven, and on the throne was One seated. 3 He
who was seated on it was in appearance like a jasper and a sardius;
and 'round the throne there was a rainbow' of the colour of an
emerald. 4 And round the throne were twenty-four other thrones,
and on these I saw twenty-four Councillors sitting clothed in white
robes; and on their heads they had crowns of gold. 5 Out from the
throne 'come flashes of lightning, cries, and peals of thunder'! There
are seven torches burning in front of the throne, which are the seven
spirits of God; 6 and in front of the throne is what seemed to be a
sea of glass, 'resembling crystal, while within the space before the
throne and round the throne are four Creatures full of eyes' in front
and behind. 7 The first Creature is like a lion, the second Creature
like a calf, the third Creature has a face like a man's, and the fourth
Creature is like an eagle on the wing.

8 These four Creatures have each of them six wings, and
all round, and within, they are full of eyes; and day and night they

never cease to say—'Holy, holy, holy is the Lord, our God, the Almighty, who was, and who is, and who shall be.' [9] And, whenever these Creatures give praise and honour and thanks to him who is 'seated on the throne, to him who lives for ever and ever,' [10] the twenty-four Councillors prostrate themselves before him who is seated on the throne, and worship him who lives for ever and ever, and throw down their crowns before the throne, saying— [11] 'Worthy art thou, our Lord and God, to receive all praise, and honour, and power, for thou didst create all things, and at thy bidding they came into being and were created.'

Chapter 5

[1] Then I saw at the right hand of him who was 'seated on the throne a book, with writing inside and out, and sealed' with seven seals; [2] and I saw a mighty angel who was proclaiming in a loud voice—'Who is worthy to open the book and break its seals?' [3] But no one either in Heaven or on earth or under the earth was able to open the book or look within it. [4] At this I wept long, because no one could be found who was worthy to open the book or look within it. [5] But one of the Councillors said to me—'Do not weep. The Lion conquered—the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Scion of David—and can therefore open the book with its seven seals.'

[6] Then, within the space between the throne and the four Creatures, and in the midst of the Councillors, I saw, standing, a Lamb, which seemed to have been sacrificed. It had seven horns and seven eyes. (These eyes are the seven Spirits of God, and they are sent into all the world.) [7] The Lamb came forward; and he has taken the book from the right hand of him who was seated on the throne. [8] And, when he had taken the book, the four Creatures and the twenty-four Councillors prostrated themselves before the Lamb, each of them holding a harp and golden bowls full of incense. (These are the prayers of Christ's People.) [9] And they are singing a new song—'Thou art worthy to take the book and break its seals, for thou wast sacrificed, and with thy blood thou didst buy for God men of every tribe, and language, and people, and nation, [10] and didst make them a Kingdom of Priests in the service of our God, and they are reigning upon the earth.' [11] Then, in my vision, I heard the voices of many angels round the throne, and of the Creatures, and of the Councillors. In number they were 'ten thousand times ten

thousand and thousands of thousands,' [12] and they cried in a loud voice—'Worthy is the Lamb that was sacrificed to receive all power, and wealth, and wisdom, and might, and honour, and praise, and blessing.' [13] And I heard every created thing in the air, and on the earth, and under the earth, and on the sea, and all that is in them crying—'To him who is seated on the throne and to the Lamb be ascribed all blessing, and honour, and praise, and dominion for ever and ever.' [14] And the four Creatures said 'Amen,' and the Councillors prostrated themselves and worshiped.

Chapter 6

[1] Then I saw the Lamb break one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four Creatures crying with a voice like thunder—'Come.' [2] And in my vision I saw 'a white horse.' Its rider held a bow, and he was given a crown, and he went out conquering and to conquer.

[3] When the Lamb broke the second seal, I heard the second Creature crying—'Come.' [4] Then there went out another horse, 'a red horse,' and to its rider was given the power to deprive the earth of peace, so that men should kill one another; and he was given a great sword. [5] When the Lamb broke the third seal, I heard the third Creature crying—'Come.' And in my vision I saw 'a black horse.' Its rider held scales in his hand. [6] And I heard what seemed to be a voice, coming from among the four Creatures, crying—'A quart of wheat for a florin, and three quarts of barley for a florin! But do not harm the oil and the wine.' [7] When the Lamb broke the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth Creature crying—'Come.' [8] And in my vision I saw a grey horse. His rider's name was Death, and the Lord of the Place of Death rode behind him; and power was given them over the fourth part of the earth, so that they might 'destroy with sword and famine and death, and by means of the wild beasts of the earth.'

[9] When the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been killed for the sake of God's Message and for the testimony which they had borne. [10] They cried in a loud voice—'How long, O Sovereign Lord, holy and true, before thou wilt give judgement and avenge our blood upon all who are living upon the earth?' [11] Then to each of them was given a white robe, and they were told to rest yet a little longer, till the number

of their fellow-servants and of their Brothers who were about to be
put to death, as they had been, should be complete. 12 And I saw the
Lamb break the sixth seal, and then there was a great earthquake.
The sun became black, like sackcloth, and the moon, which was at
its full, like blood. 13 'The stars of the heavens fell' to the earth, as
when a fig-tree, shaken by a strong wind, drops its unripe fruit. 14
The heavens disappeared like a scroll when it is rolled up, and every
mountain and island was moved from its place. 15 Then all the kings
of the earth, and the princes, and the generals, and the rich, and
the powerful, and every slave and free man, 'hid themselves in the
caves and under the rocks' of the mountains; 16 and they are crying
to the mountains and the rocks— 'Fall upon us, and hide us from
the eyes of him who is seated on the throne, and from the Wrath of
the Lamb, 17 for the great Day of their Wrath is come, and who can
stand to meet it?'

Chapter 7

1 After this, I saw four angels standing 'upon the four corners
of the earth,' restraining the four winds of the earth, that no wind
should blow over the earth, or over the sea, or against any tree. 2 And,
in the east, I saw another angel, ascending, holding the seal of the
Living God; and he cried in a loud voice to the four angels, to whom
there had been given power to harm the earth and the sea— 3 'Do
not harm the earth, or the sea, or the trees, until we have sealed the
servants of our God upon their foreheads.' 4 I heard, too, the number
of those who had been sealed. It was one hundred and forty-four
thousand; and they were from every tribe of the Israelites. 5 From
the tribe of Judah twelve thousand were sealed, from the tribe of
Reuben twelve thousand, from the tribe of Gad twelve thousand, 6
From the tribe of Asher twelve thousand, from the tribe of Napthali
twelve thousand, from the tribe of Manasseh twelve thousand, 7
From the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand, from the tribe of Levi
twelve thousand, from the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand, 8 From
the tribe of Zebulon twelve thousand, from the tribe of Joseph
twelve thousand, from the tribe of Benjamin twelve thousand were
sealed. 9 After this, in my vision, I saw a vast throng which no man
could number, of men from every nation and of all tribes, and
peoples, and languages. They stood in front of the throne and in
front of the Lamb, robed in white, holding palm branches in their

hands. 10 And they are crying in a loud voice—'Salvation be ascribed
to our God who is seated on his throne and to the Lamb.' 11 And all
the angels were standing round the throne and the Councillors and
the four Creatures, and they prostrated themselves on their faces in
front of the throne and worshiped God, 12 saying—'Amen. Blessing
and praise, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power,
and might be ascribed to our God for ever and ever. Amen.'

13 Then one of the Councillors turned to me and said 'Who
are these who are robed in white? and whence did they come?' 14
'My Lord,' I answered, 'it is you who know.' 'These,' he said, 'are
they who come through the Great Persecution; they washed their
robes white in the blood of the Lamb. 15 And therefore it is that they
are before the throne of God, and are serving him day and night in
his Temple; and he who is seated on the throne will shelter them. 16
Never again shall they be hungry, never again shall they be thirsty,
nor shall the sun smite upon them, nor any scorching heat; 17 for
the Lamb that stands in the space before the throne will be their
shepherd, and will lead them to life-giving springs of water; and
God will wipe away all tears from their eyes.'

Chapter 8

1 As soon as the Lamb had broken the seventh seal, there
was silence in Heaven for, it might be, half-an-hour. 2 Then I saw
the seven angels who stand before God, and seven trumpets were
given to them. 3 Next, another angel came and stood at the altar
with a golden censer in his hand; and a great quantity of incense
was given to him, to mingle with the prayers of all Christ's People
upon the golden altar before the throne. 4 The smoke of the incense
ascended, with the prayers of Christ's People, from the hand of
the angel before God. 5 Then the angel took the censer, and filled
it with fire from the altar, and threw it down upon the earth; and
there followed 'peals of thunder, cries, flashes of lightning,' and an
earthquake. 6 Then the seven angels holding the seven trumpets
prepared to blow their blasts.

7 The first blew; and there came hail and fire mixed with
blood, and it fell upon the earth. A third part of the earth was burnt
up, and a third of the trees, and every blade of grass. 8 Then the
second angel blew; and what appeared to be a great mountain,
burning, was hurled into the sea. A third of the sea became blood,

9 and a third part of all created things that are in the sea—that is,
of all living things—died, and a third of the ships was destroyed. 10
Then the third angel blew; and there fell from the heavens a great
star, burning like a torch. It fell upon a third of the rivers and upon
the springs. 11 (The star is called 'Wormwood.') A third of the water
became bitter as wormwood, and so bitter was the water that many
died from drinking it. 12 Then the fourth angel blew; and a third
of the sun and a third of the moon and a third of the stars were
blasted, so that a third of them was eclipsed, and for a third part
of the day there was no light, and at night it was the same. 13 And,
in my vision, I heard an eagle flying in mid-heaven and crying in a
loud voice—'Woe, woe, woe for all who live on the earth, at the other
trumpet-blasts of the three angels who have yet to blow.'

Chapter 9

1 Then the fifth angel blew; and I saw a Star that had fallen
upon the earth from the heavens, and to him was given the key of
the bottomless pit. 2 He opened the bottomless pit, and from the
pit rose a smoke like the smoke of a great furnace. The sun and the
air grew dark because of the smoke from the pit. 3 Out of the smoke
locusts descended upon the earth, and they received the same
power as that possessed by scorpions. 4 They were told not to harm
the grass, or any plant, or any tree, but only those who have not 'the
seal of God upon their foreheads.' 5 Yet they were not allowed to
kill them, but it was ordered that those men should be tortured for
five months. Their torture was like the torture caused by a scorpion
when it stings a man. 6 In those days men 'will seek Death and will
not find it'; They will long to die, but Death flees from them. 7 In
appearance the locusts were like horses equipped for battle. On
their heads there were what appeared to be crowns that shone like
gold, their faces resembled human faces, 8 and they had hair like the
hair of a woman, their teeth were like lions' teeth, 9 and they had
what seemed to be iron breastplates, while the noise of their wings
was like the noise of chariots drawn by many horses, galloping into
battle. 10 They have tails like scorpions, and stings, and in their tails
lies their power to harm men for five months. 11 They have as their
king the Angel of the bottomless pit, whose name, in Hebrew, is
'Abaddon,' while, in Greek, his name is 'Apollyon' (the Destroyer). 12
The first Woe has passed; and still there are two Woes to follow!

13 Then the sixth angel blew; and I heard a voice proceeding
from the corners of the golden altar that stood before God. 14 It
spoke to the sixth angel—the angel with the trumpet—and said 'Let
loose the four angels that are in chains at the great river Euphrates.'
15 Then the four angels, that were held in readiness for that hour
and day and month and year, were let loose, to destroy a third of
mankind. 16 The number of the hosts of horsemen was ten thousand
times ten thousand, twice told; I heard their number. 17 And this is
what the horses and their riders appeared to be like in my vision:
—They had breastplates of fire, blood-red and sulphurous, and the
heads of the horses were like lions' heads, while out of their mouths
issue fire, and smoke, and sulphur. 18 Through these three Curses
a third of mankind perished—because of the fire, and the smoke,
and the sulphur that issued from their mouths; 19 for the power of
the horses lies in their mouths and in their tails. For their tails are
like snakes, with heads, and it is with them that they do harm. 20
But those who were left of mankind, who had not perished through
these Curses, did not repent and turn away from what their own
hands had made; they would not abandon the worship of 'demons,
and of idols made of gold or silver or brass or stone or wood, which
can neither see, nor hear, nor walk'; 21 and they did not repent of
their murders, or their sorceries, or their licentiousness, or their
thefts.

Chapter 10

1 Then I saw another mighty angel, descending from Heaven.
His robe was a cloud; over his head was the rainbow; his face was
like the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire; 2 in his hand he held a
little book open. He set his right foot on the sea, and his left on the
land; 3 and he cried in a loud voice like the roaring of a lion. At his
cry the seven peals of thunder spoke, each with its own voice. 4 And,
when they spoke, I was about to write; but I heard a voice from
Heaven say—'Keep secret what the seven peals of thunder said, and
do not write it down.' 5 Then the angel, whom I had seen standing on
the sea and on the land, 'raised his right hand to the heavens, 6 and
swore by him who lives for ever and ever, who created the heavens
and all that is in them, and the earth and all that is in it, and the sea
and all that is in it,' that time should cease to be. 7 Moreover at the
time when the seventh angel shall speak, when he is ready to blow

his blast, then the hidden purposes of God, of which he told the good news to his servants, the Prophets, are at once fulfilled.

8 Then came the voice which I had heard from Heaven. It spoke to me again, and said—'Go and take the book that is open in the hand of the angel who stands on the sea and on the land.' 9 So I went to the angel and asked him to give me the little book. And he said 'Take it, and eat it. It will be bitter to your stomach, but in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey.' 10 I took the little book out of the angel's hand 'and ate it, and, while in my mouth, it was like the sweetest honey'; but, when I had eaten it, it was bitter to my stomach. 11 And I was told—' You must prophesy again about men of many peoples, and nations, and languages, and about many kings.'

Chapter 11

1 Then I was given a measure like a rod, and a voice said to me—'Go and measure the Temple of God and the altar, and count the worshiper there. 2 But omit the court outside the Temple, and do not measure that, for it has been given up to the nations; and the holy City will be under their heel for forty-two months.

3 Then I will give permission to my Two Witnesses, and for those twelve hundred and sixty days they will continue teaching, clothed in sackcloth.' 4 These men are represented by 'the two olive trees and the two lamps that stand before the Lord of the earth.' 5 When any one wishes to harm them, 'fire comes from their mouths and consumes their enemies'; and whoever wishes to harm them will, in this way, inevitably perish. 6 These men have the power to close the heavens, that 'no rain may fall' during the time that they are teaching; and they have power 'to turn the streams into blood, and to smite the land with any Curse,' whenever they will. 7 As soon as they have completed their testimony, 'the wild Beast that ascends from the bottomless pit will make war upon them and conquer' and kill them. 8 Their dead bodies will lie in the streets of the great City, which is mystically spoken of as 'Sodom' and 'Egypt,' where their Master was crucified. 9 Men of all peoples, and tribes, and languages, and nations look at their dead bodies for three days and a half, and do not allow them to be laid in a grave. 10 Those who live on the earth rejoice over them and are merry, and they will send presents to one another, because these two Prophets brought torments upon those who live on the earth. 11 After three days and

a half 'the life-giving breath of God entered these men, and they stood up upon their feet,' and a great terror took possession of those who were watching them. 12 The two men heard a loud voice from Heaven which said to them—'Come up here,' and they went up to Heaven in the cloud, while their enemies watched them. 13 At that very time a great earthquake occurred. A tenth part of the city fell, and seven thousand people perished in the earthquake. Those who escaped were much terrified, and praised the God of Heaven.

14 The second Woe has passed; and there is a third Woe soon to follow! 15 Then the seventh angel blew; and loud voices were heard in Heaven saying—'The Kingdom of the World has become the Kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will reign for ever and ever.' 16 At this the twenty-four Councillors, who were seated on their thrones before God, prostrated themselves on their faces and worshiped Him, 17 saying—'We thank thee, O Lord, our God, the Almighty, who art and who wast, that thou hast assumed thy great power and reigned. 18 The nations were enraged, and thy Wrath fell upon them; the time came for the dead to be judged, and for thee to give the reward to thy servants the Prophets, and to the People of Christ, and to those who reverence thy Name—the high and the low alike—and to destroy those who are destroying the earth.' 19 Then the Temple of God in Heaven was opened, and the Ark containing his Covenant was seen in his Temple; and there followed 'flashes of lightning, cries, peals of thunder,' an earthquake, and 'a great storm of hail.'

Chapter 12

1 Then a great portent was seen in the heavens—a woman whose robe was the sun, and who had the moon under her feet, and on her head a crown of twelve stars. 2 She was with child; and 'she is crying out in the pain and agony of childbirth.' 3 Another portent also was seen in the heavens There was a great red Dragon, with seven heads and ten horns, and on his heads were seven diadems. 4 His tail draws after it a third of the stars in the heavens, and it hurled them down on the earth. The Dragon is standing in front of the woman who is about to give birth to the child, so that he may devour it as soon as it is born. 5 The woman gave birth to a son, a male child, who is destined to rule all the nations with an iron rod; and her child was at once caught up to God upon his throne.

6 But the woman fled into the wilderness, where there is a place
prepared for her by God, to be tended there for twelve hundred and
sixty days. 7 Then a battle took place in the heavens. Michael and
his angels fought with the Dragon. But though the Dragon, with
his angels, fought, 8 he did not prevail; and there was no place left
for them any longer in the heavens. 9 Then the great Dragon, the
primeval Serpent, known as the 'Devil' and 'Satan,' who deceives
all the world, was hurled down to the earth, and his angels were
hurled down with him. 10 And I heard a loud voice in Heaven which
said— 'Now has begun the day of the Salvation, and Power, and
Dominion of our God, and the Rule of his Christ; for the Accuser of
our Brothers has been hurled down, he who has been accusing them
before our God day and night. 11 Their victory was due to the Blood
of the Lamb, and to the Message to which they bore their testimony.
In their love of life they shrank not from death.

12 Therefore, be glad, O Heaven, and all who live in Heaven!
Alas for the earth and for the sea, for the Devil has gone down to
you in great fury, knowing that he has but little time.' 13 when the
Dragon saw that he was hurled down to the earth, he pursued the
woman who had given birth to the male child. 14 But to the woman
were given the two wings of the great eagle, so that she might fly to
her place in the wilderness, where she is being tended for 'one year,
and for two years, and for half a year' in safety from the Serpent. 15
Then the Serpent poured water from its mouth after the woman,
like a river, so that it might sweep her away. 16 But Earth came to
her help, and opened her mouth and drank up the river which the
Dragon had poured out of its mouth. 17 The Dragon was enraged at
the woman, and went to fight with the rest of her offspring—those
who lay to heart the commands of God and bear their testimony to
Jesus; and he took his stand on the sea-shore.

Chapter 13

1 Then I saw, 'rising out of the sea, a wild Beast with ten horns'
and seven heads. On its horns were ten diadems, and on its heads
were blasphemous names. 2 The Beast that I saw was like a leopard;
but its feet were like a bear's, and its mouth like the mouth of a lion.
The Dragon gave it his power and his throne, and wide dominion. 3
One of its heads seemed to me to have been mortally wounded, but
its deadly wound had been healed. The whole earth followed the

Beast, wondering; 4 and men worshiped the Dragon, because he had
given his dominion to the Beast; while, as they worshiped the Beast,
they said—'Who can compare with the Beast? and who can fight
with it?' 5 The Beast was given 'a mouth that spoke proudly' and
blasphemously, and it was empowered to work its will for forty-two
months. 6 It opened its mouth only to blaspheme God, to blaspheme
his Name and his Tabernacle—those who dwell in his Tabernacle
in Heaven. 7 It had been permitted to fight with Christ's People
and to conquer them, and it had received power over men of every
tribe, and people, and language, and nation. 8 All who are living on
earth will worship it—all whose names have not been written in the
Lamb's Book of Life, the Lamb that has been sacrificed from the
foundation of the world. 9 Let him who has ears hear. 10 'Whoever
is destined for captivity goes into captivity.' Whoever shall kill with
the sword must inevitably be killed with the sword. (Here there is
need for endurance and faith on the part of Christ's People.)

11 Then I saw, rising out of the earth, another wild Beast. It
had two horns like those of a lamb, and its voice was like a dragon's.
12 It exercises all the authority of the first Beast under its very eyes;
and it makes the earth and all who are living on it worship that
first Beast, whose mortal wound was healed. 13 It performs great
marvels, even causing fire to fall from the heavens to the earth,
before men's eyes; 14 and in consequence of the marvels which it was
allowed to perform under the eyes of the Beast, it is able to deceive
all who are living on the earth. It bids those who live on the earth to
make a statue in honour of the Beast, who, despite the wound from
the sword, yet lived. 15 It was permitted to breathe life into the image
of the Beast, so that the image of the Beast might speak; and it was
also permitted to cause all who refused to worship the image of the
Beast to be put to death. 16 High and low, rich and poor, freemen
and slaves—it causes a brand to be put on the right hand or on the
forehead of every one of them, 17 so that no one is able to buy or sell,
except those that bear this brand—either the name of the Beast or
the number indicated by the letters of his name. 18 (Here there is
need for discernment.) Let him who has the ability compute the
number of the Beast; for the number indicates a man's name. Its
number is six hundred and sixty-six.

Chapter 14

1 Then, in my vision, I saw the Lamb standing on Mount
Zion. With him were a hundred and forty-four thousand men, with
his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. 2
And I heard a sound from Heaven, 'like the sound of many waters,'
and like the sound of a loud peal of thunder; the sound that I heard
was like the music of harpers playing on their harps. 3 They are
singing what seems to be a new song, before the throne, and before
the four Creatures and the Councillors; and no one was able to learn
that song except the hundred and forty-four thousand who had
been redeemed from earth. 4 These are the men who never defiled
themselves in their intercourse with women; they are as pure as
virgins. These are the men who follow the Lamb wherever he goes.
They were redeemed as the first-fruits of mankind for God and for
the Lamb. 5 'No lie was ever heard upon their lips.' They are beyond
reach of blame.

6 Then I saw another angel, flying in mid-heaven. He had the
Good News, decreed from eternity, to announce to those who dwell
on the earth—to men of every nation, and tribe, and language, and
people; 7 and he cried in a loud voice—'Reverence God, and give
him praise (for the hour of his Judgement has come) and worship
him who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and all springs
of water.' 8 Then a second angel followed, crying—'She has fallen!
She has fallen—Babylon the Great, who has made all the nations
drink the maddening wine of her licentiousness!' 9 Then a third
angel followed them, crying in a loud voice—'Whoever worships the
Beast and its image, and receives its brand on his forehead or on
his hand, 10 that man shall drink the maddening wine of God that
has been poured unmixed into the cup of his Wrath, and he shall be
tortured with fire and sulphur before the eyes of the holy angels and
before the eyes of the Lamb. 11 The smoke from their torture rises
for ever and ever, and they have no rest day nor night—those who
worship the Beast and its image, and all who are branded with its
name.' 12 (Here there is need for endurance on the part of Christ's
People—those who lay to heart the commands of God and the Faith
of Jesus.)

13 Then I heard a voice from Heaven saying 'Write— "Blessed
are the dead who from this hour die in union with the Lord." "Yes,"

answers the Spirit, "that they may rest from their toil. Their good
deeds go with them."' 14 Then, in my vision, I saw a white cloud, and
on the cloud there was sitting one 'like a man.' On his head he had a
crown of gold, and in his hand a sharp sickle. 15 Then another angel
came out from the Temple, crying in a loud voice to him who was
sitting on the cloud—'Take your sickle and reap, for the time to reap
has come; the Harvest of Earth is ready.' 16 He who was sitting on
the cloud brought his sickle down upon the earth, and the Harvest
of Earth was reaped. 17 Then another angel came out of the Temple
in Heaven; he, also, had a sharp sickle. 18 Then another angel came
out of the altar; he had power over fire, and he called in a loud voice
to the angel that had the sharp sickle—'Take your sharp sickle, and
gather the bunches from the Vine of Earth, for its grapes are ripe.'
19 The angel brought his sickle down on the earth and gathered the
fruit of the Vine of Earth, and threw it into the great winepress of
the Wrath of God. 20 The 'grapes were trodden in the press' outside
the city; and blood came out of the press, rising as high as the
bridles of the horses for a distance of two hundred miles.

Chapter 15

1 Then I saw another portent in the heavens—a great and
marvellous portent—seven angels with the seven last Curses;
because with them the Wrath of God is ended. 2 Then I saw what
appeared to be a sea of glass mixed with fire; and, standing by this
sea of glass, holding the harps of God, I saw those who had come
victorious out of the conflict with the Beast and its image and
the number that formed its name. 3 They are singing the song of
Moses, the Servant of God, and the song of the Lamb—'Great and
marvellous are thy deeds, O Lord, our God, the Almighty. Righteous
and true are thy ways, Eternal King. 4 Who will not reverence and
praise thy Name, O Lord? Thou alone art holy! All nations will
come and worship before thee, for thy judgements have become
manifest.'

5 After this I saw that the inmost shrine of the Tabernacle
of Revelation in Heaven was opened, 6 and out of it came the seven
angels with the seven Curses. They were adorned with precious
stones, pure and bright, and had golden girdles round their breasts.
7 One of the four Creatures gave the seven angels seven golden
bowls, filled with the Wrath of God who lives for ever and ever. 8

'The Temple was filled with smoke from the Glory' and Majesty of God; and no one could enter the Temple, until the seven Curses inflicted by the seven angels were at an end.

Chapter 16

1 Then I heard a loud voice, which came from the Temple, saying to the seven angels—'Go and empty the seven bowls of the Wrath of God upon the earth.' 2 The first angel went and emptied his bowl upon the earth; and it turned to loathsome and painful sores upon all who bore the brand of the Beast and who worshiped its image. 3 Then the second angel emptied his bowl upon the sea; and it turned to blood like the blood of a corpse, and every living thing died—everything in the sea. 4 Then the third angel emptied his bowl upon the rivers and springs of water; and it turned to blood. 5 And I heard the Angel of the Waters saying—'Righteous art thou, thou who art and who wast, the Holy One, in inflicting this judgement; 6 for men shed the blood of Christ's People and of the Prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink. It is what they deserve.' 7 And I heard the response from the altar—'Yes, O Lord, our God, the Almighty, true and righteous are they judgements.'

8 Then the fourth angel emptied his bowl upon the sun; and he was permitted to scorch men with fire; 9 and men were scorched by the intense heat. They blasphemed the Name of God who controlled these Curses, yet they did not repent and give him praise. 10 Then the fifth angel emptied his bowl upon the throne of the Beast; and darkness fell upon its Kingdom. Men gnawed their tongues for pain, 11 and blasphemed the God of Heaven, because of their pains and because of their sores; yet they did not repent of what they had done.

12 Then the sixth angel emptied his bowl upon the great river Euphrates; and the water in the river was dried up, so that the road for the Kings of the East might be made ready. 13 And I saw three foul spirits, like frogs, come from the mouth of the Dragon and from the mouth of the Beast and from the mouth of the false Prophet. 14 They are the spirits of demons, and perform marvels; they go to kings all over the world, to collect them for the battle on the Great Day of Almighty God. 15 ('I am coming like a thief! Happy will he be who is on the watch, and keeps his clothing at hand, so that he will not have to walk about unclothed and let men see his nakedness.')

16 And the spirits collected the kings at the place called in Hebrew 'Har-Magedon.'

17 Then the seventh Angel emptied his bowl upon the air. (A loud voice came from the throne in the Temple; it said 'All is over.') 18 There followed 'flashes of lightning, cries, and peals of thunder'; and there was a great earthquake, such as had not occurred since man began to be upon the earth—none so great; 19 and the great City was torn in three, and the cities of the nation fell, and God remembered Babylon the Great, and gave her the maddening wine-cup of his Wrath; 20 and every island vanished, and the mountains disappeared. 21 Great hailstones, a pound in weight, are falling upon men from the heavens. And men blasphemed God because of the Curse of the hail, for it was a very terrible Curse.

Chapter 17

1 Then one of the seven angels who held the seven bowls came and spoke to me. 'Come here,' he said, 'and I will show you the sentence passed upon that Great Harlot who is seated at the meeting of many waters, 2 and with whom all the kings of the earth have had licentious intercourse; while all who live upon the earth have been make drunk by the wine of her licentiousness.' 3 And he bore me away in a trance to a lonely place, and I saw a woman seated upon a scarlet Beast, which was covered with blasphemous names; it had seven heads and ten horns. 4 The woman was clothed in purple and scarlet, and glittering with gold ornaments, precious stones, and pearls. In her hand she held a gold cup, full of idolatrous abominations, and the unclean fruits of her licentiousness; 5 while on her forehead there was written this mystic name—'BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND OF ALL IDOLATROUS ABOMINATIONS UPON EARTH.' 6 And I saw the woman drunk with the blood of Christ's People and with the blood of the martyrs for Jesus. When I saw her, I was amazed beyond measure;

7 but the angel said to me—'Why were you amazed? I will tell you the mystic meaning of the vision of this woman, and of the Beast, with the seven heads and ten horns, that carries her. 8 The Beast that you saw was, but is not, and is about to rise out of the bottomless pit, and is on its way to destruction. Those who are living on earth will be amazed—those whose names have not been

written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world—when they see that the Beast was, but is not, and yet will come.' [9] (Here there is need for the discerning mind.) The seven heads are seven mountains upon which the woman is seated. [10] They are also seven kings; of whom five have fallen and one remains, while one is not yet come. When he comes, he must stay for a little while. [11] So must the Beast that was, but is not. He counts as an eighth king, although he is one of the seven, and is on his way to destruction. [12] The ten horns that you saw are ten kings. who have not yet received their kingdoms, but for an hour they receive the authority of kings, together with the Beast. [13] These kings are of one mind in surrendering their power and authority to the Beast.

[14] They will fight with the Lamb, but the Lamb will conquer them, for he is Lord of lords and King of kings; so, too, will those with him who have received the Call and are chosen and faithful. [15] And the angel said to me—'The waters that you saw, where the Harlot is seated, are throngs of people and men of all nations and languages. [16] The ten horns that you saw, and the Beast—they will hate the Harlot, and cause her to become deserted and strip her bare; they will eat her very flesh and utterly consume her with fire. [17] For God has put it into their minds to carry out his purpose, in carrying out their common purpose and surrendering their kingdoms to the Beast, until God's decrees shall be executed. [18] As for the woman whom you saw, she is the great city that holds sway over all the kings of the earth.'

Chapter 18

[1] After this I saw another angel, descending from Heaven, invested with great authority; and the earth was illuminated by his splendour. [2] With a mighty voice he cried—'She has fallen! She has fallen—Babylon the Great! She has become an abode of demons, a stronghold of every wicked spirit, a stronghold of every foul and hateful bird. [3] For, after drinking the maddening wine of her licentiousness, all the nations have fallen; while all the kings of the earth have had licentious intercourse with her, and the merchants of the earth have grown rich through the excess of her luxury.' [4] Then I heard another voice from Heaven saying—'Come out of her, my People, that you may not participate in her sins, and that you may not suffer from the Curses inflicted upon her. [5] For her sins are

heaped up to the heavens, and God has not forgotten her misdeeds. [6] Pay her back the treatment with which she has treated you; yes, repay twice over what her actions deserve; in the cup which she mixed for you, mix for her as much again; [7] for her self-glorification and her luxury, give her now an equal measure of torture and misery. In her heart she says 'I sit here a queen; no widow am I; I shall never know misery.' [8] Therefore in one day shall these Curses befall her—death, misery, and famine, and she shall be utterly consumed by fire; for mighty is the Lord God who condemned her.

[9] All the kings of the earth who had licentious intercourse with her and shared her luxury will weep and lament over her, when they see the smoke from the burning city, [10] while they stand at a distance, horrified at her torture, and cry—'Alas! Alas! Great City! O mighty City of Babylon! In a single hour your judgement fell. [11] And the merchants of the earth weep and wail over her, because no longer does any one buy their cargoes— [12] their cargoes of gold, or silver, or precious stones, or pearls, or fine linen, or purple robes, or silk, or scarlet cloth; nor their many scented woods; nor their many articles of ivory; nor their many articles of choicest wood, or brass, or iron, or marble; [13] nor their cinnamon, or spice, or incense, or perfumes. or frankincense, or wine, or oil, or fine flour, or wheat, or cattle, or sheep; nor their horses, or chariots, or slaves; nor the bodies and souls of men. [14] The fruit that your soul craved is no longer within your reach, and all dainties and luxuries are lost to you, never to be found again.' [15] The merchants who sold these things, and grew rich by her, will stand at a distance weeping and wailing, horrified at her torture, and crying— [16] 'Alas! Alas! Great City! O City clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet cloth! O City adorned with gold ornaments, and precious stones, and pearls! [17] In a single hour your vast wealth vanished.' Every ship's captain and all who sail to any port, and sailors, and all who get their living from the sea, stood at a distance, [18] and seeing the smoke from the burning city, cried— 'What city can compare with the Great City?' [19] They threw dust on their heads, and, as they wept and wailed, they cried—'Alas! Alas! Great City! All who have ships on the sea grew rich through her magnificence. In a single hour it has vanished.' [20] Rejoice over her, O Heaven, and People of Christ, and Apostles, and Prophets, for God has avenged you on her! [21] Then a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and threw it into the sea,

crying—'So shall Babylon, the Great City, be violently overthrown, never more to be seen. 22 No more shall the music of harpers, or minstrels, or flute players, or trumpeters be heard in you, no more shall any worker, skilled in any art, be found in you; no more shall the sound of a mill be heard in you; 23 no more shall the light of a lamp shine in you; no more shall the voices of bridegroom and bride be heard in you. Your merchants were the great men of the earth, for all the nations were deceived by your magical charms. 24 Yes, and in her was to be found the blood of the Prophets and of Christ's People, and of all who have been put to death upon the earth.'

Chapter 19

1 After this, I heard what seemed to be a great shout from a vast throng in Heaven, crying—'Hallelujah! To our God belong Salvation, and Glory, and Power, 2 for true and righteous are his judgements. For he has passed judgement upon the Great Harlot who was corrupting the earth by her licentiousness, and he has taken vengeance upon her for the blood of his servants.' 3 Again they cried—'Hallelujah!' And the smoke from her ruins rises for ever and ever. 4 Then the twenty-four Councillors and the Four Creatures prostrated themselves and worshiped God who was seated upon the throne, crying—'Amen, Hallelujah!';

5 and from the throne there came a voice which said—'Praise our God all you who serve him, You who reverence him, both high and low.' 6 Then I heard 'what seemed to be the shout of a vast throng, like the sound of many waters,' and like the sound of loud peals of thunder, crying—'Hallelujah! For the Lord is King, our God, the Almighty. 7 Let us rejoice and exalt; and we will pay him honour, for the hour for the Marriage of the Lamb has come, and his Bride has made herself ready. 8 And to her it has been granted to robe herself in fine linen, white and pure, for that linen is the good deeds of the People of Christ.' 9 Then a voice said to me 'Write—"Blessed are those who have been summoned to the marriage feast of the Lamb."' And the voice said—'These words of God are true.' 10 I prostrated myself at the feet of him who spoke to worship him, but he said to me—'Forbear; I am your fellow-servant, and the fellow-servant of your Brothers who bear their testimony to Jesus. Worship God. For to bear testimony to Jesus needs the inspiration of the Prophets.'

11 Then I saw that Heaven lay open. There appears a white horse; its rider is called 'Faithful' and 'True'; righteously does he judge and make war. 12 His eyes are flaming fires; on his head there are many diadems, and he bears a name, written, which no one knows but himself; 13 He has been clothed in a garment sprinkled with blood; and the name by which he is called is 'The Word of God.' 14 The armies of Heaven followed him, mounted on white horses and clothed in fine linen, white and pure. 15 From his mouth comes a sharp sword, with which 'to smite the nations; and he will rule them with an iron rod.' He 'treads the grapes in the press' of the maddening wine of the Wrath of Almighty God; 16 and on his robe and on his thigh he has this name written—'KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.' 17 Then I saw an angel standing on the sun. He cried in a loud voice to all the birds that fly in mid-heaven— 'Gather and come to the great feast of God, 18 to eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of commanders, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses and their riders, and the flesh of all freemen and slaves, and of high and low.' 19 Then I saw the Beast and the kings of the earth and their armies, gathered together to fight with him who sat on the horse and with his army. 20 The Beast was captured, and with him was taken the false Prophet, who performed the marvels before the eyes of the Beast, with which he deceived those who had received the brand of the Beast and those who worshiped his image. Alive, they were thrown, both of them, into the fiery lake 'of burning sulphur.' 21 The rest were killed by the sword which came out of the mouth of him who rode upon the horse; and all the birds fed upon their flesh.

Chapter 20

1 Then I saw an angel coming down from Heaven, with the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. 2 He seized the Dragon, the primeval Serpent (who is the 'Devil' or 'Satan'), and bound him in chains for a thousand years. 3 He flung him into the bottomless pit and locked it, and set his seal upon it; that he should not deceive the nations any more, until the thousand years were ended. After that he must be let loose for a while. 4 Then I saw thrones, and to those who took their seats upon them authority was given to act as judges. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of the testimony to Jesus and because of

the Message of God, for they had refused to worship the Beast or its image, and had not received the brand on their foreheads and on their hands. They were restored to life, and they reigned with the Christ for a thousand years. 5 (The rest of the dead were not restored to life till the thousand years were ended.) This is the First Resurrection. 6 Blessed and holy will he be who shares in that First Resurrection. The second Death has no power over them; but they will be priests of God, and the Christ, and they will reign with him for the thousand years. 7 When the thousand years are ended, Satan will be let loose from his prison, 8 and he will come out to deceive the nations that live in 'the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog.' He will come to gather them together for battle; and their number will be as great as the sand on the sea-shore. 9 They went up over the breadth of the whole earth, and surrounded the camp of Christ's People and the beloved city. Then fire fell from the heavens and consumed them; 10 and the Devil, their deceiver, was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur, where the Beast and the false Prophet already were, and they will be tortured day and night for ever and ever.

11 Then I saw a great white throne, and him who was seated on it. 'The earth and the heavens fled from his presence; no place was left for them.' 12 And I saw the dead, high and low, standing before the throne; and books were opened. Then another book was opened, the Book of Life; and the dead were judged, according to their actions, by what was written in the books. 13 The sea gave up its dead, and Death and the Lord of the Place of Death gave up their dead; and they were judged, one by one, each according to his actions. 14 Then Death and the Lord of the Place of Death were hurled into the lake of fire. This is the Second Death—the lake of fire; 15 and all whose names 'were not found written in the Book of Life' were hurled into the lake of fire.

Chapter 21

1 Then I saw new heavens and a new earth. The former heavens and the former earth had passed away; and the sea has ceased to be. 2 And I saw the Holy City, Jerusalem, descending new out of Heaven from God, like a bride adorned in readiness for her husband. 3 And I heard a loud voice from the throne, which said—'See! the Tabernacle of God is set up among men. God will

dwell among them, and they will be his Peoples, and God himself will be among them, 4 and he will wipe away all tears from their eyes. There will be no more death, nor will there be any more grief or crying or pain. The old order has passed away.' 5 And he who was seated on the throne said—'See, I make all things new!' And he said—'Write this, for these words may be trusted and are true.' 6 And he said to me—'They are fulfilled. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. To him who thirsts I will give of the spring of the Water of Life, freely. 7 He who conquers shall enter into possession of these things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my Son. 8 But as for cowards, unbelievers, the degraded, murderers, the impure, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars—their place will be in the burning lake of fire and sulphur. That is the Second Death.'

9 Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls, and were laden with the seven last Curses, came and spoke to me. 'Come here,' he said, 'and I will show you the Bride, the Wife of the Lamb.' 10 He carried me away in a trance to a great high mountain, and showed me Jerusalem, the Holy City, descending out of Heaven from God, filled with the glory of God. 11 Its brilliance was like that of some very precious stone, like a jasper, transparent as crystal. 12 It had a great high wall, in which were twelve gates; and at these gates there were twelve angels, and there were names inscribed on the gates, the names of the twelve tribes of the Israelites. 13 'There were three gates on the east, three gates on the north, three gates on the south, and three gates on the west.' 14 The wall of the City had twelve foundation stones, on which were the twelve names of the twelve Apostles of the Lamb. 15 And the angel who was speaking to me had as a measure a gold rod, with which to measure the City and its gates and its wall. 16 The City is square; the length and the breadth are the same. The angel measured with his rod; it was twelve hundred miles; its length, and breadth, and height are equal. 17 Then he measured the wall; it was two hundred and eighty-eight feet, as men measure, that is as the angel measured. 18 The material of the wall of the City was jasper, and the City was built of pure gold, which shone like clear glass. 19 The foundations of the wall of the City were ornamented with every kind of precious stone. The first foundation stone was a jasper; the second a sapphire; the third a chalcedony; the fourth an emerald; 20 the fifth a sardonyx; the sixth a carnelian; the seventh a chrysolite; the eighth a beryl; the ninth

a topaz; the tenth a chrysoprase; the eleventh a hyacinth; and the twelfth an amethyst. 21 The twelve gates were made of twelve pearls, each gate of one pearl. The street of the City was of pure gold, transparent as glass. 22 And I saw no Temple there, for the Lord, our God, the Almighty, and the Lamb are its Temple. 23 The City has no need of 'the sun or the moon to shine upon it, for the Glory of God illuminated it,' and its Lamp was the Lamb. 24 'The nations walk by the light of it; and the kings of the earth bring their glory into it. 25 Its gates will never be shut by day,' and there will be no night there. 26 And men will bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. 27 'Never shall any unhallowed thing enter it,' nor he whose life is shameful and false, but only 'those whose names have been written in the Lamb's Book of Life.'

Chapter 22

1 And the angel showed me 'a river of the Water of Life,' as clear as crystal, issuing from the throne of God and of the Lamb, 2 in the middle of the street of the City. On each side of the river was a Tree of Life which bore twelve kinds of fruit, yielding its fruit each month; and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. 3 'Every thing that is accursed will cease to be.' The throne of God and of the Lamb will be within it, and his servants will worship him; 4 they will see his face, and his name will be on their foreheads. 5 Night will cease to be. They have no need of the light of a lamp, nor have they the light of the sun; for the 'Lord God will be their light, and they will reign for ever and ever.'

6 Then the angel said to me—'These words may be trusted and are true. The Lord, the God that inspires the Prophets, sent his angel to show his servants what must quickly take place; 7 and he said "I will come quickly." Blessed will he be who lays to heart the words of the prophecy contained in this book.' 8 It was I, John, who heard and saw these things; and, when I heard and saw them, I prostrated myself in worship at the feet of the angel that showed them to me. 9 But he said to me—'Forbear; I am your fellow-servant, and the fellow-servant of your Brothers, the Prophets, and of all who lay to heart the words in this book. Worship God.' 10 Then the angel said to me—'Do not keep secret the words of the prophecy contained in this book; for The Time is near. 11 Let the wrong-doer continue to do wrong; the filthy-minded man continue to be filthy;

the righteous man continue to act righteously; and the holy-minded man continue to be holy.' 12 ('I will come quickly. I bring my rewards with me, to give to each man what his actions deserve. 13 I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End.') 14 Blessed will they be who wash their robes, that they may have the right to approach the Tree of Life, and may enter the City by the gates. 15 Outside will be the filthy, the sorcerers, the impure, the murderers, the idolaters, and all who love the false and live it.' 16 'I, Jesus, sent my angel to bear testimony to you about these things before the Churches. I am the Scion and the Offspring of David, the bright Star of the Morning.' 17 'Come,' say the Spirit and the Bride; and let him who hears say 'Come.' Let him who thirsts come; let him who will take the Water of Life freely. 18 I declare to all who hear the words of the prophecy contained in this book—'If anyone adds to it, God will add to his troubles the Curses described in this book; 19 and if any one takes away any of the words in the book containing this prophecy, God will take away his share in the Tree of Life, and in the Holy City—as described in this book.'

20 He whose testimony this is says—'Assuredly I will come quickly.' Amen, come, Lord Jesus.' 21 May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ, be with his People.

Weights, Measures and Currency

One of the consistent issues that translators of the Bible deal with is that of weights, measures and currency, broadly known as "metrology." The length time between both Old and New Testament eras and ours makes differences in metrology not only ones of units but concept as well. From a technical standpoint, the ancient world's use of weight and measures can be either vague or exact; the architectural and engineering wonders such as the pyramids attest to this.

One frequent solution to this problem is to convert everything into modern units, including currency. For translations that come out of the United Kingdom such as this one, this frequently means translating in the Imperial system for weights and measures and pounds, shillings and pence for currency. This tradition started with Tyndale's translation in the 1530's and was adopted to some extent in the Authorised Version (King James.) Today neither of these systems is in use in the U.K. and as of this writing the use of the pound sterling itself is threatened by assimilation into the Euro.

Since this translation does use strictly U.K. units, we (with one exception) will not delve into the actual Greek and Roman units[17], but set forth conversions for the units in the translation, which have gone from current use at the time of translation to historical interest in their own right[18].

Weights and Masses

- 16 drams = 1 ounce = 28 grams
- 16 ounces = 1 pound = 0.45 kg
- 14 pounds = 1 stone = 6.35 kg
- 2 stone = 1 quarter = 12.7 kg
- 4 quarters = 1 hundredweight = 112 lb. = 50.8 kg

[17] Information on these can be found in the *Bible Companion* program, which can be downloaded from Positive Infinity.

[18] These conversion factors are approximate; for rough comparison only. Consult a technical text for exact values and a more comprehensive list.

- 20 hundredweight = 1 Imperial ton[19] = 2240 lb. = 1.016 tonne

Measures (Length)

- 1 inch = 25.4 mm
- 12 inches = 1 foot = 305 mm
- 3 feet = 1 yard = 0.91 m
- 1760 yards = 1 mile = 1.61 km
- 25 links = 1 rod = 5 m
- 4 rod or perch = 1 chain = 20 m
- 10 chains = 1 furlong = 200 m
- 8 furlongs = 1 mile = 1610 m

Measures (Capacity)

- 5 fluid ounces = 1 gill = 142 ml
- 20 fluid ounces = 1 pint[20] = 568 ml
- 2 pints = 1 quart = 1.1 L
- 4 quarts = 1 gallon = 4.546 L
- 2 gallons = 1 peck = 9.1 L
- 4 pecks = 1 bushel = 8 gals = 36.4 L

Currency

This is where we can have some fun. Until 1971 the U.K. and its dependencies (an ever-shrinking concept) used a system of units that is a direct descendant of the Roman one used in the New Testament. Instead of a decimal system that is in use most everywhere now, the pound sterling was divided up as follows:

- 12d = l/- (12 pence equals one shilling (1/-)

[19] One U.S. ton = 2000 pounds.
[20] In USA 16 fluid ounces = 1 pint = 0.473 litre and US gallon = 3.785 litre

- 20/- = £l (20 shillings (20/-) equals one pound)
- Therefore 240d = £l/-/-

The use of the letter "d" for the pence comes from the Roman "denarius." It was a day's labour wage in New Testament times. It was a silver coin that weighed about 3.85 g. In mediaeval England the penny ("d") was silver but, as we will see below, by the time of the translators of this version (and decimalisation in the U.K.) the penny was anything but silver.

The coins are sized proportionally to each other; the paper money is reduced differently with each note.

On the Front:

On coin and paper alike, British, colonial and Commonwealth currency customarily depicts the sovereign, as do many other currencies in the world.

"Knowing their hypocrisy, Jesus said to them: 'Why are you testing me? Bring me a florin to look at.' And, when they had brought it, he asked: 'Whose head and title are these?' 'The Emperor's,' they said." (Matthew 12:15b-16) Depending upon where we live, we only need to look at our pocket change to get some of the impact of what Our Lord was trying to get across.

The use of Bahamian paper explains how many of the pounds, shillings and pence got on this page; it came out of having to learn how to count it and spend it while in the Bahamas. The good news was that this education could be had in a place with a warm climate and people. This also illustrates one of the characteristics of the old British Empire: many of the colonies were improvements over the mother country. Why else would two small islands be able to populate two entire continents with the people who either wanted or had to leave, to say nothing of the "expatriates" in places

such as South Africa and India?

Coin	Comment	Value	Photo (if available)
Farthing	King James' Version has Jesus asking, "Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing?" (Matthew 10:29) The Royal Mint used a wren on their last farthing.	1/4d	
Half-penny	Use of seated "Britannia" was common on British coins—a reminder that once "Britannia ruled the waves," and on occasion waived the rules.	1/2d	
Penny	At one time the Roman denarii/English pennies were silver, but in their last years were large coppers, such as this Australian penny.	1d	
Three-penny (or thu'pence)	Once silver and smaller, this twelve-sided piece was one of the Royal Mint's better productions (great in vending machines), and shows just how inept the U.S. Mint has been with their gold-coloured dollars.	3d	

Groat	Pretty much out of the picture by the time of this translation, groats appear in William Tyndale's New Testament.	4d	N/A
Sixpence (or tanner)	Used to sing songs about these things.	6d	
Shilling (or bob)	The one shown has the Scottish shield on it. They had one for the English too.	1/-	
Florin	Since ten of these made a pound, a step towards decimalisation. This florin comes from New Zealand.	2/-	
Half-crown (or half-dollar)	It's amazing that the British put up with two coins only sixpence apart in value and circulating at the same time.	2/- 6d	
Crown		5/-	N/A
Sovereign	No, they didn't have paper money in New Testament times, but we don't have a gold sovereign handy either, so this Australian banknote will have to do.	20/- or £1	

Guinea	**21/- or £1/1/-**	**N/A**

This still leaves the obvious question: what would all of these pence, shillings, florins and pounds that appear in this translation be worth today? The Twentieth Century New Testament was completed (appropriately) around 1900. £1 in 1900 is worth about £62.39 in 2002, so 1/- in 1900 comes to about £3.12 and a penny is about 26p. Crossing the Atlantic, £1 in 1900 was worth about US$4.87. Since US$1 in 1900 was worth about US$21.30 in 2002, £1 in 1900 is worth about US$103.73 in 2002, a 1900 shilling about US$5.19, and a penny about 43¢.

The translators took the Roman denarius—a day's wage in New Testament times—to be two shillings. In 2002 this would come to £6.24 or US$10.38. Although this seems absurdly low by developed world standards, the sad truth is that, in many parts of the world, this is still a going day's wage.

Lectionary: Reading Through in a Year

Reading the Word of God is one of the most important thing a Christian can do. Many consider this to be the province of "fundamentalists" or "evangelicals" but the reality is that the reading of the Bible long predated the rise of either one of these groups.

One of the first attempts to systematise the reading of the Bible was undertaken by the Church of England. In releasing their 1662 Book of Common Prayer—still officially the prayer book of the Church—the readings for the Morning and Evening Prayer services were structured throughout the year so that the entire Bible, both Old and New Testaments, could be read by the lector or heard by the parishoner in one year, assuming he or she attended every service. The original lectionary, or order of readings, was altered in 1871 to make some commemoration of the saints' days and other festivals, but the idea of going through the entire Bible remained. The 1871 lectionary also replaced the Roman numerals of the chapters with Arabic ones, surely an improvement for modern readers.

Following is the 1871 lectionary. Information on the actual services and prayer books can be found at our web site; however, it doesn't take a liturgy to see the sense of bracketing our day with the reading of God's Word in the morning and again at the evening.

January Hath XXXI Days.			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	A	Circumcision of our Lord	Genesis 17:19	Romans 2:17	Deut. 10:12	Colos. 2:8-18
2	b		1:1-20	Matthew 1:18	Genesis 1:20-2:4	Acts 1
3	c		2:4	2	3:1-20	2:1-22
4	d		3:20-4:16	3	4:16	2:22
5	e		5:1-28	4:1-23	5:28-6:9	3
6	f	Epiphany of our Lord	Isaiah 60	Luke 3:15-23	Isaiah 49:13-24	John 2:1-12
7	g		Genesis 6:9	Matthew 4: 23-5:13	Genesis 7	Acts 4:1-32
8	A	Lucian, P. & M.	8	5:13-33	9:1-20	4:32-5:17
9	b		11:1-10	5:33	12	5:17
10	c		13	6:1-19	14	6
11	d		15	6:19-7:7	16	7:1-35
12	e		17:1-23	7:7	18:1-17	7:35-8:5
13	f	Hilary, Bp. & C.	18:17	8:1-18	19:12-30	8:5-26
14	g		20	8:18	21:1-22	8:26
15	A		21:33-22:20	9:1-18	23	9:1-23
16	b		24:1-29	9:18	24:29-52	9:23
17	c		24:52	10:1-24	25:5-19	10:1-24
18	d	Prisca, V. & M.	25:19	10:24	26:1-18	10:24
19	e		26:18	11	27:1-30	11
20	f	Fabian, Bp. & M.	27:30	12:1-22	28	12
21	g	Agnes, V. & M.	29:1-21	12:22	31:1-25	13:1-26
22	A	Vincent, Mart.	31:36	13:1-24	32:1-22	13:26
23	b		32:22	13:24-53	33	14
24	c		35:1-21	13:53-14:13	37:1-12	15:1-30
25	d	Conversion of St. Paul	Isaiah 49:1-13	Galatians 1:11	Jeremiah 1:1-11	26:1-21
26	e		Genesis 37:12	Matthew 14:13	Genesis 39	15:30-16:16
27	f		40	15:1-21	49:1-17	16:16
28	g		41:17-53	15:21	41:53-42:25	17:1-16
29	A		42:25	16:1-24	43:1-25	17:16
30	b		43:25-44:14	16:24-17:14	44:14	18:1-24
31	c		45:1-25	17:14	45:25-46:8	18:24-19:21

February Hath XXVIII Days In Leap Year 29 Days.			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	d	Fast.	Genesis 46: 26-7:13	Matthew 18: 1-21	Genesis 47:13	Acts 19:21
2	e	Purific. of V. M.	13:1-17	18:21-19:3	Haggai 2:1-10	20:1-17
3	f		48	19:3-27	49	20:17
4	g		50	19:27-20:17	Exodus 1	21:1-17
5	A	Agatha, V. & M.	Exodus 2	20:17	3	21:17-37
6	b		4:1-24	21:1-23	4:27-5:15	21:37-22:23
7	c		5:15-6:14	21:23	6:28-7:14	22:23-23:12
8	d		7:14	22:1-15	8:1-20	23:12
9	e		8:20-9:13	22:15-41	9:13	24
10	f		10:1-21	22:41-23:13	10:21 & 11	25
11	g		12:1-21	23:13	12:21-43	26
12	A		12:43-13:17	24:1-29	13:17-14:10	27:1-18
13	b		14:10	24:29	115:1-22	27:18
14	c	Valentine, Bishop	15:22-16:11	25:1-31	16:11	28:1-17
15	d		17	25:3	18	28:17
16	e		19	26:1-31	20:1-22	Romans 1
17	f		21:1-18	26:31-57	22:21-23:10	2:1-17
18	g		23:14	26:57	24	2:17
19	A		25:1-23	27:1-27	28:1-13	3
20	b		28:29-42	27:27-57	29:35-30:11	4
21	c		31	27:57	32:1-15	5
22	d		32:15	28	33:1-12	6
23	e	Fast.	33:12-34:10	Mark 1:1-21	34:10-27	7
24	f	St. Matthias, Ap.	1 Sam. 2:27-36	1:21	Isaiah 22:15	8:1-18
25	g		34:27	2:1-23	35:29-36:8	8:18
26	A		39:30	2:23-3:13	40:1-17	9:1-19
27	b		40:17	3:13	Lev. 9:22-10:12	9:19
28	c		Lev. 14:1-23	4:1-35	16:1-23	10
29			19:1-19	7	19:30-20:9	12

March Hath XXXI Days			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	d	David, Archbp.	Leviticus 25: 1-18	4:35-5:21	Leviticus 25:18-44	Romans 11: 1-25
2	e	Chad, Bishop	26:1-21	5:21	26:21	11:25
3	f		Numbers 6	6:1-14	9:15-10:11	12
4	g		10:11	6:14-30	11:1-24	13
5	A		11:24	6:30	12	14-15:8
6	b		13:17	7:1-24	14:1-26	15:8
7	c	Perpetua, M.	14:26	7:24-8:10	16:1-23	16
8	d		16:23	8:10-9:2	17	1 Cor. 1:1-26
9	e		20:1-14	9:2:1-30	20:14	1:26 & 2
10	f		21:1-10	9:30	21:10-32	3
11	g		22:1-22	10:1-32	22:22	4:1-18
12	A	Gregory, M. B.	23	10:32	24	4:18 & 5
13	b		25	11:1-27	27:12	6
14	c		Deuter. 1:1-19	11:27-12:13	Deuter. 1:19	7:1-25
15	d		2:1-26	12:13-35	2:26-3:18	7:25
16	e		3:18	12:35-13:14	4:1-25	8
17	f		4:25-41	13:14	5:1-22	9
18	g	Edward, King of the West-Sax.	5:22	14:1-27	6	10 & 11:1
19	A		7:1-12	14:27-53	7:12	11:2-17
20	b		8	14:53	10:8	11:17
21	c	Benedict, Abbot.	11:1-18	15:1-42	11:18	12:1-28
22	d		15:1-16	15:42 & 16	17:8	12:28 & 13
23	e		18:9	Luke 1:1-26	24:5	14:1-20
24	f	Fast.	26	1:26:1-46	27	14:20
25	g	Annunc. of Vir. Mary	Genesis 3:1-16	1:46	Isaiah 52:7-13	15:1-35
26	A		Deuter. 28:1-15	2:1-21	Deuter. 28:15-47	15:35
27	b		28:47	2:21	29:9	16
28	c		30	3:23	31:1-14	2 Cor. 1:1-23
29	d		31:14-30	4:1-16	31:30-32:44	1:23-2:14
30	e		32:44	4:16	33	2:14 & 3
31	f		34	5:1-17	Joshua 1	4

April Hath XXX Days			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	g		Joshua 2	Luke 5:17	Joshua 3	2 Cor. 5
2	A		4	6:1-20	5	6 & 7:1
3	b	Richard, Bp.	6	6:20	7	7:2
4	c	S. Ambrose, Bp.	9:3	7:1-24	10:1-16	8
5	d		21:43-22:11	7:24	22:11	9
6	e		23	8:1-26	24	10
7	f		Judges 2	8:26	Judges 4	11:1-30
8	g		5	9:1-28	6:1-24	11:30-12:14
9	A		6:24	9:28-51	7	12:14 & 13
10	b		8:32-9:25	9:51-10:17	10	Galatians 1
11	c		11:1-29	10:17	11:29	2
12	d		13	11:1-29	14	3
13	e		15	11:29	16	4:1-21
14	f		Ruth 1	12:1-35	Ruth 2	4:21-5:13
15	g		3	12:35	4	2:13
16	A		1 Samuel 1	13:1-18	1 Samuel 2	6
17	b		2:21	13:18	3	Ephesians 1
18	c		4	14:1-25	5	2
19	d	Alphege, Abp.	6	14:25-15:11	7	3
20	e		8	15:11	9	4:1-25
21	f		10	16	11	4:25-5:22
22	g		12	17:1-20	13	5:22-6:10
23	A	St. George, M.	14:1-24	17:20	14:24:1-47	6:10
24	b		15	18:1-31	16	Philippians 1
25	c	St. Mark, Evan.	Isaiah 62:6	18:31-19:11	Ezekiel 1:1-15	2
26	d		1 Samuel 17:1-31	19:11:1-28	1 Samuel 17: 31-55	3
27	e		17:55-18:17	19:28	19	4
28	f		20:1-18	20:1-27	20:18	Colossians 1:1-21
29	g		21	20:27-21:5	22	1:21-2:8
30	A		23	21:5	24 & 25:1	2:8

May Hath XXXI Days			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	b	St. Philip and St. James, Ap.	Isaiah 61	John 1:43	Zechariah 4	Col. 3:1-18
2	c		1 Samuel 26	Luke 22:1-31	1 Samuel 28:3	3:18-4:7
3	d	Invent. of Cross	31	22:31:1-54	2 Samuel 1	4:7
4	e		2 Samuel 3:17	22:54	4	1 Thess. 1
5	f		6	23:1-26	7:1-18	2
6	g	St. John, E. *ante Port. Lat.*	7:18	23:26-50	9	3
7	A		11	23:50-24:13	12:1-24	4
8	b		13:39-14:26	24:13	15:1-16	5
9	c		15:16	John 1:1-29	16:1-15	2 Thess. 1
10	d		16:15-17:24	1:29	17:24-18:18	2
11	e		18:18	2	19:1-24	3
12	f		19:24	3:1-22	21:1-15	1 Tim. 1:1-17
13	g		23:1-24	3:22	24	1:18-20 & 2
14	A		1 Kings 1:1-28	4:1-31	1 Kings 1:28-49	3
15	b		1 Chron. 29:10	4:31	3	4
16	c		1 Kings 4:20	5:1-24	5	5
17	d		6:1-15	5:24	8:1-22	6
18	e		8:22:1-54	6:1-22	8:54-9:10	2 Tim. 1
19	f	Dunstan, Archbp.	10	6:22-41	11:1-26	2
20	g		11:26	6:41	12:1-25	3
21	A		12:35-13:11	7:1-25	13:11	4
22	b		14:1-21	7:25	15:25-16:8	Titus 1
23	c		16:8	8:1-31	17	2
24	d		18:1-17	8:31	18:17	3
25	e		19	9:1-39	21	Philemon
26	f	Augustine, Archbp.	22:1-41	9:39-10:22	2 Kings 1	Hebrews 1
27	g	Ven. Bede, Presb.	2 Kings 2	10:22	4:8	2 & 3:1-7
28	A		5	11:1-17	6:1-24	3:7-4:14
29	b		6:24	11:17-47	7	4:14 & 5
30	c		8:1-16	11:47-12:20	9	6
31	d		10:1-18	12:20	10:18	7

June Hath XXX Days			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	e	Nicomede, M.	2 Kings 13	John 13:1-21	2 Kings 17:1-24	Hebrews 8
2	f		17:24	13:21	2 Chron. 12	9
3	g		2 Chron. 13	14	14	10:1-19
4	A		15	15	16 & 17:1-14	10:19
5	b	Boniface, Bishop.	19	16:1-16	20:1-31	11:1-17
6	c		20:31 & 21	16:16	22	11:17
7	d		23	17	24	12
8	e		25	18:1-28	26 & 27	13
9	f		28	18:28	2 Kings 18:1-9	James 1
10	g		29:3-21	19:1-25	2 Chron. 30 & 31:1	2
11	A	St. Barnabas, Ap.	Deut. 33:1-12	4:31	Nahum 1	Acts 14:8
12	b		2 Kings 18:13	19:25	2 Kings 19:1-20	James 3
13	c		19:20	20:1-19	20	4
14	d		Isaiah 38:9-21	20:19	2 Chron. 33	5
15	e		2 Kings 22	21	2 Kings 23:1-21	1 Peter 1:1-22
16	f		23:21-24:8	Acts 1	24:8-25:8	1:22-2:11
17	g	St. Alban, Mart.	25:8	2:1-22	1 & Ezra 3	2:11-3:8
18	A		Ezra 4	2:22	5	3:8-4:7
19	b		7	3	8:15	4:7
20	c	Tr. of King Edw.	9	4:1-32	10:1-20	5
21	d		Nehemiah 1	4:32-5:17	Nehemiah 2	2 Peter 1
22	e		4	5:17	5	2
23	f	Fast.	6 & 7:1-5	6	7:73 & 8	3
24	g	St. John Baptist	Malachi 3:1-7	Matthew 3	Malachi 4	Matthew 14:1-13
25	A		Nehemiah 13:1-15	Acts 7:1-35	Nehemiah 13:15	1 John 1
26	b		Esther 1	7:35-8:5	Esther 2:15 & 3	2:1-15
27	c		4	8:5-26	5	2:15
28	d	Fast.	6	8:26	7	3:1-16
29	e	St. Peter, Apostle.	Ezekiel 3:4-15	John 21:15-23	Zechariah 3	Acts 4:8-23
30	f		Job 1	Acts 9:1-23	Job 2	1 John 3:16-4:7

July Hath XXXI Days			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	g		Job 3	Acts 9:23	Job 4	1 John 4:7
2	A	Visitation of the Blessed Virgin Mary	5	10:1-24	6	5
3	b		7	10:24	9	2 John
4	c	Tr. of St. Martin	10	11	11	3 John
5	d		12	12	13	Jude
6	e		14	13:1-26	16	Matthew 1:18
7	f		17	1:26	19	2
8	g		21	14	22:12-29	3
9	A		23	15:1-30	24	4:1-23
10	b		25 & 26	15:30-16:16	27	4:23-5:13
11	c		28	16:16	29 & 30:1	5:13-33
12	d		30:12-27	17:1-16	34:13	5:33
13	e		32	17:16	38:1-39	6:1-19
14	f		38:39 & 39	18:1-24	40	6:19-7:7
15	g	Swithun, Bishop	41	18:24-19:21	42	7:7
16	A		Proverbs 1:1-20	19:21	Proverbs 1:20	8:1-18
17	b		2	20:1-17	3:1-27	8:18
18	c		3:27-4:20	20:17	4:20-5:15	9:1-18
19	d		5:15	21:1-17	6:1-20	9:18
20	e	Margaret V. & M.	7	21:17-37	8	10:1-24
21	f		9	21:37-22:23	10:16	10:24
22	g	St. Mary Magdalen	11:1-15	22:23-23:12	11:15	11
23	A		12:10	23:12	13	12:1-22
24	b	Fast.	14:9-28	24	14:28-15:18	12:22
25	c	St. James, Apostle	2 Kings 1:1-16	Luke 9:51-57	Jeremiah 26:8-16	13:1-24
26	d	St. Anne	Proverbs 15:18	Acts 25	Proverbs 16:1-20	13:24-53
27	e		16:31-17:18	26	18:10	13:53-14:13
28	f		19:13	27	20:1-23	14:13
29	g		21:1-17	28:1-17	22:1-17	15:1-21
30	A		23:10	28:17	24:21	15:21
31	b		25	Romans 1	26:1-21	16:1-24

August Hath XXXI Days			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	c	Lammas Day	Proverbs 27:1-23	Romans 2:1-17	Proverbs 28:1-15	Matthew 16: 24-17:14
2	d		30:1-18	2:17	31:10	17:14
3	e		Eccles. 1	3	Eccles. 2:1-12	18:1-21
4	f		3	4	4	18:21-19:1-3
5	g		5	5	6	19:3-27
6	A	Transfiguration	7	6	8	19:27-20:17
7	b	Name of Jesus	9	7	11	20:17
8	c		12	8:1-18	Jer. 1	21:1-23
9	d		Jer. 2:1-14	8:18	5:1-19	21:23
10	e	St. Lawrence, M.	5:19	9:1-19	6:1-22	22:1-15
11	f		Ezekiel 7:1-17	9:19	8:4	22:15-41
12	g		9:1-17	10	13:8-24	22:41-23:13
13	A		15	11:25	17:1-19	23:13
14	b		18:1-18	11:25	19	24:1-29
15	c		21	12	22:1-13	24:29
16	d		22:13	13	23:1-16	25:1-31
17	e		24	14 & 15:1-8	25:1-15	25:31
18	f		26	15:8	28	26:1-31
19	g		29:4-20	16	30	26:31-57
20	A		31:1-15	1 Cor. 1:1-26	31:15-38	26:57
21	b		33:1-14	1:26 & 2	33:14	27:1-27
22	c		35	3	36:1-14	27:27-57
23	d	Fast.	36:14	4:1-18	38:1-14	27:57
24	e	St. Bartholomew	Genesis 28:10-18	4:18 & 5	Deuter. 18:15	28
25	f		Jerem. 38:14	6	Jerem. 39	Mark 1:1-21
26	g		50:1-21	7:1-25	51:54	1:21
27	A		Ezekiel 1:1-15	7:25	Ezekiel 1:15	2:1-23
28	b	St. Augustine, B.	2	8	3:1-15	2:23-3:13
29	c	Beheading of St. John Baptist	3:15	9	8	3:13
30	d		9	10 & 11:1	11:14	4:1-35
31	e		12:17	11:2-17	13:1-17	4:35-5:21

September Hath XXX Days			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	f	Giles, Abbot.	Ezekiel 13:17	1 Cor. 11:17	Ezekiel 14:1-12	Mark 5:21
2	g		14:12	12:1-28	16:44	6:1-14
3	A		18:1-19	12:28 & 13	18:19	6:14-30
4	b		20:1-18	14:1-20	20:18-33	6:30
5	c		20:33-44	14:20	22:23	7:1-24
6	d		24:15	15:1-35	26	7:24-8:10
7	e	Enurchus, Bishop.	27:1-26	15:35	27:26	8:10-9:2
8	f	Nat. of Vir. Mary.	28:1-20	16	31	9:2-30
9	g		32:1-17	2 Cor. 1:1-23	33:1-21	9:30
10	A		33:21	1:23-2:14	34:1-17	10:1-32
11	b		34:17	2:14 & 3	36:16-33	10:32
12	c		37:1-15	4	37:15	11:1-27
13	d		47:1-13	5	Daniel 1	11:27-12:13
14	e	Holy-Cross Day	Daniel 2:1-24	6 & 7:1	2:24	12:13-35
15	f		3	7:2	4:1-19	12:35-13:14
16	g		4:19	8	5:1-17	13:14
17	A	Lambert, Bishop	5:17	9	6	14:1-27
18	b		7:1-15	10	7:15	14:27-53
19	c		9:1-20	11:1-30	9:20	14:53
20	d	Fast.	10:1-20	11:30-12:14	12	15:1-42
21	e	St. Matthew, Apos.	1 Kings 19:15	12:14 & 13	1 Chr. 29:1-20	15:42 & 16
22	f		Hosea 2:14	Galatians 1	Hosea 4:1-13	Luke 1:1-26
23	g		5:8-6:7	2	7:8	1:26-57
24	A		8	3	9	1:57
25	b		10	4:1-21	11 & 12:1-7	2:1-21
26	c	St. Cyprian, Abp.	13:1-15	4:21-5:13	14	2:21
27	d		Joel 1	5:13	Joel 2:1-15	3:1-23
28	e		2:15-28	6	2:28-3:9	4:1-16
29	f	St. Michael and all Angels	Genesis 32	Acts 12:5-18	Daniel 10:4	Rev.14:14
30	g	St. Jerome	Joel 3:9	Ephesians 1	Amos 1 & 2:1-4	Luke 4:16

October Hath XXXI Days			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	A	Remigius, Bp.	Amos 2:4-3:9	Ephesians 2	Amos 4:4	Luke 5:1-17
2	b		5:1-18	3	5:18-6:9	5:17
3	c		7	4:1-25	8	6:1-20
4	d		9	4:25-5:22	Obadiah	6:20
5	e		Jonah 1	5:22-6:10	Jonah 2	7:1-24
6	f	Faith, V. & M.	3	6:10	4	7:24
7	g		Micah 1:1-10	Philippians 1	Micah 2	8:1-26
8	A		3	2	4	8:26
9	b	St. Denys, Bishop	5	3	6	9:1-28
10	c		7	4	Nahum 1	9:28-51
11	d		Nahum 2	Col. 1:1-21	3	9:51-10:17
12	e		Habakkuk 1	1:21-2:8	Habakkuk 3	10:17
13	f	Trans. K. Edw.	3	2:8	Zeph. 1:1-14	11:1-29
14	g		Zeph. 1:14-2:4	3:1-18	Haggai 2:4	11:1-29
15	A		3	3:18 & 4	Zech. 1	12:1-35
16	b		Haggai 2:1-10	1 Thess 1	Ecclus. 2:10	12:35
17	c	Etheldreda, V.	Zech. 1:1-18	2	Zech. 1:18 & 2	13:1-18
18	d	St. Luke, Evang.	Isaiah 55	3	38:1-15	13:18
19	e		Zechariah 3	4	4	14:1-25
20	f		5	5	6	14:25-15:11
21	g		7	2 Thess. 1	8:1-14	15:11
22	A		8:14	2	9:9	16
23	b		10	3	11	17:1-20
24	c		12	1 Tim 1:1-18	13	17:20
25	d	Crispin, Martyr	14	1:18 & 2	Malachi 1	18:1-31
26	e		Malachi 2	3	3:1-13	18:31-19:11
27	f	Fast.	3:13 & 4	4	Wisdom 1	19:11-28
28	g	St. Simon & St. Jude	Isaiah 28:9-17	5	Jer. 3:12-19	19:28
29	A		Wisdom 2	6	Wisdom 4:7	20:1-27
30	b		6:1-22	2 Tim. 1	6:22-7	20:27-21:5
31	c	Fast.	7:15	2	8:1-19	21:5

November Hath XXX Days			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	d	All Saints' Day	Wisdom 3:1-10	Heb. 11:38-12:7	Wisdom 5:1-17	Rev. 19:1-17
2	e		9	2 Tim 3	11:1-15	Luke 22:1-31
3	f		11:15-12:3	4	Ecclus. 17	22:31-54
4	g		Ecclus. 1:1-14	Titus 1	2	22:54
5	A		3:17-30	2	4:10	23:1-26
6	b	Leonard, Conf.	5	3	7:27	23:26-50
7	c		10:18	Philemon	14:1-20	23:50-24:13
8	d		15:9	Heb. 1	16:17	24:13
9	e		18:1-15	2 & 3:7	18:15	John 1:1-29
10	f		19:13	3:17-4:14	22:6-24	1:29
11	g	St. Martin, Bp.	24:1-24	4:14 & 5	24:24	2
12	A		33:7-23	6	34:15	3:1-22
13	b	Britius, Bishop	35	7	37:8-19	3:22
14	c		39:1-13	8	39:13	4:1-31
15	d	Machutus, Bp.	41:1-14	9	42:15	4:31
16	e		44:1-16	10:1-19	50:1-25	5:1-24
17	f	Hugh, Bishop	51:10	10:19	Baruch 4:1-21	5:24
18	g		Baruch 4:36 & 5	11:1-17	Isaiah 1:1-21	6:1-22
19	A		Isaiah 1:21	11:17	2	6:22-41
20	b	Edmund, King	3:1-16	12	4:2	6:41
21	c		5:1-18	13	5:18	7:1-25
22	d	Cecilia, V. & M.	6	James 1	7:1-17	7:25
23	e	St. Clement, Bp.	8:5:1-18	2	8:18-9:8	8:1-31
24	f		9:8-10:5	3	10:5-20	8:31
25	g	Catherine, V. & M.	10:20	4	11:1-10	9:1-39
26	A		11:10	5	12	9:39-10:22
27	b		13	1 Peter 1:1-22	14:1-24	10:22
28	c		17	1:22-2:11	18	11:1-17
29	d	Fast	19:1-16	2:11-3:8	19:16	11:17-47
30	e	St. Andrew, Ap.	54	John 1:35-43	65:1-17	12:20-42

December Hath XXXI Days			Morning Prayer		Evening Prayer	
			1st Lesson	2nd Lesson	1st Lesson	2nd Lesson
1	f		Isaiah 21:1-13	1 Peter 3:8-4:7	Isaiah 22:1-15	John 11:47-12:20
2	g		22:15	4:7	23	12:20
3	A		24	5	25	13:1-21
4	b		26:1-20	2 Peter 1	26:20 & 27	13:21
5	c		28:1-14	2	28:14	14
6	d	Nicolas, Bishop	29:1-9	3	29:9	15
7	e		30:1-18	1 John 1	30:18	16:1-16
8	f	Conception of Vir. Mary	31	2:1-15	32	16:16
9	g		33	2:15	34	17
10	A		35	3:1-16	40:1-12	18:1-28
11	b		40:12	3:16-4:7	41:1-17	18:28
12	c		41:17	4:7	42:1-18	19:1-25
13	d	Lucy, Vir. & M.	42:18-43:8	5	43:8	19:25
14	e		44:1-21	2 John	44:21-45:8	20:1-19
15	f		45:8	3 John	46	20:19
16	g	O Sapientia	47	Jude	48	21
17	A		49:1-13	Rev. 1	49:13	Rev. 2:1-18
18	b		50	2:18-3:7	51:1-9	3:7
19	c		51:9	4	52:1-13	5
20	d	Fast.	52:13 & 53	6	54	7
21	e	St. Thomas, Apos.	Job 42:1-7	John 19:1-24	35	John 14:1-8
22	f		Isaiah 55	Revelation 8	56	Revelation 10
23	g		57	11	58	12
24	A	Fast.	59	14	60	15
25	b	Christmas-Day	9:1-8	Luke 2:1-15	7:10-17	Titus 3:4-9
26	c	St. Stephen, M.	Genesis 4:1-11	Acts 6	2 Chron. 24:15-23	Acts 8:1-9
27	d	St. John, Evang.	Exodus 33:9	John 23:1-36	Isaiah 6	Revelation 1
28	e	Innocents' Day	Jer. 31:1-18	Rev. 16	Baruch 4:21-31	18
29	f		Isaiah 61	19:1-11	Isaiah 62	19:11
30	g		63	20	64 & 65:1-8	21:1-15
31	A	Silvester, Bishop	65:8	21:15-22:6	66	22:6